The Three-Story Universe of the Bible



For all those, who believe in Gods word more than in science

Set out by Fritz Braun

FRITZ BRAUN

THE THREE-STORY UNIVERSE OF THE BIBLE

translated by joe dubs
joedubs.com/books
ConcaveEarth.net

THE GREAT ASTRONOMER SAID: I HAVE SEARCHED ALL THE HEAVENS AND FOUND NO TRACE OF GOD.

DID HE NOT SPEAK THE TRUTH? IN THE MOON AND SUN SPOTS, IN THE STARRY NEBULA, GOD CANNOT BE FOUND.

THE SHARP EYE OF THE TELESCOPE CANNOT SEE THE INVISIBLE, WHICH CANNOT BE MEASURED BY NUMBER, SIZE, MEASURE, OR WEIGHT.

WHOEVER WANTS TO FIND GOD THERE MUST BRING HIM WITHIN THEMSELVES; ONLY WHEN HE IS IN YOU CAN YOU SEE HIM IN ALL THINGS.

THE MOSQUITO, IF IT COULD THINK AND SPEAK, OH HUMAN, LIKE YOU, WOULD SURELY PRESENT ITS WINGS TO THE MOST HIGH.

HOW COULD MY CREATOR NOT RESEMBLE HIS IMAGE? HE WILL NOT FALL SHORT OF PERFECTION IN WHAT HE HAS CREATED.

THEREFORE, LIKE A MOSQUITO, HE WILL BE EVEN MORE PERFECT; HOW COULD HE BE GOD IF HE DID NOT HAVE LITTLE WINGS?

FRIEDRICH RÜCKERT (WISDOM OF THE BRAHMAN).

UNIVERSE - SONG

MEL: OPEN THE BEAUTIFUL GATE FOR ME OR:
AMEN, AMEN, LOUD AMEN

1. ACCORDING TO THE CLEAR WORDS OF THE BIBLE, THE UNIVERSE IS DIVIDED INTO THREE PARTS. BELOW ARE THE GATES OF HELL, ABOVE US IS THE GARMENT OF HEAVEN. AND IN BETWEEN, WE HUMANS LIVE HERE ON EARTH. 2. BUT LIFE IS NOT OUTSIDE, AS WE HAVE BEEN TAUGHT UNTIL NOW. EVERY EGG AND EVERY CELL PREACHES THE OPPOSITE, EVERYWHERE IN NATURE, LIFE IS ONLY WITHIN. 3. IN THE CENTER OF THE EARTHLY WORLD HOVERS, LIKE THE CORE IN AN ATOM, ABOVE US THE HEAVENLY FIRMAMENT, VISIBLE ONLY AS A DOME OF STARS; WITHIN IT, FAITH KNOWS THE CITY THAT HAS GOLDEN STREETS. 4. SUN, MOON, AND THE PLANETS MOVE AS LIGHTS ALONG THEIR PATHS THROUGH THE MANY CELESTIAL SPHERES THAT FAITH CAN GRASP, INTO WHICH ENOCH WAS TAKEN UP AND PAUL WAS ALSO ENRAPTURED. 5. BELOW ON THE EARTH'S SURFACE LIVES MAN - AND HERE SALVATION FROM THE FALL INTO SIN OCCURRED THROUGH THE CROSS OF GOLGOTHA. HERE JESUS ONCE LAY IN THE GRAVE AND DESCENDED EVEN FURTHER. 6. THERE, WHERE IN THE DEEPEST PLACES SOULS ARE STILL TRAPPED, IMPRISONED IN THE UTMOST DISTANCE FROM GOD, DEAF AND BLIND, WHERE THE SMOKE FROM THE LAKE OF FIRE RISES HIGH IN VOLCANOES.

IN HIS SUFFERING, THE LORD ONCE ENDURED THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE, AND THEN ASCENDED TRIUMPHANTLY TO THE HEAVENLY HALL. CHRIST, OUR LORD AND HEAD, DRAWS TO HIMSELF THOSE WHO BELIEVE IN HIM.

M.K. SUPPLEMENTED BY GB

* * *

GOD IS NOT CONFINED BY ANY SPACE OR TIME, FOR GOD IS PRESENT WHEREVER AND WHENEVER HE ACTS. AND GOD ACTS EVERYWHERE, AND HE IS ALWAYS AT WORK; HIS TIME IS ALWAYS NOW, AND HIS PLACE IS EVERYWHERE. HE IS THE CENTER, AND THE CIRCUMFERENCE IS ALSO HIM; THE END OF THE WORLD AND THE BEGINNING IS HIS BREATH OF CHANGE.

FRIEDRICH RÜCKERT (WISDOM OF THE BRAHMAN)

IN THE NECESSARY REPRINT OF THIS EDITION, WHICH INCLUDED IMPROVEMENTS AND ADDITIONS TO THE TEXT, IT WAS UNAVOIDABLE THAT THE NEW SENTENCE PARTS APPEARED DARKER THAN THE OLD TEXT. I ASK READERS NOT TO BE DISTURBED BY THESE TECHNICALLY INDUCED VARIATIONS IN SENTENCE TONE, BUT TO FOCUS ON THE CONTENT. THANK YOU FOR YOUR UNDERSTANDING.

CONTENT

FOUR FOREWORDS

THE COSMIC GREAT ATTACK ON GOD'S WORD THE OLD (PTOLEMAIC) WORLDVIEW THE NEW (COPERNICAN) WORLDVIEW A LOOK BEHIND THE SCENES! THE GREAT HUMAN SPIRIT! LUTHER AND COPERNICUS THE ATTACK THROUGH BULTMANN THE SUPERNATURAL RESPONSE

GOD'S WORD ABOUT CREATION THREE-TIERED UNIVERSE! GOD'S CREATION: SPACE! LENGTH, WIDTH, HEIGHT, DEPTH! THE UPPER LEVEL: THE HEAVENS HEAVENS AS FIRMAMENT AND FIERY REALM THE UPPER ESSENCE LEVEL: GODS HEAVENS AS EXPANSION: THE AIRY HEAVENS SPHERES, LEVELS, SEVEN STARS "THE STARS WILL FALL TO THE EARTH!"

THE MIDDLE LEVEL: THE EARTH THE DRY LAND BETWEEN FIRE AND WATER THE REALMS AND CONTINENTS THE MIDDLE ESSENCE LEVEL: HUMANS THE LOWER LEVEL: BENEATH THE EARTH FIRE, WATER, DARKNESS AND THEIR ENTRANCES THE LOWER ESSENCE LEVEL

THE LIGHT AND ITS WAY VISIBLE AND INVISIBLE GOD'S SECOND REVELATION!

UNROLLED SCROLL? THE WATERS ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT! THE "TANGENT" WENT INTO THE WATER! WHAT IS OUTSIDE?

SCIENCE IS A RELIGION! A NECESSARY UNMASKING ATTACK AND COUNTERATTACK THE TRANSFORMATION IN NATURAL SCIENCE THE DANGEROUS TESTIMONY! THE EXPERIENCE OF GUSTAV KNAK AND OTHERS.

"ALONE, BEHOLD, I HAVE FOUND THIS: THAT GOD CREATED MAN UPRIGHT, BUT THEY HAVE DEVISED MANY SCHEMES!"

ECCLESIASTES 7:29 (TRANSLATED LITERALLY).

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION

THIS LITTLE BOOK IS INTENDED ONLY FOR THOSE WHO HAVE BEEN GRANTED THE GREAT GRACE TO TAKE ALL THE WORDS OF THE BIBLE LITERALLY. IT ORIGINATED FROM A SERIES OF ARTICLES IN THE MAGAZINE 'WORD AND TIME' AND AIMS TO WARN THE COMMUNITY OF BELIEVERS IN CHRIST AGAINST BELIEVING ANYTHING THAT CONTRADICTS THE LITERAL TEXT OF THE BIBLE, THE WORD OF GOD. INDEED, IT SAYS IN 2 CORINTHIANS 3:6 THAT THE LETTER KILLS. BUT PRECISELY FOR THIS REASON, WE HOLD ON TO THE LETTER OF THE GOD-BREATHED BIBLE, BECAUSE IT IS THROUGH THIS THAT OUR SPIRITUAL UNDERSTANDING AND NATURAL FEELINGS ARE PUT TO DEATH, AND ONLY THEN CAN THE SPIRIT MAKE THE TRUTH ALIVE WITHIN US. FOR LIFE COMES FROM DEATH ACCORDING TO SCRIPTURE AND THE PREACHING OF NATURE. AND WHOEVER LOVES THEIR LIFE (INCLUDING THEIR UNDERSTANDING) WILL LOSE IT! THEREFORE, WHOEVER WARNS AGAINST A LITERAL FAITH SPEAKS LIKE PETER: 'MAY THIS NEVER HAPPEN TO YOU' (MATTHEW 16:22). TO THIS, CHRIST IN US ALWAYS RESPONDS TO PETER IN US: 'GET BEHIND ME, SATAN! YOU ARE A STUMBLING BLOCK TO ME; YOU DO NOT HAVE IN MIND THE CONCERNS OF GOD, BUT MERELY HUMAN CONCERNS!' THE DIVINE IS DEATH, THE HUMAN IS THE UNWILLINGNESS TO DIE! EVEN THE UNDERSTANDING DOES NOT WANT TO DIE WHILE READING THE BIBLE, BUT RATHER TO LIVE BY COMPREHENDING AND INTERPRETING WHAT IS THEN CALLED THEOLOGY. ONLY THE FIRST TO DIE HAS THE AUTHORITY OF THE SPIRIT IN THIS AREA, WHICH LEADS INTO ALL TRUTH! (2 CORINTHIANS 10:5). THIS UNDERSTANDING OF THE WORD CONTRADICTS THE PREVAILING WORLDVIEW OF SECULAR SCIENCE. EVERYTHING THAT IS AGAINST THE BIBLE, THE WORD OF TRUTH, IS FROM THE FATHER OF LIES, THE DEVIL, EVEN IF IT IS CLOAKED IN SEEMINGLY CONVINCING RATIONAL ARGUMENTS. ONLY THOSE WHO ARE THEMSELVES OF THE TRUTH CAN RECOGNIZE THIS. THIS BOOK IS DIRECTED AT THEM. MAY THE RETURNING LORD BLESS IT IN THEIR HEARTS!

NECKARGEMÜND, OCTOBER 1949 FRITZ BRAUN

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION

THE FIRST EDITION OF THIS BOOK, PUBLISHED A FEW YEARS AGO UNDER THE TITLE 'THE WORLDVIEW OF THE BIBLE!', WAS A SIGNIFICANT LEAP OF FAITH. ITS TESTIMONY TO CHRISTIANITY AGAINST SCIENCE AND IN FAVOR OF A LITERAL BELIEF IN THE WORD OF GOD IN THE BIBLE, PARTICULARLY REGARDING CREATION AND NATURE, WAS SO UNUSUAL, SO OUTRAGEOUS, AND SOUNDED SO PRESUMPTUOUS THAT IT WAS WIDELY REJECTED. THE REFINED METHOD OF SILENCING AN INCONVENIENT VOICE WAS PRACTICED ABUNDANTLY. THERE WAS ALSO PLENTY OF MOCKERY AND SCORN FROM A MORE PRIMITIVE AND AGGRESSIVE SIDE. AS ALWAYS, THESE REACTIONS MOST EFFECTIVELY CONFIRMED THE AUTHENTICITY OF THE MATTER AND THE MISSION. WHAT HURTS SATAN, THE PRINCE OF THE PRESENT WORLD, HE WILL ATTACK IN ANY WAY POSSIBLE. AND NOTHING HURTS HIM MORE THAN A TESTIMONY OF CHILDLIKE FAITH IN THE BIBLE. THAT'S WHEN HE OPENS ALL THE FLOODGATES OF MOCKERY AND REASON, AND IF THOSE DON'T WORK, THE WARRIORS COME IN BEHIND! HOWEVER, SURPRISINGLY MANY SUPPORTIVE RESPONSES ALSO CAME IN. SOME WROTE GRATEFULLY ABOUT THE LIGHT THAT HAD NOW DAWNED ON THEM IN THE BIBLE. THESE WERE THE SIMPLE AND UNEDUCATED, TO WHOM GOD COULD GRANT FAITH IN HIS REVELATION, WHICH HE HAS HIDDEN FROM THE WISE AND LEARNED. THIS SECOND EDITION HAS BEEN SIGNIFICANTLY REVISED AND EXPANDED. I COULD NOT BRING MYSELF TO SOFTEN THE SHARP CONTRAST BETWEEN HUMAN SCIENCE AND DIVINE REVELATION THAT WAS CLEARLY ARTICULATED IN THE FIRST EDITION, AS IT IS CRUCIAL TO SHOW THAT GOD'S WORD AND GOD'S WISDOM ONLY GROW AT THE EXPENSE OF HUMAN WORDS AND THEIR WISDOM. I HAVE NO PATIENCE FOR THE LABORIOUS ATTEMPTS TO RECONCILE SCIENCE AND BIBLICAL STATEMENTS OR TO BRING THEM INTO HARMONY. IT MUST BE EITHER ONE OR THE OTHER! WAVERING ON BOTH SIDES IS PART OF LUKEWARMNESS. ALL HUMAN SCIENCE IS FUNDAMENTALLY A RELIGION OF SELF-SALVATION, A TOWER OF BABEL, WHETHER CONSCIOUSLY OR UNCONSCIOUSLY. THEREFORE, HUMAN SCIENCE IS ALWAYS OPPOSED TO REVELATION. IT IS AN EXPRESSION OF THE STUBBORN WILL OF THE HUMAN SELF TO ASSERT ITSELF THROUGH ITS NATURAL INTELLIGENCE AGAINST THE ABSOLUTE CLAIM OF GOD'S SPIRIT WITHIN AND OUTSIDE OF US.

FURTHERMORE, IT IS NOT THE BLATANT DISBELIEF THAT IS SO DANGEROUS, BUT RATHER THE COMMON MIXTURE OF FAITH WITH THE ACCEPTANCE OF SECULAR, UNBELIEVING FINDINGS AND CLAIMS, THE SINFUL CONNECTION OF THE DIVINE WITH THE HUMAN, KNOWN AS THE 'TEACHING OF BALAAM, THE SON OF BEOR.' THIS TEACHING OF BALAAM, WHICH REVELATION SPEAKS OF, IS NOTHING OTHER THAN AN INTERPRETATION OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES THAT SEEKS TO UNITE THE SERVICE OF GOD WITH THE SERVICE OF THE WORLD. TODAY, ONE CAN HEAR THIS FROM MANY PULPITS IN CHRISTIANITY FORMULATED LIKE THIS: 'THE BIBLE IS CERTAINLY A GOOD BOOK; IT SHOWS THE WAY TO SALVATION, BUT IN SCIENTIFIC MATTERS, IT IS NOT AUTHORITATIVE; WE MUST DEFER TO SCIENCE AND ITS 'SECURED RESULTS.' THIS DANGEROUS MIXTURE AND COMPROMISE CHARACTER OF THE FAITH OF MANY BELIEVERS WEAKENS SPIRITUAL GROWTH AND MAKES BELIEVERS VERY SUSCEPTIBLE TO THE ATTACKS OF THE ENEMY IN THE WORLD. THE MORE THE ENEMY MAKES HIMSELF KNOWN IN ALL AREAS IN OUR END TIMES, THE MORE CUNNINGLY HE DISGUISES HIMSELF, THE MORE DECISIVELY THE RADICAL FAITH IN THE ENTIRE WORD OF THE BIBLE MUST BE OPPOSED TO HIM. 'LET THE WORD STAND, AND HAVE NO THANKS FOR IT!' A PARTICULAR JUSTIFICATION FOR THIS WRITING HAS SINCE BEEN PROVIDED BY THEOLOGY PROFESSOR BULTMANN, WHO BASED HIS WIDELY KNOWN ATTACK AGAINST TRADITIONAL BIBLICAL FAITH ON THE 'DEMYTHOLOGIZATION' OF THE NEW TESTAMENT IN ACCORDANCE WITH THE MODERN, I.E., COPERNICAN ASTRONOMICAL WORLDVIEW OF SCIENCE. HE WROTE, AMONG OTHER THINGS, THAT THE THREE-TIERED WORLDVIEW OF THE BIBLE IS NO LONGER ACCEPTABLE TO MODERN PEOPLE AND IS NO LONGER BELIEVED BY ANYONE. LIKEWISE, ALL THE MYTHICAL REPRESENTATIONS OF THE BIBLE WITHIN THIS WORLDVIEW MUST BE CONSIDERED OBSOLETE. BULTMANN'S CORRESPONDING STATEMENTS ARE ELABORATED UPON IN DETAIL WITHIN. THERE IS NO STRONGER CONFIRMATION FOR THE CONCERN TO WHICH THIS BOOK IS DEDICATED. THIS CONCERN IS TO TELL CHRISTIANITY: BELIEVE ALSO WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS ABOUT NATURAL PROCESSES IN GENERAL AND ABOUT ASTRONOMY IN PARTICULAR, I.E., REVEALS, EVEN IF YOU FIND YOURSELVES IN STARK CONTRAST TO HUMAN SCIENCE AND BECOME FOOLS IN THE EYES OF ALL SCHOLARS AND THEIR FOLLOWERS! FOR THEN, THE REST OF THE CONTENT OF THE BIBLE CANNOT BE TAKEN FROM YOU! (LUKE 9:26). MANY BELIEVING CHRISTIANS HAVE ALREADY TOLD ME: IT MAY BE THAT THE BIBLE IS SOMEHOW RIGHT, THAT THE UNIVERSE IS ENTIRELY DIFFERENT FROM WHAT SCIENTIFIC UNDERSTANDING SUGGESTS, THAT PERHAPS WE ARE INSIDE...

WE DO NOT LIVE OUTSIDE. HOWEVER, THAT DOES NOT BOTHER US FURTHER. WE ARE CONCERNED WITH QUITE DIFFERENT THINGS. WHETHER THE WORLD IS ROUND OR OCTAGONAL IS OF LITTLE IMPORTANCE TO US. WHAT MATTERS TO US IS THAT WE ARE CHILDREN OF GOD, SAVED THROUGH FAITH IN THE LORD JESUS. BESIDES THAT, WE ARE MORE OCCUPIED WITH MATTERS OF OUR EARTHLY PROFESSION AND THE WELL-BEING OF OUR FAMILIES THAN WITH THE VASTNESS OF OUTER SPACE. ONE OFTEN QUOTES THE WORDS OF TERSTEEGEN: I AM A CHILD OF GOD, NOT A COUNCILOR OF GOD! THOSE WHO ARE HAPPILY SECURE AND CONTENT IN THIS CHILDLIKE STATE MAY INDEED BE SO. BUT OTHERS WANT TO GROW AND INCREASE IN GRACE AND KNOWLEDGE, AND WITH THIS GROWTH COMES AN AWARENESS OF THE SIGNIFICANCE OF LOOKING INTO THE UNIVERSE, ITS LENGTH, BREADTH, HEIGHT, AND DEPTH. THEY ARE NO LONGER SOLELY CONCERNED IN HOLY SELFISHNESS ABOUT THEIR OWN SALVATION AND PERHAPS THAT OF THEIR CLOSEST RELATIVES, BUT INCREASINGLY AWARE OF GOD'S HONOR, WHICH IS DISHONORED WHEN HIS WORD IS NO LONGER TAKEN SERIOUSLY. THE GOSPEL IS NOT ONLY IN THE WORDS: REPENT, FOR THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN IS NEAR! OR IN THE WORDS: SAVE YOURSELVES FROM THIS CORRUPT GENERATION! BUT ALSO IN THE GREAT TRUTH THAT IN CHRIST ARE HIDDEN ALL TREASURES OF WISDOM AND KNOWLEDGE, THAT ALL IS IN HIM AND WE ARE ALSO IN HIM, AND THAT WE ARE TO GROW INTO THE PERFECT MANHOOD IN CHRIST, EVEN HERE. FOR THIS PURPOSE, WE RECEIVED THE HOLY SPIRIT WHEN WE BECAME BELIEVERS, THE SPIRIT FROM GOD, WHO SEARCHES ALL THINGS, EVEN THE DEPTHS OF GOD (1 COR. 2:10). WHOEVER IS A CHILD HAS CHILDISH THOUGHTS AND WORRIES. BUT WHOEVER IS A MAN HAS PUT AWAY CHILDISH THINGS, AND HE DELIGHTS IN THE HIGH CALLING TO BECOME A CO-WORKER OF GOD AND TO BE LED BY THE SPIRIT OF GOD INTO THE GOODNESS OF GOD, WHICH IS AS HIGH AS THE HEAVENS ARE ABOVE THE EARTH (PS. 103:11), AND HIS TRUTH, WHICH REACHES AS FAR AS THE CLOUDS GO (PS. 36:6). MY PRIMARY CONCERN IS TO PRESENT TO BELIEVING CHRISTIANS OF ALL DENOMINATIONS AND COMMUNITIES THE UNIFIED STATEMENTS OF THE WORD OF GOD ABOUT THE UNIVERSE. THE FAITH IN SCIENCE AND ITS WORLDVIEW SHOULD BE SHAKEN AND OVERTURNED AMONG BELIEVERS BY THE WORD OF GOD, NOT THROUGH COUNTERARGUMENTS ON THE SCIENTIFIC LEVEL OF REASON AND ITS MEANS OF PROOF. THEREFORE, SCIENTIFIC, RATIONAL ARGUMENTS AGAINST THE TRADITIONAL TEACHING OF THE INFINITE UNIVERSE AND ITS SUPPOSED ROTATING GIANT SUNS ARE ONLY OCCASIONALLY MENTIONED IN PASSING. THOSE WHO ALSO, NOT ONLY IN FAITH BUT ALSO IN REASON, RECOGNIZE THE INACCURACIES OF TODAY'S WORLDVIEW.

IF YOU WANT TO BE CONVINCED BY SCIENTIFIC STATEMENTS ABOUT THE UNIVERSE, REFER TO THE RELEVANT LITERATURE, ESPECIALLY THE BOOK 'WORLD RIDDLES UNIVERSE' BY P.A. MÜLLER, OR WRITE TO THE EDITOR OF 'GEOKOSMOS', H. DIEHL, A RELIGIOUS TEACHER IN WINNENDEN. I OWE SPECIAL THANKS TO MR. TEACHER ANTON MEYER FROM EMMENTAL NEAR LUCERNE FOR SHARING HIS COLLECTION OF LITERATURE ON EARTH AND TO MISS LOTTE PASENAU FROM STUTTGART FOR HER ARTISTIC CONTRIBUTIONS, ESPECIALLY FOR THE TITLE DESIGN. MAY THE LORD, WHO IS CHRIST JESUS, THE CREATOR, SUSTAINER, REDEEMER, AND COMPLETER OF HUMANITY AND THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE, AND IN WHOM ALL TREASURES OF WISDOM ARE CONTAINED, BLESS THIS ENDEAVOR TO GLORIFY HIS GREAT NAME. MAY HE MAKE THIS BOOK A POWERFUL, SPIRIT-INSPIRED TESTIMONY OF TRUTH, AS HE FULFILLS HIS PROMISE BY BECOMING MIGHTY IN THE WEAKNESS OF THE AUTHOR.

NECKARGEMÜND, JANUARY 1955 FRITZ BRAUN

PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION

AFTER THE FIRST SPACE ROCKETS!

FOR SUCH A HEAVY TOPIC AND FOR SUCH A SMALL PUBLISHER, WHICH LACKS THE RESOURCES TO LAUNCH A MAJOR ADVERTISING CAMPAIGN FOR A BOOK, IT MEANS A LOT WHEN A NEW EDITION BECOMES NECESSARY AFTER JUST ABOUT FIVE YEARS. IN THESE PAST FIVE YEARS, THE MODERN BABYLONIAN TOWER OF TECHNOLOGY HAS NEARLY REACHED THE HEAVENS, THAT IS, THE SPACE ROCKETS. AND WHEN THE FIRST RUSSIAN AND LATER AMERICAN SPUTNIKS AND LUNAR ROCKETS ASCENDED AMIDST GREAT PROPAGANDA NOISE, THE NEWS ON THE PATIENT PAGES OF THE DAILY PRESS SPOKE OF THOUSANDS, TENS OF THOUSANDS, INDEED HUNDREDS OF THOUSANDS OF KILOMETERS AWAY, IT SEEMED THAT THE COPERNICAN WORLDVIEW HAD FINALLY RECEIVED ITS ULTIMATE CONFIRMATION FOR MANY. BECAUSE MANY STILL UNSPIRITUAL BELIEVERS ARE REPEATEDLY IMPRESSED BY CURRENT EVENTS BEYOND REASON AND FEELING, AND QUICKLY FORGET THE BIBLE WITH ITS OUTDATED WISDOM AFTER A BRIEF DEVOTION, IT IS NOT SURPRISING THAT THE PUBLISHER OF THIS BOOK WAS ASKED BY BELIEVERS: 'WHAT DO YOU SAY NOW? IF YOU STILL HAVE A COPY OF YOUR BOOK ON THE THREE-TIERED UNIVERSE OF THE BIBLE, YOU WILL HARDLY BE ABLE TO SELL IT ANYMORE.' YES, A PREACHING BROTHER, WHOSE FAITH IN HUMAN SCIENCE IS AT LEAST AS GREAT AS HIS FAITH IN GOD AND GOD'S WORD, SAID IN A MEETING: WE MUST PRAY FOR POOR BROTHER BRAUN, FOR THE RUSSIAN ROCKETS HAVE PROVEN THAT THE BIBLICAL CONCEPTION OF THE UNIVERSE HE HIGHLIGHTS IN HIS BOOK IS INCORRECT OR MUST BE INTERPRETED DIFFERENTLY! ON THIS OCCASION, IT HAS BECOME FRIGHTENINGLY CLEAR HOW LITTLE STEADFAST FAITH BASED ON GOD'S WORD EXISTS, EVEN AMONG OTHERWISE BELIEVING PREACHERS. A SHOT ACCOMPANIED BY GREAT PROPAGANDA NOISE FROM THE GODLESS BOLSHEVIKS CAN EASILY TOPPLE THESE WEAK CHRISTIANS. THEY IMMEDIATELY BELIEVE WHAT THE WHOLE WORLD, WHICH IS IN DISARRAY, ALSO BELIEVES AND WHAT THEY LET THEMSELVES BE DECEIVED BY THE NEWSPAPERS AND THEIR SCIENTIFIC PROPONENTS.

THEY AGREE, BECAUSE ALMOST EVERYONE CALCULATES A DIFFERENT RESULT AND PRESENTS DIFFERENT NUMBERS. HOWEVER, THIS POSES NO DIFFICULTIES FOR THE NEWSPAPERS; THEY PRINT A DIFFERENT CLAIM WITH DIFFERENT NUMBERS EVERY DAY WITHOUT HESITATION, CONFIDENT THAT YESTERDAY'S REPORT AND ASSERTION HAVE LONG BEEN FORGOTTEN AND PUSHED ASIDE. EVERYTHING THAT HAS BEEN COMMUNICATED THROUGH THE MEDIA–ABOUT THESE SPACE ROCKETS, THEIR ALTITUDE, THEIR DURATION OF FLIGHT AROUND THE SUN, THEIR JOURNEY TO SOME PLANET, AND AROUND THE FAR SIDE OF THE MOON, SURROUNDED BY A LOT OF POPULAR SCIENTIFIC FLUFF–IS ASSUMPTION, COMBINATION, AND CALCULATION WITH ELASTIC, UNCERTAIN FACTORS ON PAPER, BUT NO CERTAINTY OR TRUTH. THE IGNORANT PUBLIC READILY ACCEPTS WHAT IS PRINTED AND PRESENTED WITH SCHOLARLY FIGURES AS ABSOLUTE TRUTH. THE WIDESPREAD RESPECT FOR HUMAN SCIENCE IS ALREADY THE WORSHIP OF MAN, AS PREDICTED IN 2 THESSALONIANS 2:4 FOR THE TIME BEFORE THE DAY OF THE LORD. HOWEVER, HIDDEN WITHIN THE OFTEN CONTRADICTORY REPORTS ABOUT THESE ROCKET FLIGHTS ARE ALSO THINGS THAT ARE NOT COMMUNICATED BUT INTENTIONALLY OBSCURED. THE MOST IMPORTANT INSIGHTS ABOUT OUTER SPACE, ALLEGEDLY DERIVED FROM THE ROCKETS' RADIO SIGNALS, ARE TREATED AS MILITARY SECRETS. WHAT HAS LEAKED OUT SUGGESTS THAT OUTER SPACE MUST BE VERY DIFFERENT FROM WHAT SCHOLARS HAVE PREVIOUSLY IMAGINED. PHOTOGRAPHS OF THE 'PLANET EARTH,' TAKEN FROM THE MOON BY THE 'MOON TRAVELERS,' WERE MEANT TO REPEATEDLY 'PROVE' THE 'SPHERICAL SHAPE' OF THE EARTH TO NEWSPAPER BELIEVERS. THE AMERICAN MOON TRAVELERS WANDERED AROUND THE MOON FOR SEVERAL HOURS, UNABLE TO FIND THEIR WAY, BECAUSE EVERYTHING WAS QUITE DIFFERENT THERE, AND THEY THEN BROUGHT BACK MANY ROCKS FOR SCIENCE ON EARTH. SINCE THIS SEEMED LIKE A BAD DEAL TO POLITICIANS AND BUSINESSMEN IN AMERICA–THE MOON ROCKS COST MANY BILLIONS OF DOLLARS–THE FUNDING FOR FURTHER SPACE FLIGHTS WAS SIGNIFICANTLY CUT. IT MUST BE ACKNOWLEDGED THAT THE AMERICAN MOON ROCKETS HAVE ALWAYS REACHED AND FOUND THE MOON QUITE ACCURATELY WITHIN THE CALCULATED TIME. NEVERTHELESS, WE DO NOT BELIEVE IN A SO-CALLED 'GLOBE OF EARTH' FLOATING IN INFINITE SPACE AND RUSHING THROUGH IT, BECAUSE WHAT APPEARED AS A ROUND PLANET IN THE PICTURES COULD JUST AS WELL HAVE BEEN A VISUAL CIRCLE ON THE EARTH'S INNER SHELL, WITH THE ATMOSPHERE AROUND THE EARTH ACTING AS A LENS!

THE LIGHT ON OUR EARTH HAS BEEN DECEPTIVE SINCE THE FALL FROM GRACE. THE COPERNICAN WORLDVIEW HAS BEEN DEVELOPED BY MATHEMATICIANS AND ASTRONOMERS INTO A WELL-FUNCTIONING CALCULATION MODEL, WHICH, HOWEVER, DOES NOT NECESSARILY HAVE TO CORRESPOND WITH REALITY. RATHER, REALITY IS OBSCURED AND DISTORTED BY THE STRONG CURVATURE OF LIGHT RAYS. THE SUPPOSEDLY HIGH INITIAL SPEED OF ROCKETS QUICKLY TRANSITIONS INTO WEIGHTLESSNESS AND SLOWNESS. THE OTHERWISE INTELLIGENT PERSON WHO DOES NOT BELIEVE IN GOD'S WORD IS CONSTANTLY DECEIVED IN THIS FALLEN WORLD, WHOSE PRINCE IS SATAN, THE FATHER OF LIES (JOHN 8:44/12:31), WITHOUT REALIZING IT. THE DEVIL, AS THE FALLEN LUCIFER OR PRINCE OF LIGHT, TODAY RULES OVER A FALLEN AND PERVERTED REALM OF LIGHT. THE STRAIGHT OR RIGHTEOUS PATH OF GOD'S LIGHT HAS BEEN CURVED BY THE FALL OF LUCIFER AND LATER OF MAN. FOR THE FALL OF SATAN OR LUCIFER (ISAIAH 14, EZEKIEL 28) AND LATER THE ORIGINAL SIN OF THE FIRST HUMANS HAD TREMENDOUS COSMIC CONSEQUENCES, ABRUPTLY CHANGING NATURE AND ITS LAWS, AND MAN BECAME WHAT HE IS TODAY! SINCE THEN, MAN CAN NO LONGER RECOGNIZE TRUTH OR REALITY WITH HIS EXTERNAL SENSES; RATHER, HE LIVES IN LIES AND DECEPTION. WRONG LIGHT IS DARKNESS! DARKNESS NOW COVERS THE EARTH AND GLOOM THE PEOPLES (ISAIAH 60:2). EVEN THE SCIENCE OF THE PEOPLES IS COVERED BY DARKNESS OR DISTORTED LIGHT FROM CURVED LIGHT RAYS UNTIL THE LORD, THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD, WILL APPEAR. THE DARKNESS PASSES AWAY AND THE TRUE LIGHT IS ALREADY APPEARING (1 JOHN 2:8). THEN, WITH THE COMING OF THE LORD, THE CURVATURE OF LIGHT WILL BE TRANSFORMED INTO A STRAIGHT LINE OF LIGHT. ACCORDING TO ISAIAH 30:26, THE BRIGHTNESS OF THE MOON WILL BE LIKE THE BRIGHTNESS OF THE SUN, AND THE BRIGHTNESS OF THE SUN WILL BE SEVEN TIMES BRIGHTER THAN NOW, AT THE TIME WHEN THE LORD WILL BIND UP THE WOUNDS OF HIS PEOPLE AND HEAL THEIR INJURIES! WHAT WE SEE TODAY THROUGH OUR EYES AND THROUGH PHOTOGRAPHIC DEVICES IS NEVER TRUTH, BUT RATHER APPEARANCE, DECEPTION, AND LIES. YET PEOPLE TODAY BELIEVE THE LIE, ESPECIALLY WHEN IT APPEARS IN SCIENTIFIC GARB, BECAUSE THEY HAVE NOT ACCEPTED THE LOVE OF TRUTH (2 THESSALONIANS 2:11). EVEN THE SO-CALLED SPACE TRAVEL ALONG WITH ITS SO-CALLED SUCCESSES AND PHOTOGRAPHIC EVIDENCE BELONGS TO THE POWERFUL ERRORS THAT GOD SENDS TO THE UNBELIEVERS IN THE END TIMES, THE TIME OF APOSTASY! THIS SHOULD AT LEAST BE RECOGNIZED BY THE BELIEVERS, SO THEY NO LONGER FALL PREY TO SCIENTIFIC AND OTHER LIES.

WHAT I SEE IS NEVER A DEFINITIVE PROOF OF THE TRUTH, NOT LEAST BECAUSE THE TRUTH ENDURES WHILE LIES FADE AWAY. EVERYTHING VISIBLE PERISHES, ALONG WITH ITS STARS, MOONS, AND SUNS, AND IT HAPPENS QUICKLY! 2 CORINTHIANS 4:18. IN THIS LATEST SATANIC MANIFESTATION OF ENERGY THROUGH SPACE ROCKETS, A BOOK THAT POINTS TO THE CLAIMS OF GOD'S WORD ABOUT THE UNIVERSE AND CELESTIAL BODIES IS EVEN MORE NECESSARY THAN BEFORE THE ROCKET CRAZE. WE BELIEVERS LOOK TO GOD'S WORD IN ALL THINGS, AND IT TELLS US: 'LET NO ONE DECEIVE YOU IN ANY WAY... AND THEN THE WICKED ONE WILL BE REVEALED... WHOSE FUTURE IS DETERMINED BY THE WORKINGS OF SATAN WITH ALL KINDS OF LYING POWERS AND SIGNS AND WONDERS, AND WITH ALL SORTS OF DECEPTIONS TO UNRIGHTEOUSNESS AMONG THOSE WHO ARE PERISHING, BECAUSE THEY DID NOT RECEIVE THE LOVE OF THE TRUTH, SO THAT THEY MIGHT BE SAVED. THEREFORE, GOD WILL SEND THEM STRONG DELUSIONS, SO THAT THEY WILL BELIEVE THE LIE, IN ORDER THAT ALL MAY BE CONDEMNED WHO DID NOT BELIEVE THE TRUTH BUT HAD PLEASURE IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS' (2 THESSALONIANS 2:3-12). THE TIME HAS ALREADY COME WHEN PEOPLE HOLD LIES AS TRUTH AND THEREFORE BELIEVE THEM, AND THE STRONG DELUSIONS IN SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY AND VARIOUS OTHER TEACHINGS OF DEMONS AND MEN ARE ALREADY PRESENT. THOSE WHO HAVE THE SPIRIT OF TRUTH CAN CLEARLY RECOGNIZE THIS. 'BUT WE OUGHT TO ALWAYS THANK GOD FOR YOU, BELOVED BROTHERS OF THE LORD, BECAUSE GOD CHOSE YOU FROM THE BEGINNING FOR SALVATION, THROUGH SANCTIFICATION BY THE SPIRIT AND BELIEF IN THE TRUTH...!' (2 THESSALONIANS 2:13).

RAUSCHENBERG, JUNE 30, 1960 THE AUTHOR

PREFACE TO THE FOURTH EDITION

FOR THE ENGLISH TRANSLATION OF THIS BOOK PUBLISHED IN 1972, TEACHER WOLFGANG BRAUN, A PHYSICIST AND MATHEMATICS TEACHER AT THE SECONDARY SCHOOL, WROTE AN EXCELLENT PREFACE THAT CLEARLY OUTLINES THE ISSUES WHILE ALSO ALLOWING SPACE FOR EARLIER AND EXISTING VIEWS. NOTABLY, THIS WORK COMES NOT ONLY FROM A LEARNED MAN BUT ALSO FROM A BIBLE-BELIEVING INDIVIDUAL. YOU WILL FIND THIS PREFACE ON THE NEXT PAGE UNDER THE TITLE: 'MODEL AND REALITY.' COMPARED TO PREVIOUS EDITIONS, THE TEXT OF THE BOOK HAS BEEN NEWLY REVIEWED AND EXPANDED IN SOME PLACES. THE QUESTIONS SURROUNDING THE UNIVERSE ARE INCREASINGLY AWAKENING INTEREST AMONG BIBLE BELIEVERS, LEADING TO A GROWING DEMAND FOR THIS LITTLE BOOK, WHICH IS LIKELY THE ONLY WORK THAT ADDRESSES THIS TOPIC FROM A STRICTLY BIBLICAL-FUNDAMENTALIST PERSPECTIVE. IT IS ALSO WORTH MENTIONING A VERY GOOD REFLECTION BY HERMANN DIEHL-WINNENDEN AND DIETER BRAUN-BIESELSBERG IN THE FORM OF A SMALL TWENTY-PAGE BOOKLET TITLED 'THE DIVINE CENTER AND THE CONSEQUENCES OF ITS REMOVAL.' THE AUTHORS PRESENT THE CONTENT OF THIS BOOK CONCISELY IN A FEW PAGES AND INTERPRET THE CHAOS AND DISINTEGRATION IN OUR TIME AS A CONSEQUENCE OF LOSING THE DIVINE CENTER, WHICH IS A RESULT OF THE DISTORTED MODERN WORLDVIEW. THE TABERNACLE WAS ALSO SITUATED IN THE CENTER OF THE TWELVE-TRIBE PEOPLE SURROUNDING IT. WE ADVISE OUR READERS TO OBTAIN THIS SMALL BUT EXCELLENT BOOKLET FROM MORGENLAND-VERLAG, 7541 BIESELSBERG, NEAR NEUENBÜRG. THIS BOOKLET HAS ALREADY DRAWN THE ATTENTION OF MANY READERS TO 'THE THREE-TIERED UNIVERSE OF THE BIBLE.' IF ANY GERMAN READERS HAVE RELATIVES, ACQUAINTANCES, OR FRIENDS IN THE ENGLISH-SPEAKING WORLD, PLEASE MAKE THEM AWARE OF THE ENGLISH EDITION OF THIS BOOK, WHICH HAS BEEN PUBLISHED IN AMERICA UNDER THE TITLE 'SPACE AND UNIVERSE' AND CAN ALSO BE OBTAINED FROM MORGENLAND-VERLAG, 7541 BIESELSBERG.

THE AUTHOR.

Model and reality

There have been many worldviews in the history of mankind. A worldview is the product of the effort to satisfy two needs of the inquiring and questioning human spirit:

1. To interpret objective observation facts using concepts taken from the human experience. In short: a world view should "explain" natural phenomena.

2. To bring the variety of natural phenomena into an orderly system that allows us to make predictions about the future and the unknown through causal connections. A world view is therefore always shaped and determined by the The breadth or narrowness of the range of experience and the intellectual horizon of a culture. The Babylonian world view is rejected today as wrong. However, it was completely appropriate for the needs of humanity at in diesem Sinne als that time and should be called right. Seen in this way, Ptolemy's geocentric world view was also correct. For example, it provided excellent services in the prediction of planetary positions and eclipses. It therefore meets the criteria of modern science! So why is it called wrong today? Our current Copernican-Kepler-Newtonian world view corresponds very well to the needs of the present, right up to the wish to be able to fly out into space, which has been fulfilled by this world view. It is therefore fully accepted by everyone. No one thinks that this world view could one day be declared wrong because it is not able to answer deeper questions. It is certainly a wonderful system on which the greatest thinkers of humanity have worked for many centuries. Its inner coherence is fascinating and it can provide answers to practically every possible question in the causal area of human thought. Nobody will dispute its practical use in many things either.

But it is silent on the big question of God, the Creator, his throne and his plan of salvation for humanity and the cosmos. This is a crucial deficiency that none of the

THE EARLIER WORLDVIEWS HAD A QUESTION THAT GOES TO THE ROOT OF HUMAN EXISTENCE. THE LACK OF AN ANSWER MUST HAVE SERIOUS, ULTIMATELY DEVASTATING CONSEQUENCES FOR HUMANITY. HIGHLIGHTING THESE CONSEQUENCES AND ILLUMINATING THE IMPLICATIONS AND CONNECTIONS IS THE TASK AND PURPOSE OF THIS BOOK. HOWEVER, IT DOES NOT STOP AT THE PROBLEM STATEMENT BUT ALSO PRESENTS THE SOLUTION. IT SHOWS THAT THE THREE-TIERED WORLDVIEW OF HEAVEN, EARTH, AND UNDERWORLD, AS IT IS BASED ON THE BIBLE, CORRESPONDS TO THE INNERMOST QUESTIONS AND LONGINGS OF THE HUMAN HEART. THOSE WHO ARE DRIVEN BY THE SPIRIT OF GOD AND HAVE READ THIS BOOK WILL UNDOUBTEDLY EXCLAIM: 'OH, IF ONLY IT COULD BE SO, IF THE UNIVERSE WERE TRULY CONSTRUCTED THIS WAY, THEN I WOULD HAVE FOUND HEAVEN, I COULD LOOK UP TO THE THRONE OF GOD, I WOULD BE FREED FROM THE NIGHTMARE OF EMPTINESS AND THE ICY INFINITY OF SPACE, WHERE THERE IS NO HEAVEN AND WHERE THE EARTH WHIRLS LIKE A SPECK OF DUST AMONG GLOWING GAS BALLS, AT THE MERCY OF CHANCE AND DESTRUCTION. BUT DOES REASON NOT FORBID ME FROM ACCEPTING THIS BIBLICAL WORLDVIEW? AM I NOT IN CONFLICT WITH SCIENCE, WHICH, THANKS TO ITS OVERWHELMING SUCCESSES, IS ABOVE ALL CRITICISM AND DOUBT? THE HEART SAYS YES, THE MIND SAYS NO!' I TOO KNOW THESE INNER STRUGGLES, HAVE GONE THROUGH THEM, AND WAS REWARDED WITH BLISSFUL CERTAINTY. I DID NOT TAKE THE EASY PATH; I EXAMINED THOROUGHLY, TRAINED AS A SCIENTIST, STUDIED PHYSICS, AND THUS GAINED ACCESS TO THE DEEPEST ROOTS OF OUR CURRENT UNDERSTANDING OF NATURE AND PHYSICAL RESEARCH. I HAVE RECOGNIZED THAT OUR CURRENT SCIENTIFIC THINKING HAS A MODEL-LIKE CHARACTER. A MODEL IS A TOOL FOR SCIENTISTS THAT MAKES IT POSSIBLE TO ANSWER CERTAIN QUESTIONS AND OBTAIN CERTAIN STATEMENTS. IF THESE ALIGN WITH THE OBSERVATION OF REALITY, THEN THE MODEL IS GOOD AND IS ACCEPTED AS USEFUL. THUS, I CAME TO REALIZE THAT THE COPERNICAN-NEWTONIAN SYSTEM OF TODAY'S ASTRONOMY IS AN EXCELLENT COMPUTATIONAL MODEL (AT LEAST IN THE REALM OF THE PLANETARY SYSTEM), WITH WHICH VERY USEFUL AND PRECISE RESULTS CAN BE ACHIEVED. HOWEVER, A MODEL, NO MATTER HOW USEFUL AND PROVEN, MUST NEVER BE EQUATED WITH REALITY. THAT WOULD BE A SERIOUS MISTAKE, WHICH ALBERT EINSTEIN ALSO WARNED AGAINST. UNFORTUNATELY, TODAY'S ASTRONOMY HAS SUCCUMBED TO THIS DISASTROUS ERROR. IT MUST BE CRITICIZED FOR ITS...

GRADUALLY, IT HAS BEEN FORGOTTEN HOW TO DISTINGUISH BETWEEN THE MODEL OF CALCULATION AND REALITY. THIS HAS VERY SERIOUS, UNAVOIDABLE CONSEQUENCES FOR ALL AREAS OF HUMAN EXISTENCE. HERE IS WHERE THE HUMAN SPIRIT TRAGICALLY FAILS WHEN IT FORGETS THAT ITS THINKING IS MODEL-BASED, WHILE REALITY CANNOT BE CONCEIVED BUT CAN ONLY BE REVEALED AND OBSERVED. GOD WANTS PEOPLE TO RECOGNIZE REALITY, FOR HIS WORD, THE BIBLE, MAKES VERY CLEAR STATEMENTS ABOUT THE STRUCTURE OF THE COSMOS. THIS BOOK REPORTS ON THAT. HOWEVER, IF THE BIBLE STATES THAT THE ENTIRE VISIBLE COSMOS IS ENCLOSED BY THE EARTH'S CRUST, IT MEANS THAT THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE, WITH ITS UNIMAGINABLE DIMENSIONS FROM A COPERNICAN PERSPECTIVE, IS WITHIN THE EARTH'S SPACE. THE VISIBLE STARRY SKY IS ACTUALLY A SPHERE AT THE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE. THE SUN AND THE MOON ARE MUCH SMALLER THAN ASSUMED! DO THESE STATEMENTS NOT STAND IN IRRECONCILABLE OPPOSITION TO EVERYTHING THAT SCIENCE HAS PAINSTAKINGLY DEVELOPED AND RECOGNIZED OVER THE CENTURIES? ARE THERE NOT TWO WORLDVIEWS HERE THAT ARE AS INCOMPATIBLE AS FIRE AND WATER? BIBLICAL WORLDVIEW OR SCIENTIFIC WORLDVIEW? DOES NOT ONE EXCLUDE THE OTHER? LIKE A FLASH OF REVELATION, ALL THESE QUESTIONS ARE ANSWERED AND THE CONTRADICTIONS DISAPPEAR WHEN ONE EMPLOYS THE SO-CALLED 'TRANSFORMATION THROUGH RECIPROCAL RADII.' THROUGH THIS OPERATION, THE MATHEMATICIAN RELATES THE OUTER SPACE OF A SPHERE TO ITS INNER SPACE. WHEN THIS TRANSFORMATION IS APPLIED TO THE COPERNICAN WORLDVIEW, ONE SUDDENLY SEES A WORLD THAT ALIGNS IN THE FINEST DETAILS WITH THE THREE-TIERED WORLDVIEW OF THE BIBLE! THE LAWS AND RELATIONSHIPS REMAIN AS THEY WERE MODELED BY KEPLER AND NEWTON. BUT THE TERRIFYING DISTANCES OF BILLIONS OF LIGHT-YEARS, THE INFINITE EMPTINESS, AND THE MEANINGLESSNESS HAVE VANISHED; ONE RECOGNIZES HEAVEN AS THE THRONE OF GOD AT THE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE. THROUGH THIS TRANSFORMATION, THE STRAIGHT LIGHT RAYS OF THE COPERNICAN PERSPECTIVE BECOME CURVED RAYS. THIS EXPLAINS THE FACT THAT THE SMALL FIXED STAR SPHERE AT THE CENTER APPEARS GREATLY ENLARGED, REVEALING A CELESTIAL DOME. FROM THE CONSTANT SPEED OF LIGHT IN THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE ACCORDING TO COPERNICAN THEORY, AFTER THE TRANSFORMATION, IT BECOMES A SPEED THAT SIGNIFICANTLY DECREASES TOWARDS THE CENTER.

speed. This explains, for example, that the travel time of a beam of light from the sun to the earth's surface is about 8 minutes, even if the distance is much smaller than according to the Copernican theory. A probe to Mars is known to take several months. The distance to be covered is admittedly much smaller according to the biblical world view than according to the Copernican one. But after the transformation, the speeds of rockets also turn out to be much smaller than science bases its calculations on. So there is no contradiction here either.

These were some examples to show that the world view of the Bible is not hopelessly outdated and obsolete, but that it is very current and timely, and that it points far beyond our time into the future. In this sense, the biblical world view does not represent a break with what has come before. Everything remains valid. Kepler's and Newton's laws of planetary motion and gravitation remain valid, even in the biblical world view! Only here you find them in a transformed form.

The Copernican world view is not reality, but a model. Reality is presented in the Bible. The bridge from the model to reality is built by the transformation mentioned above. However, only those who seek the truth with all their heart can cross this bridge. God's wisdom knows how to keep away those who are not called. The biblical testimony is there for everyone. But not everyone can accept it. "But he who has ears to hear, let him hear!"

Wolfgang Braun, graduate physicist

THE COSMIC GREAT ATTACK ON GOD'S WORD

"THE WISDOM OF THIS WORLD (COSMOS) IS FOOLISHNESS TO GOD. FOR IT IS WRITTEN: HE CATCHES THE WISE IN THEIR CRAFTINESS. AND AGAIN: THE LORD KNOWS THE THOUGHTS OF THE WISE, THAT THEY ARE FUTILE" 1 CORINTHIANS 3:19-20. FOR US BELIEVERS, THE ENTIRE BIBLE IS GOD'S WORD. THE BIBLE CONSISTENTLY PRESENTS THE IDEA, AND EXPLICITLY TEACHES - AS WILL BE SHOWN LATER - THAT THE EARTH IS AT REST, THE HEAVENS ABOVE ARE A FINITE SPACE, AND THE CELESTIAL BODIES IN THE SKY MOVE AROUND THE EARTH AND THUS SIMULTANEOUSLY AROUND THE HEAVENS. THIS VIEW IS NOW CONSIDERED COMPLETELY OUTDATED AND PRIMITIVE, AS SINCE THE SO-CALLED COPERNICAN REVOLUTION, THE SCIENTIFIC OPINION, WHICH IS DEEMED UNTOUCHABLE, HAS PREVAILED THAT THE EARTH IS A SPHERE THAT ORBITS, ALONG WITH OTHER SPHERICAL CELESTIAL BODIES, IN AN INFINITE 'SPACE' AROUND THE GREAT FIERY SPHERE OF THE SUN. BEFORE COPERNICUS - A CONTEMPORARY OF MARTIN LUTHER - THE GENERAL VIEW WAS DIFFERENT. ALTHOUGH THE ANCIENT GREEK ARISTARCHUS OF SAMOS HAD ALREADY SUGGESTED THAT THE EARTH WAS A LARGE SPHERE AND THAT THE SUN WAS AN APPROXIMATELY SIX TIMES LARGER SPHERE OF GLOWING IRON THAT SEEMED TO STAND STILL WHILE THE EARTH MIGHT BE IN MOTION. THE GREEK MATHEMATICIAN ARCHIMEDES (AROUND 280 BC) ADOPTED THIS IDEA AND SOUGHT TO QUANTIFY IT. HOWEVER, THESE GREEK THINKERS FOUND NO SUCCESSORS.

THE OLD WORLDVIEW THE GREEK ASTRONOMER CLAUDIUS PTOLEMY (LATIN: PTOLEMAEUS) ESTABLISHED HIS WELL-KNOWN GEOCENTRIC SYSTEM AROUND THE YEAR 150 AD BASED ON OBSERVATIONS IN ALEXANDRIA, WHICH REMAINED UNCHALLENGED UNTIL COPERNICUS BECAUSE IT DID NOT CONTRADICT EITHER COMMON SENSE OR THE BIBLE. PTOLEMY RECOGNIZED AND TAUGHT: THE EARTH IS ROUND AND FLOATS AT THE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE. AROUND THE EARTH, CELESTIAL BODIES ORBIT IN CIRCULAR PATHS.

THE MOON, THE SUN, AND THE FIVE PLANETS KNOWN AT THAT TIME WERE HELD IN PLACE BY SEVEN CRYSTAL SPHERES. EACH OF THESE SEVEN CRYSTAL SPHERES MOVES SLOWLY AROUND THE EARTH, CARRYING THE MOON, THE SUN, AND THE PLANETS WITH IT. THE EARTH, AS THE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE, CONTAINS AN ETERNAL FIRE WITHIN, WHICH IS VISIBLY MANIFESTED THROUGH VOLCANIC ERUPTIONS. ON THE EARTH'S SURFACE, HUMANS WANDER. ABOVE THEM ARE THE SEVEN CRYSTAL SPHERES. THE MOON IS ATTACHED TO THE LOWEST SPHERE. THE SECOND HOLDS MERCURY, THE THIRD VENUS, THE FOURTH THE SUN, THE FIFTH MARS, THE SIXTH JUPITER, AND THE SEVENTH SATURN AROUND THE EARTH. THIS ENTIRE UNIVERSE WAS BOUNDED ABOVE BY AN IRON VAULT THAT FORMED THE FLOOR OF HEAVEN, WHERE GOD AND HIS ANGELS RESIDED. THE MILKY WAY IS A HEAVILY TRAVELED PATH BY GOD AND THE ANGELS, WORN DOWN TO A SHIMMERING LIGHT. THE OTHER STARS ARE NOTHING BUT HOLES IN THIS VAULT THROUGH WHICH HEAVENLY LIGHT SHINES. BECAUSE THESE HOLES WERE FIXED IN PLACE FOREVER, THEY WERE CALLED FIXED STARS. BETWEEN HEAVEN AND EARTH, ANGELS OR HEAVENLY MESSENGERS MOVE UP AND DOWN THROUGH THE CRYSTAL SPHERES. THIS MAGNIFICENT WORLDVIEW, IN ITS SIMPLICITY AND COHERENCE, APPEARS VERY PRIMITIVE TO TODAY'S PERSON, BUT ONLY BECAUSE THEIR THINKING HAS STRAYED FROM THE TRUTH AND HAS BECOME INDEPENDENT IN GODLESSNESS AND LIES. IN REALITY, THIS OVERALL PICTURE OF PTOLEMY WAS MUCH CLOSER TO THE TRUTH THAN WE ARE TODAY. AND IT FITS WITHOUT CONTRADICTION INTO ALL REPRESENTATIONS OF THE BIBLE. THE INGENUITY WITH WHICH PTOLEMY OBSERVED AND INFERRED IS SHOWN IN HIS IDEA OF A DOUBLE CIRCULAR MOTION: EACH PLANET MOVES WITH ITS CRYSTAL SPHERE, MEANING IT MOVES IN A CIRCLE AROUND A CENTER, WHICH IN TURN ORBITS THE EARTH IN A CIRCULAR MANNER. WITH THIS, PTOLEMY HAD ALREADY ANTICIPATED THE INVISIBLE CELESTIAL FIRMAMENT AS THE CENTER OF ALL MOVEMENTS. THE CHURCH SUPPORTED THIS VIEW OF THE UNIVERSE BECAUSE IT GAVE THE EARTH, AS THE PLACE OF ACTION FOR THE SON OF GOD, ITS RIGHTFUL POSITION AT THE CENTER OF ALL. TOWARDS THE END OF THE MIDDLE AGES, TELESCOPES EMERGED, AND RESEARCHERS CURIOUSLY LOOKED UP AT THE STARS. THEY NOTICED THAT THE ORBITS OF THE PLANETS WERE VERY COMPLICATED AND COULD NOT BE EXPLAINED. EMPEROR CHARLES V - THE EMPEROR IN GERMANY AT THE BEGINNING OF THE REFORMATION - WAS ALSO AN AMATEUR ASTRONOMER. HE ONCE SAID THAT GOD HAD ARRANGED THE ORBITS OF THE PLANETS NONSENSICALLY. IF GOD HAD ASKED HIM FOR ADVICE, HE WOULD HAVE GIVEN HIM MUCH.

WE COULD PROVIDE BETTER INSTRUCTIONS FOR SETTING UP THESE ORBITS! THIS PUBLIC, SINCERE REMARK SHOWS JUST HOW FOOLISHLY THE WORLD WAS GOVERNED BACK THEN.

THE NEW WORLDVIEW. EVEN THE LEARNED CANON IN FRAUENBURG, NICOLAUS COPERNICUS, SOUGHT TO EXPLAIN THE PLANETARY ORBITS AT THE BEGINNING OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY. HE PRIMARILY OBSERVED THE PLANET MARS AGAINST THE BACKDROP OF THE FIXED STARS, WHICH HE ASSUMED TO BE STATIONARY, A NOTION THAT IS UNTENABLE. HE FOUND IT UNSETTLING THAT MARS SHOULD TRACE A LOOP THROUGH SPACE, MOVING FORWARD AND THEN BACKWARD. THIS ORBIT HAD TO BE AN ILLUSION. IN SEARCH OF AN EXPLANATION, COPERNICUS PONDERED (WHO GIVES THOUGHTS? - 'WHY DO SUCH THOUGHTS ARISE IN YOUR HEARTS?' ASKS THE LORD JESUS IN LUKE 24:38): IF THE EARTH WERE TO MOVE AT A SUFFICIENT DISTANCE FROM THE SUN, THEN MARS SHOULD BE SEEN TO THE LEFT OF THE COMPARISON STARS FROM ONE SIDE OF THE EARTH'S ORBIT AND TO THE RIGHT FROM THE OTHER SIDE. IF THE EARTH WERE TO MOVE AROUND THE SUN, THE OBSERVED PHENOMENON OF MARS SEEMINGLY TRACING A LOOP COULD OCCUR. FROM THIS REASONING, COPERNICUS ASSERTED: 1. THE DAILY ROTATION OF THE HEAVENS IS ONLY APPARENT AND IS CAUSED BY THE DAILY ROTATION OF THE EARTH AROUND AN AXIS PASSING THROUGH ITS CENTER. 2. THE EARTH IS ONE OF THE PLANETS AND ORBITS THE SUN AS THE CENTER OF MOTION. THUS, THE TRUE CENTER OF PLANETARY MOVEMENTS IS NOT THE EARTH, BUT THE SUN. SUCH CLAIMS CANNOT BE PROVEN OR DISPROVEN BY EARTHLY MEANS OF OBSERVATION AND CALCULATION, 'BECAUSE ONLY RELATIVE MOTIONS HAVE A DEFINABLE MEANING, AND THE QUESTION OF WHETHER TYCHO (STATIONARY EARTH) OR COPERNICUS (ROTATING EARTH) IS CORRECT IS THEREFORE IRRELEVANT' (ERICH SCHNEIDER). AT THAT TIME, COPERNICUS BELIEVED THE EARTH WAS SIX MILLION KILOMETERS FROM THE SUN; SCHOLARS HAVE SINCE MEASURED MORE ACCURATELY AND NOW ESTIMATE IT TO BE ABOUT 150 MILLION KILOMETERS. NEVERTHELESS, THE SHIFT OF THE CENTER TO THE SUN AND THE REPOSITIONING OF THE EARTH AMONG THE PLANETS GRADUALLY GAINED ACCEPTANCE AMONG SCHOLARS. THE HELIOCENTRIC SYSTEM, WHICH PLACED THE SUN (GREEK: HELIOS) AT THE CENTER, REPLACED THE GEOCENTRIC WORLDVIEW.

THE PTOLEMAIC MODEL PLACED THE EARTH (GREEK: GA) AT THE CENTER. IN SCIENCE, AS IN THE WORLD OF FASHION, NEW TRENDS ALWAYS REPLACE THE OLD ONES. IN ANY CASE, SATAN'S COSMIC ASSAULT ON GOD'S WORD HAD WON ITS FIRST BATTLE ON EARTH.

A GLIMPSE BEHIND THE SCENES! WHY DID THE IDEA OF CHANGING THE EXISTING WORLDVIEW SUDDENLY EMERGE IN THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY? WHO COULD THAT POSSIBLY BENEFIT? PEOPLE SAY THAT SOMEONE JUST HAPPENED TO STUDY THE PLANETARY ORBITS AND SOUGHT AN EXPLANATION. BUT WE KNOW WHO CONTROLS THESE COINCIDENCES AND INSPIRATIONS. WHO HAS AN INTEREST IN QUESTIONING IT AT SUCH A CRUCIAL MOMENT DURING THE REFORMATION, WHEN GOD'S WORD RESURFACED? WHO IS TRULY INTERESTED IN THE 'PROGRESS' OF HUMANITY? WHERE IS IT SUPPOSED TO PROGRESS TO? FROM WHERE AND TOWARDS WHAT GOAL? WHAT PURPOSE DO ALL THESE INTELLECTUAL INSIGHTS AND THE SCIENTIFIC AND PRACTICAL 'ACHIEVEMENTS' OF HUMANITY SERVE? AREN'T THEY ALWAYS LEADING FURTHER AWAY FROM GOD AND HIS REVELATION OF TRUTH IN NATURE, LAW, AND THE SON? ISN'T THE ULTIMATE GOAL AT THE END OF HUMAN DEVELOPMENT ON THIS EARTH THE ANTI-CHRISTIAN EMPIRE THAT WILL FORCE ALL WHO LOVE THEIR LIVES TO WORSHIP THE FALSE CHRIST? EVERY NEW INSIGHT AND EVERY ADVANCEMENT ON EARTH SERVES THIS GOAL. THEREFORE, EVERYTHING THAT NATIONS CREATE IN THEIR PROGRESS WILL BURN IN THE FIRE ON THE DAY OF THE LORD (HAB. 2:13). THE SCHOLARSHIP OF NATIONS IS FOOLISHNESS BEFORE GOD. FOR MILLENNIA, PEOPLE LIVED WITHOUT KNOWING THAT THE EARTH THEY INHABIT IS A RAPIDLY SPINNING GIANT SPHERE ORBITING A MUCH LARGER SUN. EVEN THE MANY PIOUS PEOPLE, SEERS, AND PROPHETS WERE UNAWARE OF THIS AND DID NOT PROCLAIM IT. WHY IS THIS 'WISDOM' SUDDENLY REVEALED AT THE END OF THE MILLENNIUM, WHICH WILL CULMINATE IN THE ANTI-CHRISTIAN REALM? IRONICALLY! SINCE COPERNICUS AND THE UNEXPECTEDLY ADVANCING SCIENCE AND CULTURE IN ALL FIELDS, PEOPLE HAVE NOT BECOME WISER, HAPPIER, OR BETTER; ON THE CONTRARY, THEY ARE INCREASINGLY UNHAPPY, HARRIED, UNFREE, AND AIMLESS, SERVING ALL IDOLS, WHETHER CONSCIOUSLY OR UNCONSCIOUSLY.

WE MUST NOT ONLY SEE THE INVENTION OF GUNPOWDER, THE PRINTING PRESS, AND THE STEAM ENGINE, BUT ALSO THE IDEA OF COPERNICUS AND ITS SPREAD IN THE BROADER CONTEXT OF THE GREAT ANTI-CHRISTIAN UPRISING AGAINST GOD AND HIS CHRIST IN THE LAST CENTURIES OF THIS MILLENNIUM. ONLY THEN CAN WE BETTER RECOGNIZE THE CRUCIAL TURNING POINT FROM THE SPIRITUAL REALM THAT OCCURRED WITH COPERNICUS. THE PRINCE OF THIS WORLD, WITH HIS ARMY, RULES IN THIS AGE FROM THE HEAVENLY REALM OVER THE KINGDOMS OF THE EARTH THAT HAVE BEEN ENTRUSTED TO HIM, AS EVERY BIBLE READER KNOWS (EPH. 2:2; LUKE 4:5-6). HOW DOES HE RULE? BY GENERATING THOUGHTS AND DECISIONS IN THE HEARTS OF PEOPLE. FOR HE HAS HIS WORK IN THE SONS OF DISOBEDIENCE, SO THAT THEY DO THE WILL OF THE FLESH AND OF REASON (OF REASON!) (EPH. 2:2-3). THUS, IDEAS AND INVENTIONS ARE INSPIRED AND PROMOTED BY THE SPIRITUAL WORLD IN THE HEARTS OF PEOPLE WHO ARE OPEN TO SUCH INSPIRATIONS THROUGH SEARCHING AND PONDERING IN THE REALMS OF 'PURE REASON.' IN THIS WAY, THE SPIRITUAL SATANIC WORLD RULES OVER HUMANITY FROM THE HEAVENLY REALM. THESE THOUGHTS DO NOT ALWAYS HAVE TO BE LOWLY MURDEROUS OR OTHERWISE COARSE SINFUL THOUGHTS; THEY ARE NOT ALWAYS JUST 'THE WILL OF THE FLESH,' BUT CAN OFTEN BE VERY BEAUTIFUL, LOFTY, USEFUL, AND NOBLE THOUGHTS AND INSIGHTS, 'THE WILL OF REASON,' WHICH RISE IN THE HEARTS OF RESEARCHERS. ACCORDING TO SCRIPTURE, THOUGHTS BEGIN IN THE HEART, NOT IN THE HEAD. THEY ARE THOUGHTS THAT AT SOME POINT SERVE THE GREAT END GOAL OF THE PRINCE OF THIS WORLD: THE WORSHIP OF HIS PERSON IN THE IMAGE OF THE BEAST BY ALL PEOPLE (REV. 13:15). HOWEVER, MOST OF HUMANITY IS STILL UNAWARE OF THIS ULTIMATE GOAL. THEREFORE, THESE RESEARCHERS AND INVENTORS, WITH THEIR CONTRIBUTIONS TO SO-CALLED PROGRESS, ARE MERELY DECEIVED, MISUSED INDIVIDUALS WHO EACH HAVE A SMALL STONE TO CONTRIBUTE ON THE PATH TO THE GREAT END GOAL: THE WORSHIP OF THE BEAST IN ITS IMAGE. TODAY, INVENTIONS ARE ACCELERATING BECAUSE IT IS THE END TIMES, AND THUS THE SATANIC SPIRITUAL WORLD ABOVE IS IN GREAT MOVEMENT. THE DEVIL WILL SOON BE CAST DOWN TO THE EARTH AND KNOWS THAT HE HAS LITTLE TIME (REV. 12:12). SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY GO HAND IN HAND. SCIENCE PROVIDES THE PREREQUISITES FOR TECHNOLOGY. AND AT THE BEGINNING OF MODERN SCIENCE, WHICH WAS FREED FROM ECCLESIASTICAL OVERSIGHT BUT ALSO FROM THE WORD OF GOD, STOOD COPERNICUS, AMONG OTHERS, WHO OPENED THE DOOR TO THE NEW BOUNDLESS WORLDVIEW AND WORLD FEELING OF MODERN HUMANITY.

WITH THE RELOCATION OF THE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE. RELOCATION WHERE? PERHAPS TO GOD IN HEAVEN, WHICH ACCORDING TO THE WORD OF GOD IS THE THRONE OF GOD? OH NO, BUT TO THE VISIBLE SUN, WHICH HAS ALWAYS ATTRACTED SUN WORSHIPPERS, WHILE HEAVEN AND ITS GOD ARE INVISIBLE, ONLY BECOMING VISIBLE THROUGH FAITH (HEBREWS 11:1-2). IT IS CRUCIAL TO NOTE THAT COPERNICUS, WHO MAY HAVE PERSONALLY BEEN AN HONORABLE MAN, DID NOT THINK TO CONSULT THE BIBLE AS THE WORD OF GOD; HE HARDLY KNEW IT, AS THE REFORMATION HAD JUST BEGUN IN GERMANY WHILE HE PONDERED THE PATHS OF THE STARS IN ITALY AND THEN AT THE POLISH-GERMAN BORDER. THIS RESTLESS INNER QUESTIONING AND SEARCHING FOR THE SOLUTION TO A QUESTION OR PROBLEM CREATES THE NECESSARY SPIRITUAL AND MENTAL READINESS TO ABSORB THE SEEDS OF THOUGHT FROM THE INVISIBLE AIR WORLD. THIS PROCESS IS REPEATED AMONG ALL INVENTORS IN ANY FIELD TIME AND AGAIN. THOSE WHO ASK THEMSELVES AND NOT GOD RECEIVE ANSWERS FROM THE REALM OF THE 'SPIRIT THAT ALWAYS DENIES.' THOSE WHO DO NOT ENGAGE WITH GOD, DO NOT LISTEN TO HIS WORD, AND THUS ARE NOT OPEN TO INSPIRATIONS AND REVELATIONS FROM GOD IN FAITHFUL OBEDIENCE AND PRAYERFUL COMMUNION WITH GOD, ARE INDEED ENGAGED WITH THE WORLD THAT IS NOT OF GOD, WITHOUT REALIZING IT. WE MUST VIEW THE ENTIRE DEVELOPMENT OF HUMANITY, ESPECIALLY IN RECENT CENTURIES, AS A PURPOSEFULLY DIRECTED MATTER, TO WHICH ALL INVENTIONS AND DISCOVERIES, HOWEVER USEFUL THEY MAY SEEM INDIVIDUALLY, MUST SERVE MORE OR LESS. 'OUT OF THE HEART COME EVIL THOUGHTS, MURDER, ADULTERY, SEXUAL IMMORALITY, THEFT, FALSE WITNESS, SLANDER' (MATTHEW 15:19). THUS, ALSO FALSE WITNESS! THIS DOES NOT ONLY REFER TO FALSE STATEMENTS IN A COURT TRIAL BUT ALSO TO THE FORMULATION OF SCIENTIFIC CLAIMS THAT CONTRADICT THE STATEMENTS OF THE WORD OF GOD. WHO FILLS THE HEART WITH WHAT THEN COMES OUT THROUGH THE MOUTH? FOR ONLY WHEN THE HEART IS FULL DOES THE MOUTH OVERFLOW. SATAN IS CALLED THE EVIL ONE IN SCRIPTURE. HE WORKS IN THE HEARTS THE EVIL CONCLUSIONS, THE ERRONEOUS DEDUCTIONS IN LOGICAL GUISE. IN THIS REGARD, THE WORD OF THE LORD AT THE CROSS APPLIES TO INVENTORS AND RESEARCHERS AS WELL: THEY DO NOT KNOW WHAT THEY ARE DOING. TODAY, AS A PIECE OF THE SATANIC END GOAL OF SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY HAS BECOME ALARMINGLY VISIBLE IN ATOMIC DESTRUCTION AND ITS CONSEQUENCES, NOT SO MANY PEOPLE CONTRADICT WHEN ONE POINTS OUT THE PURPOSEFUL SATANIC INFLUENCE IN THE MORE RECENT HISTORY OF HUMANITY.

AT THAT TIME, COPERNICUS DID NOT DARE TO PUBLISH HIS HYPOTHESIS AND THE LATIN BOOK DEDICATED TO THE POPE DURING HIS LIFETIME. DURING THE GALILEO CONTROVERSIES, COPERNICUS'S BOOK WAS PLACED ON THE CATHOLIC CHURCH'S INDEX OF FORBIDDEN BOOKS IN 1616. IT WAS REMOVED FROM THIS INDEX IN 1757, AND IN 1882, THE CHURCH ALLOWED THE PRINTING OF ALL BOOKS TEACHING THE MOVEMENT OF THE EARTH. SINCE THE PROTESTANT CHURCH AND ITS THEOLOGY HAD ALREADY CONCEDED MUCH EARLIER, THIS MEANT THAT FOR THE PRINCE OF THIS WORLD, A SIGNIFICANT PARTIAL GOAL WAS ACHIEVED: THE CHRISTIAN CHURCHES ON EARTH, WHICH HAD THE BIBLE IN THEIR HOMES, NO LONGER CONTRADICTED WHEN SCIENCE TAUGHT THE OPPOSITE OF WHAT WAS STATED IN GOD'S WORD. HOW THIS PARTIAL RESULT WAS FURTHER EVALUATED INTO THE LATEST MAJOR ATTACK ON GOD'S WORD BY BULTMANN WILL BE EXPLAINED LATER. THE COPERNICAN IDEA WAS POSITIVELY RECEIVED IN A TIME THAT WAS STRONGLY AGITATED IN ALL DISTRICTS, PUSHING AGAINST ECCLESIASTICAL GUARDIANSHIP IN ALL AREAS AND BEGINNING TO REVERE REASON AS GOD, AND IT WAS FURTHER DEVELOPED BY SCHOLARS DURING THE MODERN ERA. PETRUS GASSENDI, A PHILOSOPHY PROFESSOR IN PARIS, LAID THE FOUNDATIONS FOR MODERN PHILOSOPHICAL MATERIALISM, ATOMIC THEORY, AND THE MECHANICAL WORLDVIEW IN THE FIRST HALF OF THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY. IN CONTRAST, THE ITALIAN SCHOLAR GIORDANO BRUNO, DRIVEN BY HIS ENTHUSIASM FOR GREEK IDEALISM, SPECULATIVELY PRESENTED THE MODERN INFINITE UNIVERSE CONCEPT. HE WAS BURNED BY THE INQUISITION IN ROME IN 1600 AFTER STEADFASTLY REFUSING TO RECANT. WHILE COPERNICUS REMAINED WITHIN THE 'NARROWNESS' OF THE FINITELY CONCEIVED SOLAR SYSTEM AND MERELY RELOCATED ITS CENTER, GALILEO ADDED HIS OWN OBSERVATIONS BUT LATER RECANTED BEFORE THE HERESY COURT, AND KEPLER PROVIDED THE MATHEMATICAL-ASTRONOMICAL LAWS FOR IT. THE FORMER DOMINICAN MONK AND LATER RESTLESSLY TRAVELING ITALIAN PHILOSOPHER GIORDANO BRUNO, WORKING MUCH WITH FANTASY AND INTUITION (EMOTIONAL OVERVIEW OR INSPIRATION!), SHATTERED THE FINITENESS OF THE COPERNICAN WORLDVIEW AND FIRST EXPRESSED THE INFINITY AND BOUNDLESSNESS OF THE UNIVERSE IN A POEM. BRUNO DESTROYS THE FIXED STARRY SKY, WHICH BOTH COPERNICUS AND THE MIDDLE AGES AND ANTIQUITY BELIEVED IN, AND WHICH THE BIBLE TEACHES, AND NOW LOOKS INTO INFINITE EXPANSES.

SO THE SKY, THE IMMEASURABLE SPACE, THE UNIVERSAL WOMB, THE ALL-ENCOMPASSING, THE ETHER REGION, WITHIN WHICH EVERYTHING STIRS AND MOVES. IN IT, NUMEROUS STARS, CELESTIAL BODIES, GLOBES, SUNS, AND PLANETS ARE VISIBLY PERCEIVABLE, AND COUNTLESS OTHERS MUST REASONABLY BE ASSUMED. THERE ARE INFINITELY MANY SUNS AND WORLDS NOW. NEITHER OUR EARTH NOR OUR SUN IS THE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE. THERE IS NO LONGER ANY CENTER OF THE COSMOS. THERE IS ALSO NO LONGER ANY UP OR DOWN. (EXACTLY WHAT THE DEVIL AIMS TO ACHIEVE!) THIS VIEW, WHICH CANNOT BE PROVEN BUT IS RATHER AN INTUITION (EMOTIONAL KNOWLEDGE, A WISHFUL IMAGE), HAS PREVAILED IN MODERN TIMES AND HAS TURNED THE MEDIEVAL, LIMITED WORLDVIEW WITH ITS STATIONARY CENTER, THE EARTH, INTO A RELIC. (FROM HOFER: 'THE WORLDVIEWS OF MODERNITY.') AND THIS EMOTIONAL PERSPECTIVE SEEMS INDEED TO HAVE BEEN CONFIRMED BY THE LATEST RESEARCH OF ASTRONOMERS WITH THEIR LARGE TELESCOPES. THEY CONTINUALLY DISCOVER NEW 'DEPTHS IN INFINITE SPACE,' GIANT SUNS, SPIRAL NEBULAE, GALAXIES, AND STAR CLUSTERS, ALL OF WHICH SEEM TO BE IN MOTION SOMEWHERE. THE THOUGHT HAS EMERGED THAT THE IMMENSE, INFINITE UNIVERSE RESEMBLES A RECENTLY EXPLODED GRENADE, WITH DEBRIS, THESE 'WORLDS,' FLYING APART INTO 'INFINITY.' ANOTHER THINKER RESPONDED THAT THE EXPLOSION IS ALREADY OVER, AND THE PIECES ARE ALREADY FLYING 'BACK,' ALL TOWARDS ONE POINT! WHO IS LAUGHING?! WE WANT TO POINT OUT THE MAJOR MISTAKE THAT STARGAZERS MAKE RIGHT HERE. IT WILL BE DISCUSSED IN MORE DETAIL LATER. THEY BELIEVE THAT LIGHT ALWAYS TRAVELS STRAIGHT AHEAD, AND THEY UNASKEDLY TRANSPOSE THE PHYSICAL CONDITIONS OF THE EARTH'S SURFACE INTO THE SPACES ABOVE US. THEY LOOK INTO OTHER DIMENSIONS AND STRETCH THESE INTO THE FRAMEWORK OF EARTHLY, VISIBLE THREE DIMENSIONS. THE RESULT IS THE NONSENSE OF AN INFINITE, BOUNDLESS, YET VISIBLE 'SPACE,' FROM WHICH TIME IS ATTEMPTED TO BE SEPARATED BY INTRODUCING BILLIONS OF LIGHT-YEARS. IN OTHER WORDS: THE TELESCOPES STARE UPWARDS INTO SPHERES OF ETERNITY, AND PEOPLE THEN TRY TO TRANSLATE WHAT THEY SEE INTO EARTHLY CONCEPTS OF TIME AND SPACE, AN ATTEMPT THAT MUST NATURALLY EXPLODE EARTHLY CONCEPTS. 500 METERS OF ETERNITY IN HEIGHT BECOME 500 MILLION LIGHT-YEARS ON EARTH, WHICH NO PROFESSOR CAN EVEN COMPREHEND ANYMORE, AS THIS NUMBER HAS TOO MANY ZEROS, MEANING IT CONTAINS ELEMENTS OF ETERNITY!

THE GREAT HUMAN SPIRIT! TODAY, THE FOLLOWING CLASSIFICATION OF SPACE IS MADE AT THE OBSERVATORIES:

SPHERE I - SOLAR SYSTEM LIGHT (300,000 KILOMETERS PER SECOND - ALLEGEDLY!) TAKES EIGHT MINUTES TO TRAVEL FROM EARTH TO THE SUN, AND ELEVEN HOURS TO REACH THE EDGE OF THE SOLAR SYSTEM.

SPHERE II - MILKY WAY TO THE NEAREST STAR ('FIXED STAR') NEXT TO THE SUN, LIGHT TAKES - ALLEGEDLY! - 100,000 YEARS. SPHERE III - UNIVERSE TO THE NEXT STAR SYSTEM (OR THE NEXT 'MILKY WAY'), THE ANDROMEDA NEBULA, LIGHT TAKES ONE MILLION YEARS! TO THE GALAXY 'MESSIER 81', IT TAKES THREE MILLION YEARS. (GALAXY IS THE GREEK WORD FOR MILKY WAY.) FINALLY, TO THE FARTHEST VISIBLE LIMIT OF THE 200-INCH TELESCOPE AT MOUNT PALOMAR IN THE USA, LIGHT TAKES A BILLION YEARS. CURRENTLY, PEOPLE INTOXICATED BY THEIR TECHNOLOGICAL 'ADVANCEMENTS' DREAM OF 'CONQUERING SPACE'. BUT EVEN IF THEIR SPACECRAFT COULD SOMEDAY TRAVEL AT THE SO-CALLED SPEED OF LIGHT, WHAT WOULD THAT MEAN IN THIS VASTNESS? THE MILLIONS OF GALAXIES OR SPIRAL NEBULAE BEYOND OUR MILKY WAY (ALLEGEDLY!) WOULD NEVER BE REACHABLE WITHIN THE LIFETIMES OF THE CREW, EVEN AT LIGHT SPEED. SPACE AND TIME BEGIN TO STRANGELY TOUCH AND OVERLAP IN THIS SUPPOSEDLY INFINITE UNIVERSE. NOWADAYS, IT IS BELIEVED AT OBSERVATORIES THAT THEY CAN SEE NOT JUST A BILLION, BUT ALREADY TWO BILLION LIGHT-YEARS 'INTO THE COSMOS'. IN THIS INFINITELY EXPANDED 'SPACE', HUMANITY APPEARS VERY SMALL, IN THIS AUDACIOUS TRANSFER OF LINEAR AND THREE-DIMENSIONAL THINKING FROM FLESH AND BLOOD INTO THE INVISIBLE WORLD, WHERE MORE THAN THREE PERPENDICULARS CAN STAND AT A SINGLE POINT! THIS CANNOT BE PREVENTED! THE GREATER THE HUMAN SPIRIT BECOMES, BELIEVING IT CAN COMPREHEND AND MASTER ALL OF THIS. 'THE EGYPTIANS STILL CONSIDERED THEIR NILE VALLEY TO BE THE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE AND VIEWED THE STARS MERELY AS A KIND OF HANGING...'

PEOPLE HAVE LOOKED AT LAMPS THAT WERE SUPPOSED TO BEAUTIFY THEIR NIGHTS. THE MIDDLE AGES VIEWED THE ENTIRE EARTH, WITH COPERNICUS AND KEPLER ALREADY SEEING THE SUN AS THE AXIS OF CREATION. HOWEVER, NOW EVEN OUR MILKY WAY, WHERE THE SUN IS JUST ONE OF MILLIONS OF STARS, IS NO LONGER OF CRUCIAL IMPORTANCE. IT IS MERELY ONE OF COUNTLESS STAR GROUPINGS THAT ARE PRESUMABLY RACING AWAY FROM EACH OTHER INTO SPACE. WE ARE JUST INHABITANTS OF A RELATIVELY TINY, THIRD-RATE PLANET ORBITING A FOURTH-RATE SUN, WHICH ITSELF BELONGS TO A MEDIOCRE STAR SYSTEM. YET, WE ARE CAPABLE OF STUDYING THE NATURE OF THE VAST UNIVERSE, GRADUALLY UNCOVERING OUR OWN INSIGNIFICANCE, AND STILL LIVING ON WITH THAT KNOWLEDGE! (FROM AN ESSAY IN THE STUTTGARTER ZEITUNG, 1954.) THIS IS HOW A PERSON REACTS WHO IS ON THE PATH TO BECOMING AN ANTI-CHRISTIAN SUPERHUMAN: WHILE WE CAN NEVER PHYSICALLY REACH THE BOUNDARIES OF OUR OWN SOLAR SYSTEM, THE 'HUMAN SPIRIT' CAN TRAVEL ASTONISHINGLY FAR AND CAN MAKE INCREDIBLE IMAGINATIVE JOURNEYS. ONE ONLY NEEDS TO OPEN A MODERN ASTRONOMICAL MAGAZINE. THERE WE LEARN, FOR EXAMPLE, THAT 'THE CENTRAL REGION OF THE MILKY WAY, MESSIER 32 (A MILLION LIGHT-YEARS!) IS COMPLETELY BURNT OUT.' OR THAT 'THE ANDROMEDA NEBULA CONSISTS OF STARS ALL THE WAY TO ITS CORE,' MEANING IT IS NOT YET BURNT OUT. THESE ARE THE 'AMAZING VICTORIES OF THE HUMAN SPIRIT OVER TIME AND SPACE'!

THE CONSEQUENCES THE COPERNICAN REVOLUTION HAD PROFOUND CONSEQUENCES THAT ARE EASILY OVERLOOKED. THE PTOLEMAIC (AS WELL AS THE BIBLICAL) EARTH WAS STILL OVERSHADOWED BY A HEAVEN THAT REPRESENTED THE ULTIMATE REALITY. THIS HEAVEN WAS MERELY REFLECTED BY THE EARTH. EVERYTHING THAT HAPPENED ON EARTH, ACCORDING TO THE BELIEFS AND PERCEPTIONS OF PEOPLE, CORRESPONDED IN SOME WAY TO AN ETERNAL ARCHETYPE IN THE HEAVENLY SPHERES, SO THAT ULTIMATELY THE ENTIRE MEANING OF LIFE COULD BE DESCRIBED IN TERMS OF ALIGNMENT WITH THE HEAVENLY REALITY, WITH THE HEAVENLY PROTOTYPE AND ARCHETYPE. WHEN SUDDENLY THIS EARTH, ON WHICH WE LIVE, BECOMES A PLANET PARTICIPATING IN THE PLANETARY ROTATIONS OF THE HEAVENS IN A SPACE THAT KNEW NO BOUNDARIES, IT SIGNIFIES A DISCOVERY OF THE 'MYSTERY OF THE HEAVENS.' IN A SENSE, ONE HAD 'COME BEHIND THE DIZZINESS.' FOR NOW, ONE 'KNEW' THAT THE...

THE SHINING STARS, WHICH HAD LONG EXERTED THEIR MAGIC ON PEOPLE, ARE NOTHING BUT 'JUST' OTHER 'EARTHS.' THUS, THE EARTH HAD NO HEAVEN BELONGING TO IT ANYMORE, ONE THAT WOULD ARCH OVER IT AND CONTAIN THE HEAVENLY REALITY AND THE HEAVENLY IDEALS. THE MEANING OF LIFE COULD NO LONGER CONSIST IN IMITATING A SECURE, EXALTED MODEL IN A HEAVENLY WORLD. INSTEAD, THE MEANING OF LIFE IS NOW SEEN AS THE ACHIEVEMENT AND FULFILLMENT OF SOME FUTURE IDEAL, AN EARTHLY AND HUMAN GOAL OF ONE'S OWN DESIGN. HEAVEN LOSES ITS SUPERNATURAL CHARACTER, THE THRONE OF GOD IS DETHRONED, DISSOLVED INTO AN INFINITE COLD VOID, AND HUMANITY BEGINS TO TURN WITH ALL ITS MIGHT TOWARDS EARTHLY, HUMAN, VISIBLE GOALS. IT WAS THE SAME CALL THAT FRIEDRICH NIETZSCHE LATER PROCLAIMED WITH THE WORDS: 'BROTHERS, REMAIN TRUE TO THE EARTH!' OR HEINRICH HEINE IN HIS FAMOUS MOCKING VERSE: 'SUGAR PEAS FOREVER - AS LONG AS THE PODS BURST. WE LEAVE HEAVEN TO THE ANGELS AND THE SPARROWS!' A LOOK AT THE CHANGE IN WORLDVIEW OVER THE CENTURIES SHOWS THAT THE COSMOS IS A REFLECTION OF HUMANITY AND HUMANITY IS A REFLECTION OF ITS COSMIC IMAGE. THE CONCEPT OF THE ORDER OF THE UNIVERSE, THE ORDERS OF SOCIETY, AND PERSONAL LIFE ORDER ARE A UNITY. EVERY CULTURE HAS ITS CORRESPONDING IMAGE OF NATURE. THE COPERNICAN REVERSAL OF THE RELATIONSHIPS BETWEEN EARTH AND SUN WAS NOT COINCIDENTALLY ACCOMPANIED BY A REVERSAL OF THE RELATIONSHIPS AMONG PEOPLE, BETWEEN ABOVE AND BELOW, BETWEEN PRINCE AND PEOPLE, INDIVIDUAL AND COMMUNITY, MAN AND WOMAN. AND THERE IS A PROFOUND TRUTH IN THE WORDS OF THAT POLISH PURIM RABBI WHO SAID: 'BECAUSE THEY COMMANDED THE SUN TO STAND STILL AND THE EARTH TO TURN, SINCE THEN MY HEAD HAS BEEN SPINNING!' THERE IS AN IMMEDIATE CONNECTION BETWEEN THE UNBOUND NATURE OF MODERN HUMANITY AND THE DISSOLUTION OF THE STARRY WORLD INTO AN INFINITE UNIVERSE WITH INFINITELY MANY WORLDS. LIKEWISE, THE DESPERATE EFFORTS OF TODAY'S EUROPEANS TO FIND BINDING ORDERS FOR THE LIVES OF PEOPLE AMONG EACH OTHER GO HAND IN HAND WITH THE ENDEAVORS OF CONTEMPORARY PHILOSOPHY AND ASTRONOMY TO REPLACE THE FORMLESS CHAOS OF INFINITY WITH SOME KIND OF FINITE, SHAPING COSMOS.

THE WORK OF COPERNICUS TOOK PLACE. IN A BROADER SENSE, IT WAS THE INTRODUCTION TO THE END TIMES, THE OPENING OF THE PATH TO THE IMAGE OF THE BEAST! (REV. 13:15)

DESCARTES, LEIBNIZ, SPINOZA, PASCAL - THE UNIVERSAL SCHOLARS OR POLYMATHS OF THE 17TH CENTURY FACED THE CHALLENGE OF GRAPPLING WITH THE UPHEAVAL OF THE COPERNICAN WORLDVIEW BOTH INTELLECTUALLY AND RELIGIOUSLY. THE LATTER, A DEVOUT AND PIOUS MATHEMATICIAN AND PHILOSOPHER, FINDS HIMSELF IN 'PENSÉES SUR LA RELIGION' (PUBLISHED IN 1670), AS HIS ENTIRE ERA IS CONFRONTED WITH THAT NEW DREADFUL 'SILENT' INFINITY, WHICH BECOMES VIRULENT (DANGEROUS, CONTAGIOUS) FROM 1600 ONWARDS AND DISSOLVES ALL SCIENTIFIC AND RELIGIOUS HORIZONS. THROWN INTO EXISTENCE, EXPOSED TO 'BOTH INFINITIES' (MICROPHYSICS AND COSMICS), THREATENED BY NOTHINGNESS, HUMANITY FADES INTO THE UNREAL (UNREALITY), DEVOID OF MEANING AND ESSENCE. THE TERRIFYING ABYSSES OF THE INFINITE REVEAL TOO LITTLE TO RECOGNIZE HIM, YET TOO MUCH TO DENY HIM. GOD STANDS HIDDEN BEFORE US. THE MIRACLE OF FAITH IN THE HEART TRANSFORMS THE ABYSS OF NOTHINGNESS INTO THE BRILLIANCE OF THE GLORY OF CHRIST, AND A NEW WORLD OF LOVE, GRACE, AND HOLINESS FILLS (IN PLACE OF THE SHATTERED PTOLEMAIC SPHERES) THE NIGHT OF ICY INFINITY. GOD NO LONGER DWELLS IN THE GOLDEN GLASS EMPYREAN (HEAVEN OF LIGHT) OF SCHOLASTICISM (MEDIEVAL PHILOSOPHY AND SCHOOL WISDOM). CHRIST IS THE NEW CENTER OF ALL BEING, AND BEING A CHRISTIAN MEANS THE RIGOROUS DETERMINATION TO SEE THE WORLD, GOD, AND HUMANITY, LIFE AND DEATH THROUGH THE MEDIUM OF JESUS CHRIST. THUS ARISES 'A NEW HEAVEN AND A NEW EARTH', THE SUBLIME NEW ORDER OF LOVE. PASCAL, WHO IS NIETZSCHE'S SECRET ADVERSARY, UNMASKS HUMAN EXISTENCE AS DEADLY CERTAIN DESPAIR, WHICH SAVES ITSELF IN 'DISTRACTION' AND YET SEES THROUGH ITS OWN MEANINGLESSNESS IN 'BOREDOM'. THE MIRACLE OF GRACE RENEWS HUMANITY; CHRIST, AS THE SAVING CENTER, OVERCOMES ALIENATION AND RESCUES HUMANITY FROM THE CENTRIFUGAL FORCES THAT HURL IT FROM ONE INSANE EXTREME TO ANOTHER.

SINCE THE SITUATION OF THE BAROQUE PERSON BEFORE INFINITY AND NOTHINGNESS HAS NOT FUNDAMENTALLY CHANGED TO THE PRESENT DAY, THE ENTIRE PRESENT CAN FIND ITSELF AGAIN IN PASCAL. THE ENTIRE LATE BAROQUE AND ITS CHRIST LYRIC INDEED ATTEMPTED TO BREAK THROUGH THE HORROR OF DEAD INFINITY!

LUTHER AND COPERNICUS THE SAYING GOES: WHERE GOD BUILDS A CHURCH, THE DEVIL BUILDS A CHAPEL NEXT TO IT. THIS CHAPEL IS NOT ALWAYS A TAVERN OR A CINEMA; IT CAN ALSO BE A NEW SCIENTIFIC THEORY. THE DEVIL, AS THE PRINCE OF THIS WORLD, HAS UNDOUBTEDLY PLACED ALONGSIDE THE POWERFUL BREAKTHROUGH OF FAITH IN THE REFORMATION OF MARTIN LUTHER, THE BREAKTHROUGH OF AN ASTRONOMICAL SCIENCE THAT STANDS IN STARK CONTRAST TO THE CLEAR STATEMENTS OF GOD'S WORD ABOUT THE UNIVERSE.

LUTHER AND MELANCHTHON, WITH THEIR KEEN SENSE FOR DEVIATIONS FROM THE WORD OF GOD, IMMEDIATELY RECOGNIZED THAT THIS NEWLY EMERGING COPERNICAN DOCTRINE OF THE EARTH REVOLVING AROUND THE SUN WAS A MAJOR ASSAULT ON THE REVELATION OF GOD'S WORD. FOR EXAMPLE, WE READ IN LUTHER'S TABLE TALK (WALCH, PAGE 2260): 'THERE WAS TALK OF A NEW ASTROLOGER WHO WANTED TO PROVE THAT THE EARTH WAS MOVING AND REVOLVING, NOT THE HEAVENS OR THE FIRMAMENT, THE SUN AND THE MOON, JUST AS IF SOMEONE WERE SITTING IN A WAGON OR A SHIP AND BEING MOVED, THINKING HE WAS SITTING STILL AND RESTING, WHILE THE GROUND AND THE TREES WERE MOVING. BUT IT IS NOW THIS WAY: WHOEVER WANTS TO BE WISE MUST MAKE SOMETHING OF HIS OWN; IT MUST BE THE VERY BEST, HOWEVER HE DOES IT! THE FOOL WANTS TO TURN THE WHOLE ART OF ASTRONOMY UPSIDE DOWN. BUT AS THE HOLY SCRIPTURE INDICATES, JOSHUA COMMANDED THE SUN TO STAND STILL AND NOT THE EARTH!'

OF COURSE, THE WISE OF THIS WORLD DID NOT MISS THE OPPORTUNITY TO TAKE A JAB AT THE PIOUS REFORMER AND TO DECLARE: 'LOOK HOW BACKWARD THIS LUTHER HAS BEEN!' THE LEARNED ECCLESIASTICAL DEFENDERS OF LUTHER DID NOT ENTERTAIN THE THOUGHT THAT LUTHER MIGHT HAVE BEEN COMPLETELY RIGHT, BECAUSE ALL OF NATURAL SCIENCE SINCE COPERNICUS HAS BEEN ON THE PATH OF FOLLY. THEIR REVERENCE FOR THE WISDOM OF THIS WORLD WAS SIMPLY TOO GREAT FOR THAT. AFTER ALL, THEY HAD ALL EATEN FROM THE TREE OF KNOWLEDGE AND ITS HONOR! RATHER, LUTHER WAS DEFENDED IN SUCH A WAY THAT IT WAS SAID HE WAS STILL A CHILD OF HIS TIME AND ITS INADEQUATE SCIENTIFIC UNDERSTANDING IN SUCH MATTERS. THEREFORE, ONE SHOULD NOT TAKE THIS REMARK AMISS.

THE SWEDISH LIBRARIAN WILHELM NORDLIND PUBLISHED AN ESSAY A FEW YEARS AGO IN THE 'YEARBOOK FOR THE ASTRONOMICAL SOCIETY TYCHO BRAHE,' STATING THAT THE FAMOUS TABLE TALK ORIGINATED FROM AURIFABER, WHO OFTEN COMPILED THESE CONVERSATIONS VERY UNRELIABLY AND RECORDED THEM AS SUCH. LAUTERBACH, ANOTHER REPORTER OF LUTHER'S SPEECHES, CORRECTLY POINTED OUT BASED ON HIS OWN NOTES THAT LUTHER FULLY ACKNOWLEDGED COPERNICUS'S STRUGGLE FOR TRUTH. LUTHER PREFERRED COPERNICUS'S SYSTEM FOR ITS GREATER CLARITY OVER THE PTOLEMAIC WORLDVIEW BUT THEN QUALIFIED THAT IT MUST BE SUPPORTED BY SCRIPTURE, HENCE HE ALIGNED HIMSELF WITH IT. THUS, LUTHER DID NOT REJECT COPERNICUS OUT OF BACKWARDNESS BUT OUT OF OBEDIENCE TO THE BIBLE. MOREOVER, LUTHER'S STANCE ALIGNS WITH THAT OF THE GREAT SWEDISH ASTRONOMER TYCHO BRAHE, WHO ALSO REJECTED COPERNICUS! REGARDING THESE ATTEMPTS TO SALVAGE LUTHER'S REPUTATION IN THE EYES OF SECULAR SCIENCE, WE MUST SAY TODAY: THEY ARE ENTIRELY UNNECESSARY. LUTHER WAS RIGHT, AS ARE ALL THOSE WHO CONSISTENTLY ADHERE TO THE WORD OF GOD AND ARE NOT SWAYED BY ANY SEEMINGLY CONVINCING RATIONAL ARGUMENTS OF THE MOMENT. IT WOULD HAVE BEEN BETTER IF LUTHER'S SUCCESSORS HAD ALSO MAINTAINED ABSOLUTE FIDELITY TO THE WORD OF GOD IN THIS AREA INSTEAD OF MAKING COMPROMISES WITH WORLDLY WISDOM. BECAUSE THEOLOGY HAS NOT REMAINED STEADFAST IN THE WORD OF GOD AS LUTHER DID, IT IS NOW IN SUCH A MISERABLE STATE THAT IT TRIES TO HOLD ONTO PART OF THE BIBLE WITH TRADITIONAL, HISTORICAL EVENTS AND TRUTHS, WHICH CAN NO LONGER SUCCEED BECAUSE IT HAS LONG SURRENDERED THE OTHER PART WITH ITS STATEMENTS ABOUT CREATION AND NATURE TO THE WOLVES OF SCIENCE, THAT IS, TO THE WORSHIP OF REASON. AND ALREADY A VOICE LOGICALLY ARISES, SAYING: IF YOU HAVE GIVEN UP THE BIBLICAL WORLDVIEW AND NO LONGER BELIEVE IT, THEN YOU MUST ALSO ABANDON THE OTHER 'MYTHICAL ACCOUNTS' OF THE BIBLE IF YOU WANT TO BE MODERN, ENLIGHTENED, SCIENTIFIC PEOPLE, LEST YOU BE LAUGHED AT AS FOOLS. ALTHOUGH THE CHURCH AND THEOLOGY IN GENERAL DO NOT WANT TO TAKE THIS FINAL STEP AWAY FROM THE WORD OF GOD, THEY RECOIL FROM THE ENORMITY OF THIS RISK. HOWEVER, THEY LACK THE CONVINCING POWER AND AUTHORITY TO MAINTAIN THEIR UNCLEAR INTERMEDIATE POSITION.

DEFEND. ONCE A STRONGHOLD OF THE FORTRESS HAS BEEN ABANDONED, THE REMAINING FORTRESS CAN ONLY BE HELD IF THE LOST STRONGHOLD IS REGAINED.

THE ATTACK BY BULTMANN. AFTER THE COPERNICAN INSPIRATION HAD BEEN SCIENTIFICALLY SUBSTANTIATED AND EXPANDED IN EVERY POSSIBLE WAY, TO THE POINT WHERE HARDLY ANY CHRISTIAN DARED TO DOUBT IT, THE PRINCE OF THIS WORLD, WHO REIGNS IN THE AIR, LAUNCHED ANOTHER SEVERE ATTACK ON THE WORD OF GOD AND THUS ON THE COMMUNITY OF BELIEVERS ON EARTH, CATCHING THEM COMPLETELY UNPREPARED. IT WAS ONCE AGAIN THE OLD SERPENT'S QUESTION, JUST CLOAKED IN HIGH THEOLOGY: DID GOD REALLY SAY? FOR THE ENEMY ALWAYS AIMS TO SEDUCE THE COMMUNITY OF GOD. HE ALREADY HAS THE WORLD OF UNBELIEVERS. THEY UNCRITICALLY FOLLOW EVERY SPIRITUAL MOVEMENT OF THE REALM OF DARKNESS UP TO OPEN APOSTASY, BECAUSE THE DEVIL RULES OVER THEM! IN HIS WIDELY KNOWN AND NOTORIOUS ESSAY ON 'NEW TESTAMENT AND MYTHOLOGY,' THE PROTESTANT THEOLOGY PROFESSOR BULTMANN FROM MARBURG WROTE A FEW YEARS AGO, AMONG OTHER THINGS: 'THE WORLDVIEW OF THE NEW TESTAMENT IS MYTHICAL. THE WORLD IS CONSIDERED TO BE DIVIDED INTO THREE LEVELS. IN THE MIDDLE IS THE EARTH, ABOVE IT IS HEAVEN, AND BELOW IT IS THE UNDERWORLD. HEAVEN IS THE DWELLING PLACE OF GOD AND THE HEAVENLY BEINGS, THE ANGELS; THE UNDERWORLD IS HELL, THE PLACE OF TORMENT. BUT THE EARTH IS NOT ONLY THE SITE OF EVERYDAY NATURAL EVENTS, OF CARE AND WORK THAT EXPECTS ORDER AND REGULATION, BUT IT IS ALSO THE STAGE FOR THE ACTION OF SUPERNATURAL FORCES OF GOD AND HIS ANGELS, OF SATAN AND HIS DEMONS. SUPERNATURAL POWERS INTERVENE IN NATURAL EVENTS AND IN THE THINKING, WILLING, AND ACTING OF HUMANS; MIRACLES ARE NOT UNCOMMON. HUMANS ARE NOT IN CONTROL OF THEMSELVES; DEMONS CAN POSSESS THEM, SATAN CAN INSTILL EVIL THOUGHTS, BUT GOD CAN ALSO DIRECT THEIR THINKING AND WILL, CAN ALLOW THEM TO SEE HEAVENLY VISIONS, CAN LET THEM HEAR HIS COMMANDING OR COMFORTING WORD, CAN GRANT THEM THE SUPERNATURAL POWER OF HIS SPIRIT... ALL OF THIS IS MYTHOLOGICAL DISCOURSE, AND THE INDIVIDUAL MOTIFS CAN EASILY BE TRACED BACK TO THE CONTEMPORARY MYTHOLOGY OF JEWISH APOCALYPTICISM AND THE GNOSTIC MYTH OF REDEMPTION. TO THE EXTENT THAT IT IS MYTHOLOGICAL DISCOURSE, IT IS FOR HUMANS.

TODAY, IT SEEMS UNBELIEVABLE TO HIM BECAUSE THE MYTHICAL WORLDVIEW HAS PASSED. THE CURRENT CHRISTIAN PROCLAMATION THUS FACES THE QUESTION OF WHETHER IT CAN DEMAND FAITH FROM PEOPLE WHILE EXPECTING THEM TO ACKNOWLEDGE A BYGONE MYTHICAL WORLDVIEW. IF THIS IS IMPOSSIBLE, THEN THE QUESTION ARISES WHETHER THE MESSAGE OF THE NEW TESTAMENT HOLDS A TRUTH THAT IS INDEPENDENT OF THE MYTHICAL WORLDVIEW; AND IT WOULD THEN BE THE TASK OF THEOLOGY TO DEMYTHOLOGIZE THE CHRISTIAN PROCLAMATION. CAN THE CHRISTIAN MESSAGE TODAY EXPECT PEOPLE TO RECOGNIZE THE MYTHICAL WORLDVIEW AS TRUE? THIS IS BOTH SENSELESS AND IMPOSSIBLE. SENSELESS BECAUSE THE MYTHICAL WORLDVIEW IS NOT SPECIFICALLY CHRISTIAN; IT IS SIMPLY THE WORLDVIEW OF A PAST ERA THAT HAS NOT YET BEEN SHAPED BY SCIENTIFIC THOUGHT. IMPOSSIBLE BECAUSE ONE CANNOT SIMPLY ADOPT A WORLDVIEW BY DECISION; IT IS ALREADY GIVEN TO PEOPLE IN THEIR HISTORICAL SITUATION. OF COURSE, IT IS NOT UNCHANGEABLE, AND INDIVIDUALS CAN WORK ON ITS TRANSFORMATION. HOWEVER, THEY CAN ONLY DO SO BY RECOGNIZING THE IMPOSSIBILITY OF THE INHERITED WORLDVIEW BASED ON CERTAIN FACTS THAT PRESENT THEMSELVES AS REAL, AND MODIFYING OR DEVISING A NEW WORLDVIEW BASED ON THOSE FACTS. THE WORLDVIEW CAN CHANGE, FOR EXAMPLE, DUE TO THE COPERNICAN DISCOVERY OR THE ATOMIC THEORY; OR AS ROMANTICISM DISCOVERS THAT THE HUMAN SUBJECT IS MORE COMPLEX AND RICHER THAN CAN BE UNDERSTOOD THROUGH THE ENLIGHTENMENT AND IDEALISM; OR AS THE SIGNIFICANCE OF HISTORY AND ETHNICITY COMES TO NEW AWARENESS. IT IS ENTIRELY POSSIBLE THAT WITHIN A PAST MYTHICAL WORLDVIEW, TRUTHS MAY BE REDISCOVERED THAT WERE LOST IN AN AGE OF ENLIGHTENMENT, AND THEOLOGY HAS EVERY REASON TO POSE THIS QUESTION REGARDING THE WORLDVIEW OF THE NEW TESTAMENT AS WELL. HOWEVER, IT IS IMPOSSIBLE TO SIMPLY REINSTATE A PAST WORLDVIEW BY DECISION, AND ESPECIALLY IMPOSSIBLE TO REINSTATE THE MYTHICAL WORLDVIEW AFTER OUR THINKING HAS BEEN IRREVOCABLY SHAPED BY SCIENCE. A BLIND ACCEPTANCE OF THE NEW TESTAMENT MYTHOLOGY WOULD BE ARBITRARY; AND RAISING SUCH A DEMAND AS A REQUIREMENT OF FAITH WOULD MEAN DEGRADING FAITH TO MERE WORKS, AS WILHELM HERRMANN HAS MADE CLEAR ONCE AND FOR ALL.

THE FULFILLMENT OF THE DEMAND WOULD BE A FORCED SACRIFICE OF THE INTELLECT, AND ANYONE WHO WOULD DO IT WOULD BE STRANGELY DIVIDED AND INSINCERE. FOR THEY WOULD AFFIRM A WORLDVIEW FOR THEIR FAITH AND RELIGION THAT THEY OTHERWISE DENY IN THEIR LIFE. WHY ELSE WOULD THEY DENY IT IN LIFE, PERHAPS OUT OF FEAR OF SCHOLARS? WITH MODERN THINKING, AS IT HAS COME DOWN TO US THROUGH OUR HISTORY, THE CRITIQUE OF THE NEW TESTAMENT WORLDVIEW IS GIVEN. EXPERIENCE AND MASTERY OF THE WORLD HAVE DEVELOPED IN SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY TO SUCH AN EXTENT THAT NO ONE CAN SERIOUSLY HOLD ON TO THE NEW TESTAMENT WORLDVIEW. WHAT SENSE DOES IT MAKE TODAY TO CONFESS: 'DESCENDED INTO HELL' OR 'ASCENDED INTO HEAVEN,' WHEN THE CONFESSOR DOES NOT SHARE THE MYTHICAL WORLDVIEW UNDERLYING THESE FORMULATIONS? SUCH STATEMENTS CAN ONLY BE MADE HONESTLY IF IT IS POSSIBLE TO STRIP THEIR TRUTH FROM THE MYTHOLOGICAL CONCEPTION IN WHICH THEY ARE FRAMED - IF SUCH A TRUTH EXISTS. FOR THAT IS PRECISELY THE THEOLOGICAL QUESTION. NO ADULT IMAGINES GOD AS A BEING EXISTING UP IN HEAVEN; INDEED, THE 'HEAVEN' IN THE OLD SENSE NO LONGER EXISTS FOR US. AND NEITHER DOES THE HEIGHT, THE MYTHICAL UNDERWORLD BENEATH THE GROUND ON WHICH WE STAND. THE STORIES OF THE ASCENSION TO HEAVEN AND DESCENT INTO HELL ARE THUS FINISHED; THE EXPECTATION OF THE 'SON OF MAN' COMING WITH THE CLOUDS OF HEAVEN AND THE BELIEVERS BEING CAUGHT UP INTO THE AIR TO MEET HIM IS ALSO FINISHED.

THE SUPERNATURAL RESPONSE TO THIS TEACHING OF THE THEOLOGY PROFESSOR BULTMANN HAS RIGHTLY CAUSED QUITE A STIR IN THE STILL SOMEWHAT BIBLICALLY FAITHFUL CHRISTIAN COMMUNITY IN GERMANY. WHERE HAVE WE ENDED UP IF TEACHERS OF FUTURE PASTORS EXPLAIN THE NEW TESTAMENT AS A COLLECTION OF FAIRY TALES, SINCE THE LEARNED-SOUNDING FOREIGN WORD 'MYTHOS' TRANSLATES TO SOMETHING LIKE 'TALE' OR 'FAIRY TALE' IN GERMAN? PROFESSOR BULTMANN IS PURSUING THE AIM OF BRINGING THE CHRISTIAN FAITH TO MODERN PEOPLE WITHOUT ITS INHERITED FORMS, SPATIAL CONCEPTS, AND TIES TO THE EVENTS IN PALESTINE AND THE INVISIBLE WORLD OF TWO THOUSAND YEARS AGO.

THE ESSENCE OF THE STORIES MATTERS, THEIR FORM IS MYTH, MEANING A TRANSIENT WRAPPING. HOWEVER, THE COMMUNITY SEES THIS ATTACK AS A DANGEROUS APPROACH, AS SATAN ALWAYS WANTS TO DENY THE INCARNATION OF THE WORD, WHICH IS DEADLY TO HIM. JESUS CHRIST DID NOT ONLY DIE IN A METAPHORICAL SENSE, BUT TRULY BLED TO DEATH ON THE CROSS IN GREAT PAIN; HE TRULY BECAME HUMAN, NOT JUST SYMBOLICALLY, AND TRULY ROSE AGAIN AND ASCENDED TO HEAVEN. THE LORD JESUS HIMSELF HAD ALREADY DEALT WITH LIBERAL THEOLOGY PROFESSORS IN HIS TIME, WHO WERE CALLED SADDUCEES AND DID NOT BELIEVE IN SPIRITS, ANGELS, OR RESURRECTION. TO THEM, THE LORD SAID: 'YOU ARE MISTAKEN, FOR YOU DO NOT KNOW THE SCRIPTURES NOR THE POWER OF GOD.' THEREFORE, THE LIBERAL DENIAL OF SALVATION FACTS AND TRUTHS IS A RESULT OF NOT KNOWING THE BIBLE AND HAVING NO UNDERSTANDING OF THE POWER OF GOD, THAT IS, THE HOLY SPIRIT. THIS REMAINS TRUE TO THIS DAY. ERROR AND IGNORANCE REGARDING GOD'S REVELATION FORM THE BASIS OF HUMAN SCIENCE AND ITS SCHOLARSHIP. HOWEVER, WE MUST GRANT PROFESSOR BULTMANN CONSISTENCY. HE TELLS THE MANY HALF- AND THREE-QUARTERS BELIEVERS OF OUR TIME: 'YOU HAVE LONG CEASED TO BELIEVE IN THE ENTIRE BIBLE LITERALLY; INSTEAD, YOU ACCEPT THE SCIENTIFIC WORLDVIEW AS CORRECT, PLACING THE GLOBE ON YOUR TABLES, WHILE THE BIBLE TEACHES A VERY DIFFERENT WORLDVIEW WITH THREE TIERS. IF YOU SILENTLY REJECT THIS BIBLICAL WORLDVIEW AND ACCEPT THE SCIENTIFIC ONE, THEN WE CAN AND MUST CONSISTENTLY PROCEED TO ELIMINATE ALL THE TIME-BOUND NARRATIVES AND STORIES OF THE BIBLE THAT ARE EMBEDDED IN THIS THREE-TIERED CONCEPTION, SO THAT THE IMPERISHABLE, USABLE CORE AND MEANING OF THE MESSAGE REMAINS. ONCE YOU START DECLARING PARTS OF THE BIBLE AS NON-BINDING AND BELIEVE MORE IN THE WORLD, WHICH IS UNDER THE DOMINION OF THE PRINCE OF THIS WORLD, WHY SHOULD YOU REMAIN COMMITTED TO THE BIBLICAL WORLDVIEW AND NOT BEGIN A MAJOR CLEANUP IN THIS OLD BIBLE BOOK THAT PRESENTS SO MANY ANNOYANCES TO MODERN UNDERSTANDING? PROFESSOR BULTMANN IS RIGHT IN THIS REGARD. FOR THOSE WHO NO LONGER BELIEVE THE BIBLE'S WORLDVIEW, THE ENTIRE STRUCTURE OF SALVATION FACTS IS ALSO DONE FOR, WHETHER THEY RECOGNIZE AND ADMIT IT OR NOT. THE ONLY EFFECTIVE, SPIRITUAL DEFENSE AGAINST THE DEMYTHOLOGIZATION OF THE NEW TESTAMENT - THAT IS, THE EXPLANATION OF...

THE NEW TESTAMENT AS A COLLECTION OF FAIRY TALES SUGGESTS THAT ONE SHOULD RETURN TO AN UNRESTRICTED CHILDLIKE FAITH IN THE ENTIRE HOLY SCRIPTURE AS GOD'S REVEALED WORD, INCLUDING THE ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF THE WORLDVIEW THAT THE BIBLE TEACHES OR RATHER ASSUMES AS SELF-EVIDENT. BIBLE-BELIEVING CHRISTIANS SHOULD THEREFORE EMPHATICALLY EMPHASIZE TODAY: WE ALSO BELIEVE IN THE THREE-TIERED, SPATIALLY LIMITED UNIVERSE OF THE BIBLE. FEEL FREE TO LAUGH AT US AND CALL US FOOLS! WE FEEL ALL THE MORE SECURE BECAUSE OF IT, AND YOU CANNOT TAKE AWAY ANYTHING FROM US REGARDING THE WORD OF GOD, AS WE WILL NOT GIVE UP EVEN THE SMALLEST PART OF IT! ALTHOUGH IT MUST BE ACKNOWLEDGED THAT THE CIRCLES OF PROTESTANT THEOLOGY PROFESSORS POINTED OUT THAT BULTMANN OPERATES FROM AN OUTDATED, OBSOLETE WORLDVIEW. THIS IS NO LONGER SCIENTIFICALLY VALID TODAY, AS THE LATEST RESEARCH IN ATOMIC PHYSICS HAS ALSO SHAKEN THE COPERNICAN WORLDVIEW, SINCE EINSTEIN RAISED THE SUSPICION THAT THE UNIVERSE COULD BE FINITE, NOT INFINITE. THEOLOGY PROFESSOR WALTER KÜNNETH EXPLAINED THAT THE WORLDVIEW OF NATURAL SCIENCE IS UNDERGOING A FUNDAMENTAL CHANGE DUE TO THE LATEST FINDINGS IN ASTROPHYSICS AND ATOMIC PHYSICS. BULTMANN STILL BELIEVES HE MUST ADVOCATE THE OUTDATED WORLDVIEW OF MECHANISTIC-MATERIALISTIC NATURAL SCIENCE; HE REPEATEDLY REFERS TO THE CONCEPT OF A CALCULABLE CAUSAL NEXUS AND DETERMINISM, WHICH MAKES EVERY MIRACLE APPEAR CONTRARY TO NATURAL LAW. HOWEVER, THIS DETERMINISTIC THINKING (I.E., BELIEF IN THE UNWAVERING REGULARITY OF CAUSE AND EFFECT IN EVERYTHING!) IS BEGINNING TO DISSOLVE IN TODAY'S WORLDVIEW. SERIOUS RESEARCHERS WILL ALWAYS EXPECT THE EMERGENCE OF NEW ENERGIES IN THE COSMOS AND THEREFORE THE POSSIBILITY OF CHANGING PREVIOUS EXPERIENCES AND LIMITED NATURAL KNOWLEDGE. THIS MEANS, EVEN IF IT IS NOT YET THE BEGINNING OF FAITH, THERE IS AN OPENNESS TO THE POSSIBILITY OF FAITH STATEMENTS. BULTMANN'S THESIS IS HOPELESSLY OUTDATED; NATURAL SCIENCE TODAY PROVIDES NO ARGUMENTS AGAINST THE BELIEF IN THE MIRACLES OF BIBLICAL TESTIMONY. KÜNNETH FURTHER ARGUES THAT BULTMANN OVERLOOKS THAT MODERN MAN IS TURNING BACK TO THE MYTHICAL WORLDVIEW. THE EMERGENCE OF A NEW LONGING FOR THE IRRATIONAL (SUPER-RATIONAL), THE TRANSCENDENT (OTHERWORLDLY), IS CHARACTERISTIC OF MODERN HUMANITY. THEREFORE, BULTMANN...

THE MODERN PERSON IS BYPASSED BY THE TRUE STATE OF AFFAIRS. HE DOES NOT DENY THE REALITY OF INEXPLICABLE OCCURRENCES; RATHER, HE QUESTIONS, IN PARALLEL TO THE EARLY CHRISTIAN SITUATION, THE CAUSE OF SUCH EVENTS. HE ASKS WHETHER INNER-WORLDLY, COSMIC ENERGIES ARE AT WORK IN THESE HAPPENINGS, OR IF DEMONS ARE INVOLVED, OR IF GOD'S INTERVENTION IS REVEALED IN THEM. FROM THIS PERSPECTIVE OF MODERNITY, THE REMEDIES OFFERED BY BULTMANN APPEAR OUTDATED, AS IF THEY CAN NO LONGER PROVIDE ANY HELP. THESE IMPORTANT STATEMENTS BY PROFESSOR KÜNNETH ALIGN SOMEWHAT WITH THE DIRECTION OF OUR ENTIRE BOOK, BUT IN OUR OPINION, THEY DO NOT GO FAR ENOUGH. MIRACLES, DEMONS, SPIRITS, AND ANGELS EXIST, SAYS THE BIBLE-BELIEVING THEOLOGIAN, AND TODAY'S PERSON DOES NOT DENY THEM; ON THE CONTRARY, HE BEGINS TO INQUIRE ABOUT THEM AGAIN, FOR TWO WORLD WARS, WITH ALL THEIR IMPLICATIONS, HAVE SHAKEN HIS BELIEF IN THE SELF-REDEMPTIVE POWER OF NATURAL SCIENCE AND ITS MOST BELOVED YET WICKED OFFSPRING, TECHNOLOGY. HOWEVER, WE ARE STILL WAITING FOR THEOLOGIANS WHO WILL RESPOND: NOT ONLY ARE THERE MIRACLES, ANGELS, SPIRITS, AND DEMONS, AS THE BIBLE OFTEN MENTIONS, BUT THERE ARE ALSO THREE SPATIAL REALMS IN THE UNIVERSE: HEAVEN, EARTH, AND BENEATH THE EARTH. WE ARE CONVINCED THAT ANY PROFESSOR WHO WOULD DARE TO PUBLISH THIS TODAY WOULD HAVE TO COMPLETELY FORFEIT HIS SCIENTIFIC REPUTATION AMIDST THE DERISIVE LAUGHTER OF THE ENTIRE FACULTY. AS LONG AS NO PROFESSOR SAYS IT, WE, AS NAIVE LAYPEOPLE, WILL SAY IT; FOR US, IT IS NOT A SPECIAL ACHIEVEMENT, AS WE HAVE NO REPUTATION IN THE SCHOLARLY WORLD TO UPHOLD. FORTUNATELY, WE HAVE NO WAY OF TAKING HONOR FROM OTHERS AND THUS LOSING OUR CAPACITY FOR FAITH (JOHN 5:44). THE MAIN THING IS THAT THE TESTIMONY RESOUNDS AND GROWS, TO THE GLORY OF GOD THE LORD AND AS A WITNESS TO ALL WHO HEAR IT. SPIRITUALLY ASSESSED, WE RECOGNIZE IN COPERNICUS UP TO BULTMANN DELIBERATE MAJOR ATTACKS ON GOD'S WORD BY THE PRINCE OF THIS WORLD, WHO RULES IN THE AIR AND WHO TODAY HAS HIS WORK IN THE CHILDREN OF DISBELIEF. WE ALSO KNOW THAT THESE ATTACKS DID NOT BEGIN WITH COPERNICUS IN HISTORY. THE FIRST ATTACK, NOT YET PRESENTED IN SCIENTIFIC GARB BUT IN THE GUISE OF A SERPENT, WAS: 'DID GOD REALLY SAY, YOU MUST NOT EAT FROM ANY TREE IN THE GARDEN?' (GENESIS 3:1) - DID GOD REALLY SAY THAT THE EARTH STANDS STILL, THAT THE SUN MOVES FROM ONE END OF THE HEAVENS TO THE OTHER, THAT THE STARS FALL FROM THE SKY?

THE EARTH FALLS, THE UNIVERSE CONSISTS OF: HEAVEN, EARTH, AND BENEATH THE EARTH? - WE SEE THAT THE DISGUISE OF THE ATTACKER CHANGES, BUT HIS QUESTION REMAINS THE SAME: DID GOD REALLY SAY? SHOULD WHAT YOU READ, HEAR, AND BELIEVE BE TRUE? LOOK AT THE FRUIT, HOW BEAUTIFUL IT IS AND HOW WISE IT MAKES YOU. LOOK THROUGH THE TELESCOPE, THERE YOU WILL RECOGNIZE WHAT GOD HAS WITHHELD FROM YOU, AND YOU WILL BE LIKE GOD! YOU WILL CERTAINLY NOT DIE! EVE SHOULD NOT HAVE ENGAGED IN A DISCUSSION WITH THE SERPENT; SHE SHOULD HAVE SIMPLY HELD ON TO THE WORD OF GOD, JUST AS ADAM, THAT FIRST HENPECKED HUSBAND, SHOULD HAVE OBEYED GOD'S WORD INSTEAD OF THE VOICE OF HIS WIFE. THUS, THE HISTORY OF HUMANITY, INCLUDING CHURCH HISTORY, IS ESSENTIALLY A SERIES OF MORE OR LESS SUCCESSFUL ATTACKS BY THE ENEMY ON GOD'S WORD, FOLLOWED BY GOD'S JUDGMENT ON THOSE WHO HAVE NOT KEPT HIS WORD. THIS JUDGMENT ALWAYS RESULTS IN DEATH. 'ON THE DAY YOU EAT OF IT, YOU WILL SURELY DIE!' THE DEATH THAT HUMANITY FACES TODAY IS THE FORBIDDEN FRUIT OF TECHNOLOGY AND ITS ENTIRE CULTURE. THE EXPULSION FROM THE PARADISE OF NATURE AND THUS FROM CLOSENESS TO GOD HAS ALREADY TAKEN PLACE; NOW HUMANITY WORKS ON THE CURSED GROUND OF SELF-REDEMPTION EFFORTS IN TECHNOLOGY, POISONING AND DESTROYING ITSELF IN THE PROCESS. IN HIS BOOK 'KERYGMA AND MYTHOS,' H. W. BARTSCH WRITES: 'THE QUESTION OF A CORRECT INTERPRETATION OF THE 'MYTHOLOGICAL' PARTS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT WAS RAISED NOT ONLY IN MODERN TIMES. IT AROSE IMMEDIATELY WHEN THE WORLDVIEW THAT SHAPED THE NEW TESTAMENT ERA BEGAN TO CHANGE. THE LAST ANSWER ATTEMPTED WAS THAT OF SO-CALLED LIBERAL THEOLOGY, UNLESS ONE WANTS TO RECOGNIZE THE SUPERNATURAL ANSWER, WHICH CALLED FOR AN ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF THIS WORLDVIEW, AS AN ANSWER.' ONE MIGHT ASK, WHO BEGAN TO CHANGE THE WORLDVIEW THAT SHAPED THE NEW TESTAMENT ERA? WHAT WAS THE DELIBERATE WILL BEHIND IT THEN AND STILL IS? FOR US BIBLE-BELIEVING CHRISTIANS, IT IS CALLED SATAN. WE CALL ON FAITHFUL CHRISTIANS TO CLEARLY PROVIDE THIS SUPERNATURAL ANSWER EVERYWHERE. TO RECOGNIZE AND TESTIFY TO THE BIBLICAL WORLDVIEW! THAT IS THE WAY BACK TO GOD. AND AT THE SAME TIME, THE STRONGEST BLOW AGAINST SATAN AND HIS WORK. 'FOR WE DO NOT WRESTLE AGAINST FLESH AND BLOOD, BUT AGAINST PRINCIPALITIES, AGAINST POWERS, AGAINST THE RULERS OF THE DARKNESS OF THIS AGE, AGAINST SPIRITUAL HOSTS OF WICKEDNESS IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES.'

"IN HEAVENLY PLACES!" (EPH. 6:12). "SO THAT WE ARE NOT OUTSMARTED BY SATAN, FOR HIS THOUGHTS ARE NOT UNKNOWN TO US" (2 COR. 2:11). THIS RETURN TO THE BIBLICAL WORLDVIEW IS NOW MADE SO EASY THAT IT NO LONGER REQUIRES A SPECIAL ACT OF FAITH. THE SCIENTIFIC WORLDVIEW OF INFINITE SPACE, INITIATED AND ESTABLISHED BY COPERNICUS, WITH ITS COUNTLESS ORBITING SUNS AND STARS, HAS ALREADY BEEN SIGNIFICANTLY SHAKEN FROM THE PERSPECTIVE OF PHYSICS AND IS INCREASINGLY QUESTIONED. AS BELIEVING CHRISTIANS, WE SHOULD NOT ACCEPT THE TRUE WORLDVIEW, THE UNDERSTANDING OF THE STRUCTURE AND SHAPE OF THE UNIVERSE, FROM THE UNBELIEVING WORLD AND ITS EVER-CORRECTED SCIENCE, BUT RATHER FROM THE WORD OF GOD, WHICH WE ONCE ABANDONED TO PURSUE OTHER GODS (INCLUDING THE BAAL OF SCIENCE AND WORLDLY WISDOM), AS THE PROPHETS IN THE OLD TESTAMENT OFTEN APTLY CHARACTERIZE THE DEPARTURE FROM GOD'S WORD. IT IS HIGH TIME FOR THIS RETURN OF THE COMMUNITY OF JESUS CHRIST TO THE NATURAL AND CREATION ACCOUNTS OF THE BIBLE, FOR THE TIME IS NEAR WHEN THE HEAVENS WILL BE ROLLED UP LIKE A SCROLL (REV. 6:14). THEN ALL PEOPLE WILL SEE THE FINITE UNIVERSE AND WILL BE SO TERRIFIED BEFORE THE VISIBLE THRONE OF GOD IN ITS MIDST THAT THEY WILL SAY TO THE MOUNTAINS AND TO THE ROCKS: "FALL ON US AND HIDE US FROM THE FACE OF HIM WHO SITS ON THE THRONE, AND FROM THE WRATH OF THE LAMB..." (REV. 16:16).

"I DELIGHT IN YOUR DECREES; I WILL NOT FORGET YOUR WORD."



"REMEMBER YOUR SERVANT OF THAT WORD, ON WHICH YOU HAVE ALLOWED ME TO PLACE MY HOPE! THIS IS MY COMFORT IN MY AFFLICTION, THAT YOUR WORD GIVES ME LIFE. THOUGH THE ARROGANT MOCK ME, I DO NOT TURN AWAY FROM YOUR TEACHINGS. I THINK OF YOUR ANCIENT INSTRUCTIONS AND FIND COMFORT, LORD."

I AM FILLED WITH RIGHTEOUS ANGER BECAUSE OF THE WICKED WHO ABANDON YOUR TEACHINGS. YOUR LAWS HAVE BECOME SONGS OF PRAISE FOR ME IN THE HOUSE WHERE I DWELL AS A STRANGER. LORD, I THINK OF YOUR NAME AT NIGHT, AND I MEDITATE ON YOUR TEACHINGS EVEN IN THE MIDNIGHT HOUR. THIS HAS BECOME MY GUIDING PRINCIPLE BECAUSE I CARE FOR YOUR COMMANDMENTS.

PSALM 119, 16. 49-56 (CATHOLIC TRANSLATION RIESSLER-STORR)

GOD'S WORD ON CREATION

SO FAR, IT HAS BEEN SHOWN WHAT PEOPLE THINK ABOUT THE UNIVERSE AND CREATION, AND HOW THEY ULTIMATELY EXPLOIT THEIR FINDINGS TO LAUNCH A MAJOR ATTACK ON GOD'S WORD, WHICH GIVES US VERY CLEAR INSIGHTS ABOUT CREATION THROUGH REVELATION. THOSE WHO CANNOT ACCEPT THIS REVELATION AS TRUE MUST SEEK AND RESEARCH FOR THEMSELVES AND THEN HOLD AS TRUTH WHAT THEY HAVE FOUND WITH THEIR FIVE SENSES AND THEIR INTELLECT. HOWEVER, IF WHAT THEY HAVE FOUND OR WHAT OTHERS TELL THEM DIRECTLY CONTRADICTS THE TRUTH REVEALED IN THE WORD OF GOD IN THE BIBLE OR IS NOT CONFIRMED BY IT IN ANY WAY, THEN WE BELIEVERS REMAIN STEADFAST IN THE WORD OF GOD. WITH THIS, WE DECLARE: WE DO NOT TRUST SCIENCE, EVEN IF WE CANNOT PROVE ITS SOURCES OF ERROR. BUT THE WORST OFF ARE THOSE WHO TAKE A MIDDLE GROUND, CONTINUALLY TRYING TO COMPROMISE BETWEEN SCIENCE AND DIVINE REVELATION, THUS ATTEMPTING TO CREATE A MIXTURE OF LIGHT AND DARKNESS. IT IS EITHER COLD OR HOT; NOTHING IS MORE REPUGNANT THAN LUKEWARMNESS, STRADDLING BOTH SIDES! THIS IS WHAT HAPPENS WHEN ONE CLAIMS: 'THE CHRISTIAN FAITH IS NOT BOUND TO THE WORLDVIEW OF PAST CENTURIES; IT CAN COEXIST WITH THE CHANGED WORLDVIEW OF MODERN NATURAL SCIENCE.' WE FIRMLY DENY THIS! WE BELIEVERS PERCEIVE IT AS A DEVALUATION AND HOLLOWING OUT OF GOD'S WORD THROUGH THE CUNNING TRICK OF DEMYTHOLOGIZATION, WHICH HAS BEEN USED FOR MILLENNIA WITH THE ANCIENT SERPENT'S QUESTION: 'DID GOD REALLY SAY?' (GENESIS 3:1). THIS TRICK IS STILL BEING EMPLOYED TODAY.

PEOPLE TAKE FROM THE TRADITION OF GOD'S WORD WHAT PARTICULARLY RESONATES WITH THEIR FEELINGS AND UNDERSTANDING, WHAT THEY CAN STILL ACCEPT AND AFFIRM WITHOUT LOSING THEIR STATUS AS EDUCATED INDIVIDUALS, AND WHAT PERHAPS EVEN SHEDS SOME LIGHT AND HELPS THEM INTERNALLY. HOWEVER, THEY THEN DISMISS EVERYTHING ELSE AS OUTDATED, BECAUSE IT WAS THOUGHT AND WRITTEN IN THE CONCEPTUAL WORLD OF A BYGONE ERA. IN DOING SO, THEY HONOR THE SCIENTIFIC PROGRESS OF HUMANITY AT THE EXPENSE OF GOD'S WORD, DARING NOT TO DOUBT OR CHALLENGE IT. THIS METHOD OF 'CLEARING OUT' HAS BEEN PUSHED TO THE EXTREME BY PROFESSOR BULTMANN, BUT THE METHOD ITSELF IS QUITE OLD. WE, WHO BELIEVE IN THE WORD, DECLARE OURSELVES THE FIERCEST OPPONENTS OF THIS METHOD, EVEN IN ITS SUBTLE APPLICATIONS, AND THUS SIMULTANEOUSLY THE FIERCEST OPPONENTS OF HUMAN SCIENCE AND ITS SO-CALLED PROGRESS, AS FAR AS IT STANDS AGAINST GOD'S WORD. WE FIRMLY HOLD TO THE LITERAL WORDING OF BIBLICAL TESTIMONIES, ESPECIALLY IN THOSE PARTS THAT SEEM HOPELESSLY OUTDATED IN LIGHT OF TODAY'S SCIENTIFIC UNDERSTANDING. WE BELIEVE THAT THE HOLY SPIRIT DID NOT BREATHE ANYTHING FALSE, INCORRECT, OR 'TIME-BOUND' INTO THE BIBLE. FOR IT WOULD BE OUTRIGHT LIES IF THE BIBLE STATES THAT THE STARS WILL FALL FROM HEAVEN TO EARTH, THAT THE SUN MOVES, AND THAT THE EARTH STANDS STILL AND DOES NOT SHAKE. FURTHERMORE, THE HOLY SPIRIT WOULD HAVE FORGOTTEN TO INSPIRE THE INSTRUCTION IN THE BIBLE THAT THE NATURAL, CREATION, AND UNIVERSE CONCEPTS OF SCRIPTURE ARE INTERCHANGEABLE, SO THAT BELIEVERS ARE NOT MOCKED AT THE END OF DAYS FOR STILL BELIEVING IN THE BIBLE. MANY PREACHERS, HOWEVER, MAKE THIS INTERCHANGE ON THEIR OWN WITHOUT NEEDING ANY HIGHER PERMISSION. OF COURSE, ONE CAN ALSO BE FAITHFUL AND BE SAVED WITH ONLY A FRACTION OF GOD'S WORDS KNOWN AND ACCEPTED. 'BELIEVE IN THE LORD JESUS, AND YOU WILL BE SAVED, YOU AND YOUR HOUSEHOLD,' MEANING SAVED. AT THE BEGINNING OF OUR FAITH LIFE, WE STILL CONSIDER MANY THINGS IN THE WORLD TO BE RIGHT AND GOOD, WHICH ARE ACTUALLY WRONG AND SATANIC, AND YET WE ALREADY REJOICE IN THE FORGIVENESS OF SINS AND THE HOPE OF ETERNAL LIFE. THUS, WE CAN ALSO BELIEVE THAT THE EARTH IS A SPHERE SWIRLING THROUGH EMPTY, COLD, INFINITE SPACE, AND NOT NOTICE THE CONTRADICTION TO GOD'S WORD OR CONSIDER IT INSIGNIFICANT. A CHILD DOES NOT KNOW MANY THINGS THAT AN ADULT KNOWS, YET LIVES AND ENJOYS LIFE. THE MATTER ONLY BECOMES CONCERNING WHEN A SPIRITUALLY MATURE PERSON, ESPECIALLY A PREACHER...

THE INTERPRETATION OF GOD'S WORD REVEALS THE TENSION BETWEEN BIBLICAL STATEMENTS AND HUMAN SCHOLARLY CLAIMS. IF ONE FINDS COMFORT IN THE IDEA, AS TAUGHT IN ACADEMIES AND SEMINARIES, THAT THE BIBLE WAS WRITTEN IN THE CONCEPTUAL FRAMEWORK OF ITS TIME AND THAT THE ESSENCE MATTERS MORE THAN THE 'SUPERFICIAL DETAILS,' ONE HAS PRACTICALLY OPTED FOR DEMYTHOLOGIZATION. IT IS EVIDENT THAT BELIEVERS WHO SETTLE FOR THIS INADEQUATE EXPLANATION SHOW NO REAL INNER GROWTH. THEY REMAIN SPIRITUALLY STAGNANT WHILE BECOMING INCREASINGLY LEARNED. AFTER ALL, HUMANS NEED A SUBSTITUTE; THEY EITHER GROW IN GRACE AND KNOWLEDGE OR IN INTELLECT. THE KEY TO UNDERSTANDING IS LOST WHEN ONE ABANDONS THE GUIDANCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IN ALL TRUTH AND ENTRUSTS ONESELF TO THE DIRECTION OF SCHOLARS. THE FALSE PATH OF INTELLECT IS ALREADY RECOGNIZABLE BY ITS PLEASANTNESS AND LACK OF CONFLICT WITH THE WORLD AND ITS WISDOM, HENCE THERE IS NO PERSECUTION OR MOCKERY! THE PATH UNDER THE DISCIPLINE AND GUIDANCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IS ALWAYS MARKED BY AN INCREASING CONTRAST TO PEERS, THE WORLD, AND ITS SCIENCE, LEADING TO GREATER TENSIONS WITH EVERYTHING THE MAJORITY BELIEVES AND CONSIDERS RIGHT ACROSS ALL FIELDS.

THE THEOLOGY OF MARTIANS. THE EXTENT TO WHICH SCHOLARS ARE CAPTIVATED BY THE IDEA OF AN INFINITE UNIVERSE WAS HIGHLIGHTED BY A SURVEY OF VARIOUS PROTESTANT AND CATHOLIC THEOLOGY PROFESSORS REGARDING WHETHER 'THERE COULD BE HUMANS ON OTHER STARS' AND WHAT THAT WOULD MEAN FOR THEIR SIN AND SALVATION. THE TWO QUESTIONS WERE: 'DOES CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE EVEN RECONCILE WITH THE ASSUMPTION THAT THERE ARE EXTRATERRESTRIAL, HUMANOID, RATIONAL BEINGS, AND WHAT THEOLOGICAL CONSIDERATIONS ARISE FROM AFFIRMING THE EXISTENCE OF SUCH BEINGS?' THE RESPONSES FROM THE LEARNED GENTLEMEN WERE WIDELY PUBLISHED IN MANY NEWSPAPERS AND WERE QUITE ENLIGHTENING. ABOVE ALL, THE VERY PHRASING OF THE QUESTIONS INDICATED THAT THE SUPPOSED EMERGENCE OF 'MARTIANS' IN 'FLYING SAUCERS' IMMEDIATELY PROMPTED THOUGHTFUL INDIVIDUALS TO WONDER: HOW WOULD SUCH A PHENOMENON AFFECT THE CHRISTIAN RELIGION, WHICH SPEAKS ONLY OF HEAVEN AND EARTH AND THE SALVATION OF HUMANITY ON EARTH? THE LAYPEOPLE HAVE DRAWN VERY ACCURATE CONCLUSIONS. IF ONE DAY 'MARTIANS' OR SOMETHING SIMILAR WERE TO ACTUALLY LAND HERE, THEN...

WE WOULD RIGHTLY ASK: WHY HAS GOD WITHHELD SUCH A TREMENDOUS EVENT FROM US IN HIS WORD? WHY WERE WE NOT TOLD ABOUT THE MANY 'OTHER WORLDS'? BUT WE CAN BE REASSURED: 'MARTIANS' WILL NEVER LAND BECAUSE THEY DO NOT EXIST. INSTEAD, SATAN AND HIS ARMY WILL LAND HERE, AND THE DEMONS WILL ONE DAY BECOME VISIBLE (REV. 9:13-21). THE STARS WILL FALL FROM THE SKY, FOR THEY ARE NOT 'CELESTIAL BODIES IN INFINITE SPACE', BUT LIGHTS IN THE FIRMAMENT OF HEAVEN. BECAUSE THE QUESTIONED PROFESSORS DID NOT EVEN ENTERTAIN THE HERETICAL THOUGHT THAT THE SCIENTIFIC UNDERSTANDING OF THE UNIVERSE COULD BE COMPLETELY WRONG, OR BECAUSE THEY DID NOT DARE TO VOICE SUCH A THOUGHT, THEY HAD TO STRIVE TO DEAL WITH THE 'PROBLEM' IN OTHER WAYS. IT WOULD HAVE BEEN SIMPLEST IF THEY HAD EXPLAINED: THE BIBLE STATES THAT THROUGH CHRIST THE UNIVERSE IS RECONCILED, AND THAT EVERY KNEE (INCLUDING ANY POTENTIAL MARTIANS) IN HEAVEN, ON EARTH, AND UNDER THE EARTH WILL BOW TO CHRIST, MEANING THAT ALL THE 'COUNTLESS CELESTIAL BODIES IN THE UNIVERSE AND THEIR INHABITANTS' ARE UNDER CHRIST'S DOMINION AND THEREFORE NEED HIM. HOWEVER, THE THEOLOGIANS' RESPONSES WERE NOT AS BIBLICALLY CLEAR. THEY RATHER WENT AS FOLLOWS: PROFESSOR PH. DESSAUER (CATHOLIC): THE BEINGS OF OTHER WORLDS COULD HAVE A COMPLETELY DIFFERENT FATE THAN OURS - WITHOUT THE FALL AND REDEMPTION. THEY COULD BE LED TO THEIR SALVATION IN A DIFFERENT WAY. PERHAPS THEIR ENCOUNTER WITH EARTHLINGS WOULD BE A TEST OF THEIR NATURE. PROF. DESSAUER 'HINTS VERY SUBTLY THAT IT IS PART OF HUMAN VIGILANCE AND READINESS NOT TO OVERLOOK AND MISUNDERSTAND THE SIGNS IN THE SKY.' PROF. DR. SÖHNGEN - MUNICH (CATHOLIC): IT IS A VAIN AND DANGEROUS ENTHUSIASM TO WANT TO SAY IN ADVANCE ANYTHING ABOUT THE NATURE AND MANNER OF POSSIBLE REVELATIONS OF GOD ON OTHER CELESTIAL BODIES. WHAT IS CERTAIN IS THAT THE REVEALING GOD CAN NEVER CONTRADICT HIMSELF. CHRISTIANS AND CHRISTIAN THEOLOGIANS CURRENTLY HAVE OTHER AND MORE PRESSING CONCERNS. 'ASIANS ARE CURRENTLY GIVING US EUROPEANS ENOUGH PROBLEMS, AND TRULY NO FALSE PROBLEMS. TODAY, THE WORLD IS CLOSER TO ATOMIC BOMBS THAN TO FLYING SAUCERS.' PRELATE PROF. DR. M. SCHMAUS - MUNICH (CATHOLIC): THE ASSUMPTION THAT THERE ARE EXTRATERRESTRIAL RATIONAL BEINGS DOES NOT CONTRADICT THE CHURCH'S FAITH (!). THEREFORE, THEOLOGY CAN ADDRESS THE FACTUAL QUESTION WITHOUT HESITATION (!) REGARDING NATURAL SCIENCE.

IT IS SUGGESTED THAT BEINGS ON OTHER CELESTIAL BODIES MIGHT HAVE A PURPOSE RELATED TO CHRIST. HOWEVER, THE HOLY SCRIPTURE DOES NOT PROVIDE INFORMATION ON WHAT ROLE CHRIST WOULD PLAY FOR SUCH BEINGS OR WHETHER HE HOLDS THE SIGNIFICANCE OF A SAVIOR FOR THEM. IT IS POSSIBLE THAT GOD HAS NOT SET ANY SUPERNATURAL GOAL FOR THESE BEINGS, BUT RATHER DESTINED THEM FOR A NATURAL FULFILLMENT. PROF. DR. STAAB FROM WÜRZBURG (CATHOLIC) REMARKED THAT IT WOULD INDEED BE SURPRISING IF OUR EARTH WERE THE ONLY HOME TO RATIONAL, MORALLY RESPONSIBLE BEINGS CALLED TO AN ETERNAL, BLESSED LIFE IN GOD. IF EXTRATERRESTRIAL BEINGS EXIST, THEY DO NOT FALL WITHIN THE SALVATION ORDER APPLICABLE TO HUMANS. THEY WOULD NOT BE UNDER ORIGINAL SIN AND THEREFORE WOULD NOT REQUIRE REDEMPTION LIKE THE FALLEN CHILDREN OF ADAM. PROF. DR. E. STAKEMEIER FROM PADERBORN (CATHOLIC) STATED THAT CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE IS COMPATIBLE WITH THE ASSUMPTION OF EXTRATERRESTRIAL, HUMAN-LIKE BEINGS. IT SHOULD BE NOTED THAT THE CHRISTIAN SALVATION ORDER HAS BEEN REALIZED BY GOD FOR THIS WORLD AND ITS INHABITANTS. WHILE CHRIST IS THE LORD OF ALL CREATION, HIS ORDER OF SALVATION, HIS CHURCH, AND HIS SACRAMENTS APPLY ONLY TO HUMANITY THAT HAS FALLEN IN ADAM AND HAS BEEN RESTORED IN CHRIST. IT IS POSSIBLE THAT HUMAN-LIKE BEINGS EXIST ON OTHER STARS FOR WHOM GOD HAS ESTABLISHED A PURELY NATURAL ORDER. THEIR LIFE GOAL, IN THIS CASE, WOULD NOT BE THE GRACIOUS VISION OF GOD AND PARTICIPATION IN HIS INNERMOST LIFE MYSTERY, BUT RATHER A NATURAL HAPPINESS IN THE AFTERLIFE. GOD'S OMNIPOTENCE, WISDOM, AND LOVE HAVE MEANS AVAILABLE THAT WE CANNOT EVEN BEGIN TO IMAGINE. THE RESPONSES FROM THE PROTESTANT THEOLOGY PROFESSORS WERE NOT MUCH MORE BIBLICAL, BUT SIMILARLY SCHOLARLY AND CONVOLUTED. PROF. DR. RADEKER FROM KIEL NOTED THAT WHILE MODERN ASTRONOMY HAS NOT YET PROVIDED EVIDENCE FOR THE EXISTENCE OF SUCH BEINGS, THE PRESENCE OF HUMAN-LIKE LIFE ON ANOTHER STAR IS NOT OUTSIDE THE REALM OF POSSIBILITY. THIS CHRISTIAN WORLDVIEW IS NOT BOUND TO THE GEOCENTRIC MODEL OF PAST CENTURIES AND IS FULLY COMPATIBLE WITH THE CHANGED WORLDVIEW OF MODERN NATURAL SCIENCE. PROF. D. GOGARTEN FROM GÖTTINGEN CLEVERLY AVOIDED THE QUESTION, STATING THAT HE HAD TO GO ON VACATION.

I REALLY NEED IT. THE MARTIANS WOULD HAVE TO APPEAR IN PERSON IF WE ARE TO ENGAGE WITH THEM. IN THIS CASE, IT WOULD BE BETTER TO LET THEM SPEAK FIRST BEFORE SAYING ANYTHING ABOUT THEM. AFTER ALL, WE ALSO LET THE VISITOR HAVE THE FIRST WORD. EVEN IN THEOLOGY, ONE SHOULD NOT WORRY IN ADVANCE. THIS PROFESSOR HAS AT LEAST NOT COMMITTED HIMSELF AND CAN MORE EASILY RISE FROM THE RUBBLE OF THE IMPENDING COLLAPSE OF LIGHT-YEAR BILLIONS. PROF. D. H. THIELICKE FROM HAMBURG (FORMERLY TÜBINGEN) HAS THOROUGHLY EXAMINED THIS QUESTION. HE WROTE, AMONG OTHER THINGS: THE EXISTENCE OF EXTRATERRESTRIAL BEINGS WOULD ONLY BE INCOMPATIBLE WITH THE CHRISTIAN FAITH IF IT WERE INEXTRICABLY LINKED TO A GEOCENTRIC WORLDVIEW. EVEN IF THE BIBLE ASSUMES THAT WORLDVIEW– OR EVEN JUST ITS PRELIMINARY FORMS– FOR HISTORICAL REASONS, THERE ARE ENOUGH INDICATIONS WITHIN IT THAT SUGGEST A FACTUAL SEPARABILITY OF THE MESSAGES OF SALVATION FROM THESE TIME-BOUND CONCEPTS, WHICH HAVE BEEN RECOGNIZED AND TESTIFIED TO BY THEOLOGIANS OF BOTH DENOMINATIONS FOR CENTURIES. THE BINDING NATURE OF THE BIBLICAL MESSAGE REFERS ONLY TO THE EVENTS AND STATEMENTS OF SALVATION AND NOT TO THE TIME-BOUND MEANS OF EXPRESSION THAT ARE TIED TO THE CURRENT STATE OF KNOWLEDGE! ONE MUST ALSO RETHINK THE JOHANNINE STATEMENT 'FOR GOD SO LOVED THE WORLD THAT HE GAVE HIS ONLY BEGOTTEN SON...' BECAUSE NOT ONLY 'OUR PLANET' BUT THE UNIVERSE ITSELF WOULD FALL UNDER THIS OVERARCHING TERM 'WORLD', AND THE MESSAGE OF THE UNIQUENESS OF CHRIST'S APPEARANCE WOULD ALSO NEED TO BE CLARIFIED IN ITS COSMIC SIGNIFICANCE (WELL!)... WHAT IF THE POTENTIAL EXTRATERRESTRIAL OCCUPANTS OF 'FLYING SAUCERS' POSSESSED NOT OUR EARTHLY FORM OF REASON BUT ONLY A TECHNICAL INTELLECT, MEANING THEY WOULD BE A KIND OF 'HIGHER' INTELLECTUAL INSECTS WITHOUT THE GIFT OF HEART AND SOUL? ... AND HAD ACCESS TO FURTHER UNKNOWN (FIFTH AND SIXTH) DIMENSIONS? COULD THEY ALSO BE CHILDREN OF GOD LIKE WE HUMANS WITH OUR KNOWN 'ATTRIBUTES OF BEING'? THE SCHOLARLY ANSWERS INDICATE THAT THE SCHOLARLY APPROACH HAS NOT FUNDAMENTALLY CHANGED FROM THE TIME OF JESUS TO TODAY. THE LORD JESUS ONCE TOLD THE PROFESSORS: 'YOU DO NOT KNOW THE SCRIPTURES, NOR THE POWER OF GOD.' A LACK OF KNOWLEDGE OF THE WORD OF GOD AND THE REALITY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IS EVIDENT IN ALL THESE PROFESSORS' ANSWERS, MORE OR LESS.

THE SIMPLE BIBLICAL PASSAGE THAT STATES THAT GOD HAS RECONCILED THE UNIVERSE TO HIMSELF (COL. 1:20) HAS BEEN OVERLOOKED. THERE ARE ONLY HUMAN SPECULATIONS ABOUT WHETHER BEINGS ON OTHER STARS MIGHT ALSO BE SUBJECT TO GOD OR CAPABLE OF SALVATION. THESE ARE SURPRISINGLY UNBIBLICAL AND UNSPIRITUAL RESPONSES. SOME PROFESSORS CONSISTENTLY ASSERT THAT THE WORLDVIEW PRESENTED BY THE BIBLE IS EASILY INTERCHANGEABLE, A CLAIM FOR WHICH THEY PROVIDE NO BIBLICAL EVIDENCE. THIS SHOWS HOW WIDESPREAD THE PLAGUE OF DEMYTHOLOGIZATION HAS BECOME WITHIN THEOLOGICAL CIRCLES. THEY CALMLY DECLARE THAT ANYTHING NOT ACCEPTED BY CONTEMPORARY NATURAL SCIENCE CAN BE DISCARDED WITHOUT HARMING THE BIBLICAL DOCTRINE OF SALVATION IN THE SLIGHTEST! THIS INDICATES THAT THERE IS ONLY A DEGREE OF DIFFERENCE, NOT A FUNDAMENTAL ONE, BETWEEN BULTMANN AND THE OTHER PROFESSORS. THEY ALL DEMYTHOLOGIZE TOGETHER, MORE OR LESS. NO ONE THINKS OF DEFENDING THE ENTIRE SCRIPTURE AND THUS ALIGNING THEMSELVES WITH THE APOSTLE PAUL: 'THE WORLD HAS BEEN CRUCIFIED TO ME, AND I TO THE WORLD' (GAL. 6:14). THE PROFESSORS DO NOT EVEN CONSIDER THAT THE CURRENT STATE OF NATURAL SCIENCE COULD BELONG TO THE WISDOM OF THIS WORLD, WHICH GOD HAS MADE FOOLISH. INSTEAD, THE FINDINGS OF ASTRONOMY PROFESSORS ARE READILY ACCEPTED AS UNSHAKEABLE, WHILE THE WORD OF GOD IS TREATED AS MODIFIABLE AND INTERCHANGEABLE. THE ONLY DIFFERENCE BETWEEN PROFESSOR BULTMANN AND HIS MANY COLLEAGUES IS THAT THE LATTER ONLY EXPLAIN THE ASTRONOMICAL DATA OF THE BIBLE AS TIME-BOUND CLOTHING, THUS AS MYTH, WHILE BULTMANN THROWS MOST PIECES OF THE SO-CALLED DOCTRINE OF SALVATION, WHICH OTHERS STILL ANXIOUSLY PROTECT, ONTO THE PILE OF MYTHOLOGICAL DEBRIS. WITH BULTMANN, THE BIBLICALLY FAITHFUL CHRISTIAN KNOWS IMMEDIATELY WHERE HE STANDS. BUT THE OTHER PROFESSORS, WITH THEIR 'PARTLY' STANDPOINT, ARE MORE DANGEROUS FOR THE BIBLICALLY FAITHFUL COMMUNITY. BULTMANN'S RADICALISM HAS ALSO HAD THE ADVANTAGE THAT THE BIBLICALLY FAITHFUL COMMUNITY HAS ONCE AGAIN VIGOROUSLY RAISED THE QUESTION: WHAT DO WE ACTUALLY NEED 'THEOLOGICAL RESEARCH' FOR? HAS IT, SPIRITUALLY SPEAKING, NOT ALREADY DONE MORE HARM THAN GOOD? IT IS VERY REVEALING IN THIS CONTEXT TO OBSERVE THAT THE BOLSHEVIKS USE THE SAME METHOD IN THEIR FIGHT AGAINST CHRISTIANITY. IN THE SCHOOLS OF THE EASTERN ZONE, SCIENTIFIC KNOWLEDGE IS SYSTEMATICALLY...

AS FAR AS THEY FIT THE COMMUNIST-MATERIALIST RELIGION, THEY ARE CONTRASTED WITH AND RIDICULED AGAINST THE 'MYTHOLOGICAL' CONCEPTS OF CHRISTIANS AND THEIR BIBLE. THE GERMAN TEACHERS' NEWSPAPER IN EAST BERLIN WROTE IN JANUARY 1955, AMONG OTHER THINGS: 'THE MYTHOLOGICAL IDEAS ABOUT THE ORIGIN OF THE WORLD ARE UNSCIENTIFIC AND HAVE BEEN REFUTED BY OUR CURRENT CORRECT KNOWLEDGE (!) ABOUT THE EARTH AND THE UNIVERSE. THE PRIMITIVE IDEAS ABOUT THE ORIGIN OF MANKIND HAVE BEEN DISPROVEN BY DARWIN AND ENGELS, AND THE YOUTH HOUR SHOULD HELP ELIMINATE THE REMNANTS OF MYTHOLOGICAL IDEAS...'. ALTHOUGH SCIENTISTS IN THE WEST EXPLAIN THAT WHAT THE COMMUNISTS IN THE EAST TODAY CALL SCIENCE IS NO LONGER RECOGNIZED AS SCIENCE, BUT MUST BE LABELED AS MYTHOLOGY AGAIN, ESPECIALLY SINCE MATERIALISM HAS LONG BEEN REFUTED. HOWEVER, THE IDEA THAT THE EARTH IS A SPHERE ROTATING THROUGH INFINITE SPACE IS STILL GENERALLY ACCEPTED AS 'SCIENCE' TODAY IN BOTH THE WEST AND THE EAST, AND THEREFORE A 'TIME-CONDITIONED TRUTH'. WHETHER I DECLARE THE ENTIRE BIBLE AS A COLLECTION OF CAPITALIST FAIRY TALES BASED ON THIS 'SCIENTIFIC KNOWLEDGE' OR SIMPLY SAY THAT ONE MUST QUIETLY OMIT THE ASTRONOMICAL DATA OF THE BIBLE, THE REST IS STILL USEFUL FOR RESPECTABLE PEOPLE, IS A MATTER OF TEMPERAMENT AND TASTE. THE PROTESTANT THEOLOGY PROFESSOR D. THIELICKE FROM HAMBURG MADE THE FOLLOWING STATEMENTS IN 1954 DURING A ROUNDTABLE DISCUSSION AMONG PROFESSORS ON SÜDDEUTSCHER RUNDFUNK (PUBLISHED UNDER THE TITLE 'FROM ATOM TO WORLD SYSTEM' BY ALFRED KRONER VERLAG): 'ONE WOULD BE EMBARKING ON A DISASTROUS PATH IF ONE WERE TO THINK THAT WE MUST UNDERSTAND THE BIBLICAL WORLDVIEW IN THE SAME SENSE OF REVELATION AS, FOR EXAMPLE, THIS THEMATIC I-YOU RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD FOR FAITH. OF COURSE (!) WE HAVE GONE BEYOND THE WORLDVIEW OF THE FLAT EARTH OVER WHICH THE GLASS DOME OF THE FIRMAMENT ARCHES. WE CAN ONLY APPROACH THE CORE OF WHAT IS BIBLICALLY REVEALED (!) IF WE REGARD THIS WORLDVIEW AS A MEANS OF EXPRESSION, AS IT WERE, AS A COORDINATE SYSTEM IN WHICH CERTAIN POINTS ARE INDICATED TO US THAT ARE THEMATICALLY RELEVANT. YOU WILL PROBABLY IMMEDIATELY THINK THAT I WANT TO ADDRESS WHAT BULTMANN SAYS ABOUT DEMYTHOLOGIZATION. I DO NOT WANT TO DO THAT; THAT WOULD LEAD US TOO FAR HERE. HOWEVER, IT IS CRUCIAL THAT A PROBLEM IS FIXED HERE THAT HAS BEEN ASSIGNED TO US AS A TASK (BY WHOM? FB.): NAMELY THROUGH THE STATEMENT...

TO SEE THROUGH THE SOURCES OF REVELATION TO THE ESSENCE.

MOREOVER, THIS DISTINCTION BETWEEN THE MEANS OF EXPRESSION AND THE ESSENCE IS AN EQUALLY CONSTANTLY OPEN PROBLEM (!).

IT IS NOW INTERESTING THAT NOT EVEN THE SLIGHTEST EVIDENCE IS PRESENTED FOR THIS VIEW, ESPECIALLY NO BIBLICAL PROOF. IT IS SIMPLY PUT FORTH AS A MATTER OF COURSE, AS AN AXIOM. THERE IT IS! THE PROFESSOR HAS SPOKEN! IT IS ALSO INTERESTING TO OBSERVE HOW UNCOMFORTABLE SCHOLARS BECOME WHEN ASKED ABOUT THE BOUNDARY BETWEEN GOD'S WORD AND HUMAN WORD IN THE BIBLE. D. THIELICKE DESCRIBES THE MATTER AS A 'DARING OPERATION.' AND IN AN OPERATION, IT IS WELL KNOWN THAT IT MAY SUCCEED, BUT THE PATIENT IS DEAD. HE THEN WARNS HIS SCIENTIFIC COLLEAGUES, ALARMED, NOT TO THROW THE BABY OUT WITH THE BATHWATER, BECAUSE WHEN ONE STARTS CUTTING INTO THE BIBLE, ONE GETS A TASTE FOR IT AS A SCIENTIST. THIELICKE WANTS TO TELL HIS COLLEAGUE: I GLADLY ALLOW YOU TO OPERATE ON VARIOUS PARTS OF THE BIBLE, ESPECIALLY THE GREATEST IMMEDIATE SHOCKS TO THE OUTDATED WORLDVIEW, BUT DO NOT CUT FURTHER LIKE THE WICKED BULTMANN, WHO HAS BROUGHT THE WHOLE PROFESSION INTO DISREPUTE! YOU MUST KEEP THE CHERISHED STORIES OF THE BIRTH IN BETHLEHEM ALONG WITH THE ANGEL CHOIR, MOST OF THE MIRACLES AND SIGNS, THE CRUCIFIXION AND RESURRECTION, ALIVE AND WELL, BECAUSE WE BELIEVE IN THEM; IT IS OUR SPIRITUAL (AND ECCLESIASTICAL) EXISTENCE. WE CAN TALK AGAIN ABOUT THE ASCENSION AND THE SECOND COMING IN PRIVATE; PERHAPS I WILL LET YOU CUT A BIT MORE THERE! WHAT A SHOCK IT WILL BE WHEN THE LIGHT-YEARS COLLAPSE (REVELATION 6:12-17) AND SUDDENLY THE 'MEANS OF EXPRESSION' OF THE BIBLE APPEAR AS TRUE AS THE REST OF ITS CONTENT. UNTIL THEN, WE MUST CONTINUE TO BEAR THE SHAME OF CHRIST, WHO WAS CONSIDERED JOSEPH'S SON AMONG SCHOLARS BACK THEN (AND STILL TODAY!), EVEN THOUGH HE IS THE SON OF GOD. THE OPERATING IS NOT HELD IN GOOD REGARD AMONG US BELIEVERS ANYWAY. IS IT PERMISSIBLE TO LET AN UNBELIEVER CUT AROUND IN OUR BODY, WHICH IS A TEMPLE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT? DOES GOD ALLOW THAT? IS IT PERMISSIBLE TO LET SCHOLARS CUT AROUND IN THE BODY OF THE WORD OF GOD, IN THE HOLY SCRIPTURES, TO REMOVE WHAT THEY CONSIDER 'FALSE,' 'REMOVABLE,' AND INTERCHANGEABLE ACCORDING TO THE CURRENT STATE OF SCIENCE? BUT OF COURSE, IF D. THIELICKE HAD STATED AT THE MICROPHONE THAT THE BIBLICAL WORLDVIEW SHOULD ALSO BE BELIEVED, WHILE THE SCIENTIFIC WORLDVIEW STILL SEEMED VERY UNCERTAIN TO HIM, WHAT LAUGHTER AND PERSECUTION WOULD THAT HAVE CAUSED! YET I AM CONVINCED THAT D. THIELICKE WOULD NOT MAKE THIS CONFESSION.

NOT OUT OF COWARDICE OR FEAR OF SUFFERING, BUT BECAUSE HE IS STILL COMPLETELY CONVINCED OF HIS THEOLOGY OF 'CONTEXTUAL MEANS OF EXPRESSION.' IN THE THEOLOGICAL SEPARATION OPERATION IN THE BIBLE, THERE ARE VARIOUS VARIATIONS. ONE ONLY EXTRACTS THE COSMOLOGICAL CONCEPTS, ANOTHER ALSO REMOVES EVERYTHING RELATED TO ISRAEL OR REVELATION, WHILE A THIRD CUTS OUT ALL ANGELS, SPIRITS, AND RESURRECTION, JUST AS THE SADDUCEAN PROFESSORS DID IN THE TIME OF JESUS (ACTS 23:8). EVEN TODAY, MANY THEOLOGIANS BELIEVE THAT WHENEVER THE OLD TESTAMENT MENTIONS ISRAEL, JERUSALEM, OR ZION, IT IS REFERRING ONLY TO THE COMMUNITY OR CHURCH OF THE NEW COVENANT. THE OLD ISRAEL IN THE FLESH HAS NO MORE SIGNIFICANCE OR HOPE. OTHERS SAY THAT ALL PROMISES FOR ISRAEL WILL BE FULFILLED LITERALLY. AND SO WILL THE NATURAL STATEMENTS OF SCRIPTURE! THE HISTORY OF THEOLOGY IS A HISTORY OF RECKLESS, CLUMSY OPERATIONS ON THE WORD OF GOD THROUGHOUT ALL TIMES! WHY WOULD IT BE A 'DISASTROUS DETOUR' TO UNDERSTAND THE BIBLICAL WORLDVIEW AS REVELATION? WOULD IT BE A 'DETOUR' TO NOT BELIEVE WHAT SCIENCE STATES? WE CONSIDER IT A MUCH 'MORE DISASTROUS DETOUR' TO NOT BELIEVE THE WORD OF GOD, WHICH STATES SO CLEARLY WHAT IT DOES. IF SCHOLARS CLAIM TO HAVE DISCOVERED THAT THE EARTH IS A SPHERE, THEY CAN PROCLAIM THAT IF THEY WISH. THE BIBLE SAYS NOTHING ABOUT IT, BUT ONE CAN INTERPRET THE RECURRING TERM 'CIRCLE OF THE EARTH' IN THAT WAY IF ONE WANTS. HOWEVER, AS SOON AS SCHOLARS CONTINUE AND SAY, 'THE GLOBE ROTATES,' WE DECLARE THAT TO BE A DETOUR, FOR THE WORD OF GOD REPEATEDLY STATES: THE EARTH IS ESTABLISHED, IT WILL NOT MOVE, YES, IT IS FOUNDED ON PILLARS (PSALM 104:5). THE SCHOLARS RESPOND: THOSE WERE JUST CONTEXTUAL CONCEPTS AND MEANS OF EXPRESSION OF THE PROPHETS. WE SAY: NO, THE PROPHETS WERE INSPIRED BY THE SPIRIT OF GOD, WHO HAD NO REASON TO ASSURE AT THOSE POINTS THAT THE EARTH STANDS FIRM AND DOES NOT MOVE, FOR NO ONE DISPUTED THAT AT THE TIME! THE DEVELOPMENT CONTINUES. IT WILL SHOW WHETHER THEOLOGIANS WILL RETURN TO THE ENTIRE BIBLE, INCLUDING ITS MEANS OF EXPRESSION, BEFORE NATURAL SCIENCE DOES, OR WHETHER PHYSICS AND ASTRONOMY WILL ARRIVE AT THE BIBLICAL WORLDVIEW BEFORE THEOLOGIANS DO. ATOMIC PHYSICS IS ON ITS WAY TO THAT TODAY!

HOW GENEROUS SCIENCE CAN BE IN ITS OWN REFUTATION IS SOMETHING WE ARE EXPERIENCING TODAY. HALF A CENTURY AGO, MATERIALISM WAS CONSIDERED SCIENTIFICALLY JUSTIFIED BY HAECKEL: FOR THE NATURAL HISTORICAL PROCESS AND THE DEVELOPMENT OF THINGS HAD BEEN DISCOVERED AND RESEARCHED. FAITH AND THE BIBLE WERE MOCKED BY ALL WHO WANTED TO BE TAKEN SERIOUSLY IN THE SCIENTIFIC COMMUNITY - AND THESE ARE ALWAYS THE MAJORITY OF PEOPLE WHO HAVE STUDIED! TODAY, AFTER NEARLY HALF A CENTURY, DURING WHICH THE RESOUNDING DRUMBEATS OF TWO WORLD WARS HAVE OCCURRED, SCIENCE HAS THOROUGHLY REFUTED THE MATERIALISTIC, SCIENTIFIC VIEW OF NATURE FROM PHYSICS AND BIOLOGY, AS ATOMIC RESEARCHERS HAVE COME CLOSER TO THE PROBLEM OF FREE WILL AND THUS OF LIFE. INDIVIDUAL ATOMS BEHAVE ARBITRARILY, NOT ACCORDING TO LAWS! SOMETHING MUST INFLUENCE OR CONTROL THEM, PERHAPS EVEN A SPIRIT! BUT WHO NOW LAUGHS AT THE CLEVER PEOPLE OF HAECKEL'S TIME JUST AS THEY LAUGHED AT THE DEVOUT BELIEVERS OF THE BIBLE BACK THEN? ONE SIMPLY OVERLOOKS THE ERRORS OF THE PAST GENEROUSLY - AND ESTABLISHES NEW ERRORS! THEY WERE MERELY CONTEXT-DEPENDENT STATEMENTS OF THE SCIENTIFIC KNOWLEDGE OF THAT TIME. AND HOW LONG WILL THE SCIENTIFIC TRUTHS FOUND TODAY LAST? PROF. D. THIELICKE ALSO ASSURES IN THIS CONVERSATION THAT HE BELIEVES, 'THE CONTINUITY BETWEEN HUMANS AND ANIMALS HAS NEVER BEEN INTERRUPTED IN THE PROCESS OF EVOLUTION.' ROUGHLY SPEAKING: ACCORDING TO THE 'SEAMLESS FINDINGS OF SCIENCE,' HUMANS DESCEND FROM APES! BUT AT SOME POINT IN A PERSON'S LIFE, RESPONSIBILITY ARISES, SAYS PROF. THIELICKE, AND WITH IT THE NECESSITY FOR RELIGION. THUS, HE HAS ALSO RELEGATED THE ACCOUNT OF THE CREATION OF HUMANS AND ANIMALS IN GENESIS 1 AND 2 TO THE REALM OF 'STATEMENTS.' THE RADIO CONVERSATION HAS THUS BECOME INCREASINGLY SCIENTIFIC, AS WE CAN SEE. AS A REWARD FOR THIS, THE THEOLOGIAN WAS GRANTED THAT TODAY, IN THE NATURAL SCIENCES, WE NO LONGER STAND ON THE REGRETTABLY PRIMITIVE STANDPOINT OF THE LONG-GONE PROFESSOR LAPLACE, WHO ONCE TOLD NAPOLEON THAT THE HYPOTHESIS OF GOD WAS UNNECESSARY. THEREFORE, WE FUNDAMENTALLY DO NOT SHAKE THE WORD OF GOD IN THE BIBLE, BUT ONLY SPEAK TO AND WITH THOSE BELIEVERS WHO ACKNOWLEDGE THESE FOUNDATIONS (JOHN 7:17).

THREE-TIERED UNIVERSE! WHAT DOES THE WORD OF GOD SAY ABOUT THE UNIVERSE? IT CLEARLY AND CONSISTENTLY STATES THAT THE UNIVERSE IS STRUCTURED IN THREE LEVELS. THEREFORE, THE TITLE OF THIS BOOK IS: 'THE THREE-TIERED UNIVERSE OF THE BIBLE!' THIS IS CONFIRMED IN THE FOLLOWING SCRIPTURES: 'YOU SHALL NOT MAKE FOR YOURSELF A CARVED IMAGE, OR ANY LIKENESS OF ANYTHING THAT IS IN HEAVEN ABOVE, OR ON THE EARTH BENEATH, OR IN THE WATER UNDER THE EARTH...' (EXODUS 20:4). 'THAT AT THE NAME OF JESUS EVERY KNEE SHOULD BOW, OF THOSE IN HEAVEN, AND OF THOSE ON EARTH, AND OF THOSE UNDER THE EARTH...' (PHILIPPIANS 2:10). 'AND NO ONE IN HEAVEN OR ON THE EARTH OR UNDER THE EARTH WAS ABLE TO OPEN THE SCROLL OR TO LOOK AT IT...' (REVELATION 5:3). 'AND YOU, CAPERNAUM, WHO ARE EXALTED TO HEAVEN, WILL BE BROUGHT DOWN TO HADES...' (MATTHEW 11:23). THUS, ACCORDING TO THE REPEATED STATEMENTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IN THE BIBLE, THE UNIVERSE HAS THREE PARTS OR LEVELS THAT ARE - AND THIS IS CRUCIAL FOR US! - SPATIALLY ARRANGED ONE ABOVE THE OTHER: HEAVEN ABOVE THE EARTH, HELL BENEATH THE EARTH! AND ALL THREE LEVELS ARE POPULATED: HEAVEN BY THE HEAVENLY BEINGS, EARTH BY THE EARTHLY BEINGS, AND THE WORLD BENEATH THE EARTH BY THE UNDERWORLD BEINGS. THIS IS CLEAR BIBLICAL TEACHING AND THEREFORE FOR US, TRUTH, I.E., ABSOLUTE, RELIABLE, UNCHANGING REVELATION FROM GOD. WHETHER 'MARTIANS' OR 'VENUSIANS' ARE ALSO INCLUDED AMONG THE 'HEAVENLY BEINGS' WILL BE EXAMINED BIBLICALLY WHEN WE ADDRESS THE STARRY WORLD. WHAT IS IMPORTANT AT THIS POINT IS ONLY THE ASSERTION THAT THE BIBLE UNIFORMLY TEACHES THIS THREEFOLD DIVISION OF THE UNIVERSE, AND WE BELIEVE IT AS SUCH. FOR IT IS PRECISELY THIS DIVISION AND ITS ENTIRE ARRANGEMENT THAT PROFESSOR BULTMANN, AS A LEADING FIGURE IN THE DEMYTHOLOGIZING OF SCRIPTURE, VEHEMENTLY ATTACKS. IT IS PERCEIVED BY THE 'MODERN MAN' WITH HIS PROUD KNOWLEDGE OF THE 'ACHIEVEMENTS' OF SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY AS DISTINCTLY PRIMITIVE. THEREFORE, IT FLATTERS THE PRIDE OF THIS MODERN MAN WHEN HE IS TOLD: THESE CHILDISH NOTIONS OF A THREE-TIERED UNIVERSE ARE OUTDATED FOR US INTELLECTUALLY MATURE INDIVIDUALS OF THE TWENTIETH CENTURY, AS THERE IS STILL SUCH A THING AS PROGRESS! IT WOULD BE LAUGHABLE IF WE WERE STILL TO BELIEVE IN ANGELS, DEVILS, AND DEMONS, IN HEAVENLY SPACE ABOVE US AND HELLISH SPACE BELOW US, THUS IN ALL...

WHAT FRIGHTENED THE GOOD PEOPLE BETWEEN THE STONE AGE AND THE ERA OF HORSE-DRAWN CARRIAGES, BECAUSE THEY KNEW NOTHING OF ELECTRICITY, MACHINES, CARS, JET FIGHTERS, AND ATOMIC DESTRUCTION! WE ARE SUCH GREAT FOOLS (FOR CHRIST'S SAKE!) THAT WE ACCEPT THE BIBLE'S THREE-STORY TESTIMONY OF THE UNIVERSE AS TRUTH WITHOUT BATTING AN EYE! WE CONSIDER THIS FAITH CAPACITY TO BE A GREAT GIFT FROM GOD FROM THE UPPER FLOOR, HEAVEN. FOR 'HAVING ASCENDED ON HIGH, JESUS CHRIST LED CAPTIVITY CAPTIVE AND GAVE GIFTS TO MEN...' (EPH. 4:8). AND 'EVERY GOOD GIFT AND EVERY PERFECT GIFT IS FROM ABOVE, COMING DOWN FROM THE FATHER OF LIGHTS...' (JAMES 1:17-18). WITH THIS FIRM ADHERENCE TO THE WORD OF GOD, WE HAVE A POWERFUL WEAPON IN HAND TO TEAR DOWN STRONGHOLDS, REASONINGS, AND EVERY HIGH THING THAT EXALTS ITSELF AGAINST THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOD, AND WE TAKE EVERY THOUGHT CAPTIVE TO THE OBEDIENCE OF CHRIST AND ARE READY TO PUNISH EVERY DISOBEDIENCE...' (2 COR. 10:5-6). FURTHERMORE, WE KNOW: 'BEWARE LEST ANYONE CHEAT YOU THROUGH PHILOSOPHY AND EMPTY DECEIT ACCORDING TO THE TRADITION OF MEN, ACCORDING TO THE BASIC PRINCIPLES OF THE WORLD, AND NOT ACCORDING TO CHRIST...' (COL. 2:8). BY THE WAY, WE ALSO FIND THIS TRIPARTITION IN HUMANS THEMSELVES, AS WELL AS IN THE ENTIRE NATURAL AND SPIRITUAL WORLD: BODY, SOUL, SPIRIT - SOLID, LIQUID, GAS - SHEM, HAM, JAPHETH - FATHER, SON, SPIRIT - GOLD, SILVER, PRECIOUS STONES - FAITH, HOPE, LOVE - PAST, PRESENT, FUTURE - OUTER COURT, HOLY PLACE, MOST HOLY PLACE. OF THESE THREE LEVELS OF THE UNIVERSE, WE ONLY KNOW THE EARTH THROUGH EXPERIENCE AND OUR OWN LIVING. WE CAN EXAMINE ITS SIZE AND SHAPE THROUGH TRAVEL, MEASUREMENT, AND CALCULATION. ON THE LEVEL OF THIS EARTH, OUR CALCULATIONS AND MEASUREMENTS ARE SOMEWHAT APPLICABLE, FOR IT IS GIVEN TO US TO DWELL AND WORK UPON. BUT EVEN HERE, THE RESULTS ARE ALWAYS - ESPECIALLY CONCERNING THE SHAPE OF THE EARTH - STILL UNCERTAIN AND DISPUTED, AS SHOWN IN THE CHAPTER ABOUT THE EARTH. HOWEVER, REGARDING THE SIZE AND SHAPE OF THE TWO LEVELS ABOVE AND BELOW THE EARTH, WE CAN SAY NOTHING FROM EXPERIENCE, AND OUR EARTHLY MEANS AND METHODS YIELD VERY DUBIOUS RESULTS, FOR WE DO NOT EVEN KNOW IF EARTHLY MEANS ARE APPLICABLE TO THE HEIGHTS AND DEPTHS. RATHER, WE READ IN JEREMIAH 31:37: 'THUS SAYS THE LORD: IF...'

JUST AS ONE CAN MEASURE THE SKY ABOVE AND EXPLORE THE DEPTHS OF THE EARTH, SO I WILL ALSO REJECT THE ENTIRE SEED OF ISRAEL AND EVERYTHING THEY DO, SAYS THE LORD. TO THIS DAY, WE CAN DO NEITHER; WE CANNOT MEASURE THE HEIGHT ABOVE US NOR THE DEPTH BELOW US, DESPITE ALL OUR TECHNOLOGICAL MEANS, AND WE WILL NEVER BE ABLE TO DO SO WITH THEM. YET, THE VERY TERM 'MEASURE' IMPLIES THE TRUTH THAT THE HEAVENS AND THE WORLD BENEATH THE EARTH ARE MEASURABLE, FINITE SPACES. ONE JUST NEEDS TO HAVE THE NECESSARY SPIRITUAL MEASURE!

THRONE AND FOOTSTOOL

ABOVE ALL, THERE EXISTS A RELATIONAL DYNAMIC BETWEEN HEAVEN, EARTH, AND THE UNDERWORLD THAT SOMEHOW CORRESPONDS TO THE SIZE OF THE EARTH. IN THIS SCALE BETWEEN HEAVEN AND EARTH, THE SHAPE AND FORM OF THE EARTH ARE OF PRIMARY IMPORTANCE, AS THE ARRANGEMENT AND SIZE OF THE HEAVENS MUST FUNDAMENTALLY DEPEND ON IT. IMPORTANT CLUES CAN BE FOUND IN THE SCRIPTURES, WHICH STATE THAT HEAVEN IS GOD'S THRONE AND THE EARTH IS HIS FOOTSTOOL (MATTHEW 5:35; ACTS 2:35, ETC.). HOWEVER, WE SHOULD HARDLY TAKE THE SMALL FOOTSTOOL OF A GRANDMOTHER THAT STANDS IN OUR ROOMS AS A MODEL FOR THIS. IT WOULD LOOK QUITE PATHETIC BEFORE A KING'S THRONE. HERE, WE MUST ENVISION A LARGE PEDESTAL OR ELEVATED, STAIR-LIKE STRUCTURE ON WHICH A KING'S THRONE STANDS. THIS IS ALSO EVIDENT FROM THE GREEK WORD FOR FOOTSTOOL: 'HUPOPODION' (OUR PODIUM!), WHICH ACTUALLY MEANS 'WHAT IS UNDER THE FOOT.' THUS, WHILE A THRONE IS INDEED HIGHER THAN THE FOOTSTOOL, THE FOOTSTOOL IS GENERALLY WIDER AND LONGER THAN THE THRONE SEAT OR CHAIR. THE REPEATED SCRIPTURAL TESTIMONY, EVEN FROM THE MOUTH OF THE LORD JESUS HIMSELF, THAT EARTH AND HEAVEN RELATE TO EACH OTHER LIKE A FOUNDATION AND A KING'S THRONE, GIVES US A CLEAR INDICATION OF THE SIZE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN EARTH AND HEAVEN. HERE, WE ALSO FLATLY REJECT THE NOTION OF INTERPRETING SUCH BIBLICAL WORDS MERELY AS FIGURATIVE COMPARISONS. IT STATES: HEAVEN IS GOD'S THRONE, THE EARTH IS HIS FOOTSTOOL! EVERY CHILD UNDERSTANDS THIS, AND WE SHOULD APPROACH GOD'S WORD LIKE CHILDREN, MEANING WE SHOULD BELIEVE IT SIMPLY–WITHOUT REINTERPRETATIONS! THEREFORE, IF HEAVEN AND EARTH ARE PROPORTIONALLY RELATED LIKE THRONE AND FOUNDATION, THEN TODAY'S ASTRONOMICAL 'HEAVEN' IS AN INFINITE EXPANSE OF SPACE, IN WHICH THE EARTH IS MERELY...

A TINY SPECK EXISTS IN THE LOST CORNER OF A SMALL GALAXY, WHICH IS ALREADY SETTLED FOR US, AS THIS SCIENTIFIC ASSUMPTION AND TEACHING STRONGLY CONTRADICTS THE WORD OF GOD AND IS THEREFORE NOT TRUTH FOR US, BUT A LIE. WE ARE INDEED ENDOWED WITH CHILDLIKE FAITH TO TAKE THESE SCRIPTURAL WORDS FROM THE THRONE AND FOOTSTOOL NOT AS ORIENTAL IMAGERY, BUT AS FILLED, DIVINELY INSPIRED WORDS OF GOD THAT PRECISELY ALIGN WITH REALITY. THUS, THIS WORD FROM THE THRONE AND FOOTSTOOL ALREADY RAISES HEAPS OF QUESTIONS. THE SCIENTIFIC INFINITE UNIVERSE IS THEREFORE BOUND FOR US TO THE MEASURABLE AND FINITE EARTH. WE CAN SAY: THRONE, FOOTSTOOL, BENEATH THE FOOTSTOOL, INSTEAD OF: HEAVEN, EARTH, BENEATH THE EARTH! IT ALL DEPENDS ON THE SHAPE OF THE EARTH, FROM WHICH WE CAN THEN MORE RELIABLY INFER THE SHAPE AND SIZE OF THE LOWER LEVEL. WE WILL EXAMINE THIS IN DETAIL BIBLICALLY IN THE CORRESPONDING CHAPTER.

THE UNIVERSE WE HAVE, THEREFORE, AN UNMISTAKABLE TESTIMONY FROM THE HOLY SCRIPTURES THAT THE UNIVERSE IS STRUCTURED OR DIVIDED INTO THREE LEVELS, AND WE HAVE COME TO RECOGNIZE THAT THESE THREE LEVELS ARE SOMEHOW ORGANICALLY INTERCONNECTED IN THEIR RELATIVE SIZE OR SPATIAL FULFILLMENT. IF WE NOW NOT ONLY EXAMINE THE THREE-TIERED STRUCTURE BUT ALSO CONSIDER THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE MORE CLOSELY FROM A BIBLICAL PERSPECTIVE, WE FIND, ESPECIALLY IN THE LETTERS OF THE APOSTLE PAUL, THE FINAL AND GREATEST INSIGHTS THAT CANNOT BE SURPASSED. PAUL COULD, JUST AS HE IS CALLED THE APOSTLE OF THE NATIONS AND THE CHURCH, RIGHTLY BE CALLED THE 'APOSTLE OF THE UNIVERSE.' HE PROVIDES, WITH FREQUENT REFERENCES TO THE WORD 'UNIVERSE' (GREEK: TA PANTA, HEBREW: KA HOL), MAGNIFICENT INSIGHTS INTO THE ORIGIN AND PURPOSE OF THE UNIVERSE, WHICH FAR SURPASS THE OLD TESTAMENT CREATION STATEMENTS. PAUL REVEALS THAT THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE IS FROM GOD AND WAS CREATED THROUGH JESUS CHRIST AND IN HIM: 'ONE GOD, THE FATHER, FROM WHOM IS THE UNIVERSE AND WE THROUGH HIM' (1 COR. 8:6). 'FOR JUST AS WOMAN IS FROM MAN, SO MAN IS THROUGH WOMAN, BUT THE UNIVERSE IS FROM GOD' (1 COR. 11:12). NOTE THE PARALLEL: JUST AS WOMAN IS FROM MAN, SO THE UNIVERSE IS FROM GOD. THE WOMAN IS TO BE THE HELPER.

THE MAN IS SURROUNDED BY THOSE WHO ARE LIKE HIM. THE UNIVERSE UNDOUBTEDLY HAS THE SAME ULTIMATE PURPOSE IN RELATION TO GOD. BUT JUST AS THE WOMAN DID NOT WANT TO SUBMIT, NEITHER DOES THE UNIVERSE. HOWEVER, AFTER AN AEON-LONG PROCESS OF RENEWAL, IT WILL ULTIMATELY BE BROUGHT INTO SUBMISSION: 'HE WILL TRANSFORM OUR LOWLY BODY TO BE LIKE HIS GLORIOUS BODY, BY THE POWER THAT ENABLES HIM EVEN TO SUBJECT ALL THINGS TO HIMSELF' (PHIL. 3:21). 'WHEN ALL THINGS ARE SUBJECTED TO HIM, THEN THE SON HIMSELF WILL ALSO BE SUBJECTED TO HIM WHO PUT ALL THINGS IN SUBJECTION UNDER HIM, THAT GOD MAY BE ALL IN ALL' (1 COR. 15:28). 'YOU HAVE PUT ALL THINGS IN SUBJECTION UNDER HIS FEET, FOR IN SUBJECTING ALL THINGS TO HIM, HE LEFT NOTHING OUTSIDE HIS CONTROL. AT PRESENT, WE DO NOT YET SEE EVERYTHING IN SUBJECTION TO HIM' (HEB. 2:8). A. E. KNOCH TRANSLATES THE HEBREW NAMES FOR GOD, EL AND ELOHIM, AS 'SUBJUGATOR' AND 'SUBJUGATED ONE'! OTHER FITTING TRANSLATIONS INCLUDE: 'PLACER' AND 'ORDER CREATOR.' TOWARDS THE ULTIMATE GOAL OF THE SUBJUGATION OF ALL, THERE IS A LIVING DEVELOPMENT, A GROWTH, WHICH SCRIPTURE EXPRESSES AS FOLLOWS: 'HE WHO DESCENDED IS THE ONE WHO ALSO ASCENDED FAR ABOVE ALL THE HEAVENS, THAT HE MIGHT FILL ALL THINGS' (EPH. 4:10). 'IF ALL WERE A SINGLE MEMBER, WHERE WOULD THE BODY BE?' (1 COR. 12:19). 'TO UNITE ALL THINGS IN CHRIST, THINGS IN HEAVEN AND THINGS ON EARTH, IN HIM, WE HAVE ALSO BEEN CHOSEN, HAVING BEEN PREDESTINED ACCORDING TO THE PURPOSE OF HIM WHO WORKS ALL THINGS ACCORDING TO THE COUNSEL OF HIS WILL' (EPH. 1:10-11). 'RATHER, SPEAKING THE TRUTH IN LOVE, WE ARE TO GROW UP IN EVERY WAY INTO HIM WHO IS THE HEAD, INTO CHRIST' (EPH. 4:15). 'BUT WHEN ANYTHING IS EXPOSED BY THE LIGHT, IT BECOMES VISIBLE, FOR ANYTHING THAT BECOMES VISIBLE IS LIGHT' (EPH. 5:13). THUS, FOR PAUL, THE UNIVERSE CONSISTS OF EARTH AND HEAVENS; IT IS A LIVING ORGANISM UNDERGOING A GRAND DEVELOPMENT. THIS DEVELOPMENT AIMS TO MAKE ALL THINGS SUBJECT FIRST TO CHRIST AND ULTIMATELY TO GOD. THE MOST IMPORTANT ORGAN FOR THIS PURPOSE IS THE CHURCH, THE BODY OF CHRIST. JUST AS ISRAEL WAS FORMED TO BE THE DIVINE INSTRUMENT FOR THE EARTH, SO TODAY THE CHURCH IS BEING SHAPED AS THE GREAT DIVINE INSTRUMENT OF BLESSING FOR THE UNIVERSE. THIS IS WHY PAUL, THE APOSTLE OF THE MYSTERY OF THE CHURCH, IS SO CONCERNED WITH THE UNIVERSE, WITH THE HEIGHTS AND THE HEAVENS, INTO WHICH HE WAS ALREADY TAKEN UP WHILE STILL ALIVE. INDEED, PAUL EXPLICITLY STATES IN 2 COR. 4:15: 'FOR ALL THINGS ARE FOR YOUR SAKE...'

'SHOULD HE GRANT US THE UNIVERSE (BY GRACE)?' (1 COR. 12:19) 'THE SCRIPTURE HAS CONFINED ALL UNDER SIN, THAT THE PROMISE BY FAITH IN JESUS CHRIST MIGHT BE GIVEN TO THOSE WHO BELIEVE' (GAL. 3:22). THE LORD JESUS HIMSELF, THE PANTOCRATOR OR SOVEREIGN OF ALL (2 COR. 6:18, AMONG OTHERS), HAS GONE THROUGH A PROCESS OF GROWTH AND PREPARATION THROUGH SUFFERING: 'FOR IT WAS FITTING FOR HIM, FOR WHOM ARE ALL THINGS AND BY WHOM ARE ALL THINGS, IN BRINGING MANY SONS TO GLORY, TO MAKE THE AUTHOR OF THEIR SALVATION PERFECT THROUGH SUFFERINGS' (HEB. 2:10). BUT CHRIST DOES NOT BECOME THE SOVEREIGN OF ALL ONLY THROUGH HIS EXALTATION AS STATED IN PHIL. 2:9-11 AND THROUGH THE RECONCILIATION, REDEMPTION, AND RESTORATION OF ALL; RATHER, HE HAS BEEN THE LEGITIMATE LORD OF THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE FROM THE VERY BEGINNING, WHICH WAS CREATED IN HIM, THROUGH HIM, AND FOR HIM: 'FOR BY HIM ALL THINGS WERE CREATED THAT ARE IN HEAVEN AND THAT ARE ON EARTH, VISIBLE AND INVISIBLE, WHETHER THRONES OR DOMINIONS OR PRINCIPALITIES OR POWERS. ALL THINGS WERE CREATED THROUGH HIM AND FOR HIM, AND HE IS BEFORE ALL THINGS, AND IN HIM ALL THINGS CONSIST' (COL. 1:16-17). THIS PASSAGE IS PARTICULARLY ENLIGHTENING AS IT OUTLINES ALL THE COMPONENTS OF THE UNIVERSE. IT CONSISTS OF A VISIBLE PART ON EARTH AND AN INVISIBLE PART IN THE HEAVENS. THE THRONES, DOMINIONS, PRINCIPALITIES, AND POWERS THAT ARE VISIBLE ON EARTH ALSO EXIST IN THE INVISIBILITY OF HEAVEN. IT IS NOTEWORTHY THAT ONLY THE HEAVENS WITH THEIR RULING AND GOVERNING BODIES ARE CONTRASTED WITH THE EARTH, NOT 'OTHER CELESTIAL BODIES, PLANETS, OR EVEN SUNS.' THE ANGELIC POWERS AND SPIRITUAL AUTHORITIES DESCRIBE THE HIERARCHICAL DIVISION OF HEAVENLY PLACES. THEY EXIST AND HAVE POWER, BUT PAUL DENIES THEM ABSOLUTE SOVEREIGNTY, FOR ACCORDING TO COL. 2:10 AND OTHER PASSAGES, CHRIST IS THE HEAD OF ALL POWERS AND AUTHORITIES. THUS, THE AUTHORITIES AND POWERS IN THE UNIVERSE ARE IN A SUBORDINATE AND OBEDIENT RELATIONSHIP TO CHRIST; THEY ARE NOT INDEPENDENT, AS THE DEMONS CONFIRMED DURING CHRIST'S EARTHLY MINISTRY (LUKE 4:34). SINCE CHRIST IS ALWAYS REFERRED TO AS THE HEAD IN RELATION TO THE UNIVERSE–NOT ONLY IN RELATION TO THE CHURCH–PAUL VIEWS THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE AS AN ORGANISM, AS A BODY (1 COR. 12:19), WHICH HAS BEEN SUBJECT TO THE HEAD CHRIST SINCE ITS CREATION. BECAUSE OF THIS, THE UNIVERSE IS A LIVING, ORGANIC MANIFESTATION OR CREATION OF GOD THAT IS UNDERGOING A PROCESS OF GROWTH–THE GROWTH OF GOD! (COL. 2:19). THE POWERS THAT FILL THE UNIVERSE OF EVERY KIND, ALSO...

THOSE WHO ARE DIRECTLY OPPOSED TO GOD BECOME DIVINE ORGANS THAT CAN ONLY DO THE REVEALED OR HIDDEN WILL OF THE HEAD, EITHER DIRECTLY OR INDIRECTLY, KNOWINGLY OR UNKNOWINGLY. THE UNIVERSE IS THUS A LIVING ORGANISM, A BODY UNDER ONE HEAD, IN WHICH A NEW BODY HAS BEEN CONCEIVED AND IS GROWING, THE CHURCH! AND THIS UNIVERSE IS ALSO 'UPHELD BY THE SPOKEN WORD OF HIS POWER' (HEBREWS 1:3) BY CHRIST. IN THIS PROCESS OF CONCEPTION, BIRTH, AND GROWTH OF THE CHURCH, THE EARTH AND HUMANITY UPON IT ARE THE DECISIVE PLACE IN THE UNIVERSE, NOT THE HEAVENS. THE LORD OF THE UNIVERSE CAME TO EARTH FROM THE HEAVENS. THEREFORE, THE EARTH AND ITS HUMANITY ARE AN INDISPENSABLE PART OF THE UNIVERSE FOR ITS RENEWAL AND GROWTH. THE BIBLE EMPHASIZES THIS UNIQUE SIGNIFICANCE OF THE EARTH WHEREVER IT ADDRESSES THESE CONNECTIONS. HOWEVER, WE FIND NO WORD ABOUT THE ALLEGED 'INSIGNIFICANCE OF THE EARTH IN THE INFINITE UNIVERSE.' NOR DO WE FIND THE SLIGHTEST HINT IN SCRIPTURE ABOUT 'OTHER CELESTIAL BODIES, PLANETS, OR SUNS' AND ABOUT THE 'PEOPLE OR BEINGS' THAT MIGHT INHABIT THEM. THESE FANTASIES CORRESPOND IN THEIR ABSURDITY TO THE 'BILLIONS OF LIGHT-YEARS.' THE THEOLOGIANS AND PREACHERS ARE ALSO BUSY ASSURING US THAT EVEN IF THE EARTH IS SUCH A 'TINY SPECK' IN THE 'INFINITY OF THE UNIVERSE' WITH ITS COUNTLESS LARGER CELESTIAL BODIES, IT STILL HAS A SPECIAL SIGNIFICANCE DUE TO THE CROSS ON GOLGOTHA AND THE RECONCILIATION OF THE UNIVERSE ACCOMPLISHED THERE. IT WOULD BE MUCH MORE PROFOUND IF THEY EXPLAINED: THERE IS ONLY ONE EARTH WITH ITS BEINGS, THE HUMANS UPON IT. OUTSIDE OF EARTH, THERE IS ONLY 'BENEATH THE EARTH' AND HEAVEN ACCORDING TO SCRIPTURE. THE CELESTIAL BODIES BELONG TO HEAVEN AND THUS TO GOD'S THRONE. ONLY THE EARTH IS HIS FOOTSTOOL. THE STARS ARE NOT ADDITIONAL AND POSSIBLY EVEN LARGER FOOTSTOOLS BUT WILL ONE DAY FALL DOWN TO EARTH! THEREFORE, THERE ARE NO MANY EARTHS OR CELESTIAL BODIES WITH 'HUMAN-LIKE' BEINGS UPON THEM. THIS CONFUSION HAS BEEN BROUGHT INTO SENSIBLE HUMANITY BY THE DEMONS THAT EXIST IN THE AIR. DEMONS ARE SPIRITS OF LIES; WHAT THEY INSPIRE IS DECEPTION AND FALSEHOOD, OFTEN CLOAKED IN 'REASONABLE' GARB. FOR THE EXECUTION OF THE GREAT GROWTH PROCESS IN THE ORGANISM OF THE UNIVERSE, GOD HAS ALSO MADE THE AEONS THROUGH THE SON (HEBREWS 1:2), MEANING THE GREAT PERIODS OF TIME AND EXPERIENCE THROUGH WHICH THE UNIVERSE MUST SEQUENTIALLY DEVELOP.

THE REVELATION OF GOD: SPACE. WHAT EMERGES WHEN ONE DOES NOT WANT TO OFFEND SCIENCE TOO MUCH IS CLASSICALLY ILLUSTRATED BY A TYPICAL ASCENSION REFLECTION FROM THE WIDELY CIRCULATED NEUKIRCHEN CALENDAR OF 1954. THESE BRIEF REFLECTIONS ON THE TEAR-OFF CALENDAR REPLACE, IN OUR FAST-PACED TIMES, THE LOST FAMILY DEVOTION, MEANING THE DAILY READING OF THE BIBLE IN THE FAMILY. ASCENSION IS NOW THE FESTIVAL WITH WHICH BOTH THE CHURCH AND THE WORLD CAN MAKE THE LEAST SENSE, AS BOTH HAVE LOST THE BIBLICAL HEAVEN, THE FESTIVALS OF HEAVEN, AND THUS THE GOAL AND MEANING OF THE ENTIRE EVENT. EASTER IS RESURRECTION OR, BASED ON NATURE, 'THE AWAKENING OF SPRING'; THE BIRTH OF CHRIST IS CELEBRATED AS A CHRISTMAS FOLK AND FAMILY FESTIVAL; PENTECOST IS THE OUTPOURING OF THE SPIRIT OR 'THE MIRACLE OF BLOSSOMS'; BUT ASCENSION TRANSCENDS ALL NATURAL CONCEPTS, IT PRESUPPOSES 'AN OUTDATED WORLDVIEW' THAT ONE TODAY FEELS ASHAMED OF AS AN ENLIGHTENED PERSON. THEREFORE, IN THE WORLD, THE ASCENSION FESTIVAL WAS TURNED INTO THE DAY OF 'THE GENTLEMEN'S PARTY' (WHICH UNCONSCIOUSLY ECHOES THE PHRASE 'A NOBLEMAN WENT FAR INTO A LAND', LUKE 19:21), AND IN THE ASCENSION REFLECTIONS OF THE CHURCHES, THE GREAT POVERTY OF HEAVENLY GOODS BECOMES APPARENT. THE NEUKIRCHEN CALENDAR THUS WROTE, AMONG OTHER THINGS: 'TODAY, MANY OBJECTIONS ARE RAISED AGAINST THE DOCTRINE OF CHRIST'S ASCENSION. IT IS SAID THAT ONE CAN SEE FROM IT THAT THE BIBLE HAS AN OUTDATED WORLDVIEW. FOR WHOEVER SPEAKS OF AN ASCENSION IMAGINES THE EARTH AS THE CENTER OF THE WORLD AND HEAVEN AS A LARGE BELL DOME PLACED OVER IT. THIS CHILDISH NOTION OF HEAVEN AND EARTH HAS BEEN OUTDATED SINCE COPERNICUS, AND CONSEQUENTLY, THE IDEA OF AN ASCENSION HAS BECOME MEANINGLESS. IN CONTRAST, IT MUST BE SAID: WHEN THE CREED STATES, 'ASCENDED INTO HEAVEN, SITTING AT THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD,' THEN 'HEAVEN' SHOULD NOT BE UNDERSTOOD AS A SUPERNATURAL SPACE, BUT IT SPEAKS OF THE DIGNITY THAT HAS BEEN BESTOWED UPON THE RESURRECTED CHRIST. HE IS 'THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD'... NO ONE ELSE STANDS CLOSE TO THE THRONE OF GOD BUT HE ALONE.' WHEN AN INNOCENT CHILD HEARS THE SCRIPTURE ABOUT THE LORD'S ASCENSION, IT RIGHTLY IMAGINES THAT THE LORD JESUS HAS ASCENDED INTO A SUPERNATURAL SPACE, NAMELY HEAVEN. THEREFORE, IT IS ALSO LITERALLY STATED: CARRIED UP OR BROUGHT UP INTO HEAVEN (LUKE 24:51). IN DOING SO, WE MUST PARTICULARLY NOTE THE LITTLE WORDS 'UP' AND 'INTO'! THE 'INTO' INDICATES THAT IT IS A SPACE, FOR WITHOUT SPACE THERE IS NO 'INTO', NOR ANY.

'OUTSIDE.' THE 'UPWARD' INDICATES THAT THE SPACE IS ABOVE THE EARTH. THE LISTENING CHILD THUS CORRECTLY GRASPS THE ASCENSION REPORT OF THE BIBLE, BECAUSE LITERALLY. WHEN AN ADULT THEN TELLS HIM: YOU MUST NOT UNDERSTAND THE HEAVENS AS AN OTHERWORLDLY SPACE, BECAUSE SCHOLARS KNOW MUCH BETTER TODAY, BUT JESUS IS NOW SOMEWHERE WITH GOD THE FATHER, THEN THIS IS NOT FAR FROM BEING A STUMBLING BLOCK FOR THE CHILD. 'WHOEVER CAUSES ONE OF THESE LITTLE ONES WHO BELIEVE TO STUMBLE...' SAYS THE LORD IN MARK 9:42. IT IS THE SAME CASE AS WITH THE GOLDEN STREETS MENTIONED IN SCRIPTURE. A PASTOR TOLD THE SCHOOLCHILDREN IN RELIGIOUS EDUCATION THAT THESE ARE 'OF COURSE' NOT LITERALLY GOLDEN STREETS, BUT IT SHOULD MEAN THAT IT IS VERY BEAUTIFUL WITH GOD. SOME CHILDREN CAME HOME VERY DEJECTED TO THEIR MOTHER BECAUSE THEY TRULY BELIEVED THAT THERE WERE GOLDEN STREETS IN HEAVEN JUST AS THERE ARE STONY AND DIRTY STREETS ON EARTH. BUT THE BELIEVING MOTHER FIRMLY EXPLAINED TO THEM THAT SHE LITERALLY BELIEVES IN THE GOLDEN STREETS, EVEN IF THE PASTOR DOES NOT. THE CHILDREN BECAME JOYFUL AGAIN AND RESTORED THEIR UPLIFTING FAITH IN THE GOLDEN STREETS OF HEAVENLY JERUSALEM BASED ON THEIR MOTHER'S FIRM BELIEF. WHY DID THE PASTOR DEMYTHOLOGIZE THE WORD OF GOD? WHY WAS HE ASHAMED OF THE MASSIVE GOLDEN STREETS IN HEAVEN? WHY DO SOME SCHOLARS SHY AWAY FROM THE MASSIVE OTHERWORLDLY HEAVENLY SPACE, SAYING: IT IS NOT MEANT THAT WAY? BECAUSE WE DO NOT WANT TO BECOME FOOLS FOR CHRIST'S SAKE, BECAUSE WE DO NOT WANT TO LOSE THE HONOR AND RESPECT OF THE SCIENTIFIC WORLD! SHOULD GOD'S WORD HAVE SAID: GOLDEN STREETS, UP IN HEAVEN? IF HE HAS SAID IT, THEN HE SURELY MEANT IT DIFFERENTLY! 'IF GOD DOES NOT MEAN WHAT HE SAYS, WHY DOES HE NOT SAY WHAT HE MEANS?' THUS ONCE ASKED A GIRL TO HER FATHER, WHO ALSO WANTED TO EXPLAIN THE BIBLE TO HER. YES, WHY DOES IT NOT SAY IN THE WORD OF GOD: IN HEAVEN IT IS AS BEAUTIFUL AS IF THE STREETS WERE MADE OF GOLD, OR: UNDER THE ASCENSION, YOU MUST THINK THAT JESUS HAS NOW GONE TO GOD, YOU CERTAINLY DO NOT NEED TO IMAGINE A SPACE ABOVE THE EARTH, JUST DO NOT BE SO SIMPLE-MINDED, BUT BECOME LIKE THE SCHOLARS! DEAR CHILDREN AND DEAR ADULTS, WHO HAVE BECOME LIKE CHILDREN AGAIN TOWARDS THE WORD OF GOD: THERE ARE REALLY GOLDEN STREETS OF PURE GOLD, IN A REAL CITY WITH PEARL GATES, WHICH IS STILL UP IN A REAL HEAVENLY SPACE. FROM THE LAUGHTER OF THE WISE, YOU CAN RECOGNIZE,

WHAT THE TRUTH IS: ALWAYS THAT WHICH IS LAUGHED AT AND MOCKED THROUGHOUT ALL TIMES ON THIS EARTH! DOES IT NOT SOUND AS IF ONE WANTED TO ELIMINATE THE ANNOYANCE OF THE CROSS WITH THE CONCEPT OF SPACE? (GAL. 5:11.) FOR WHOEVER GIVES UP THE SPATIALITY OF HEAVEN ALSO GIVES UP THE INCARNATION OF THE WORD OF GOD. THIS IS INDEED THE GREAT OFFENSE IN THE UNIVERSE FOR SPIRITS AND HUMANS. FOR WHEN GOD CREATED HEAVEN AND EARTH AT THE BEGINNING, THEY WERE ALREADY CREATED WITH THE CROSS IN MIND. THE CREATION OF SPACE WAS THEREFORE NOTHING OTHER THAN THE BEGINNING OF THE INCARNATION OF THE WORD. THE VERY FIRST WORD OF THE BIBLE IS 'IN,' INDICATING A SPATIAL RELATIONSHIP. THE FIRST WORD OF THE GOSPEL OF JOHN IS ALSO 'IN' OR 'WITHIN.' THE CONCEPT OF BEGINNING IS ALSO RELATED TO SPACE AND TIME, AS BOTH HAVE A BEGINNING AND AN END. 'IN THE BEGINNING' MEANS SPATIALLY: IN AN APPEARANCE THAT IS THE BEGINNING. JESUS CHRIST IS THE BEGINNING AND THE END (REV. 1:8). THEREFORE, 'IN THE BEGINNING' MEANS: IN A SPACE-FILLING, LIVING BEING, IN A REVELATION OF GOD, IN GOD HIMSELF. AND THIS ALIGNS PERFECTLY WITH COL. 1:16-17 AND OTHER SCRIPTURES. INSIDE IS THE OPPOSITE OF OUTSIDE AND PRESUPPOSES SPATIALITY, WHICH MEANS SOME FORM OF LIMITATION, OF SHAPE. OTHERWISE, THERE IS NO INSIDE. THE LIMITATION OF THE INSIDE IS THE OUTSIDE. 'DO YOU NOT JUDGE THOSE WHO ARE INSIDE? BUT THOSE WHO ARE OUTSIDE, GOD JUDGES' (1 COR. 5:12-13). THE SPIRITUAL, FAITH-BASED INSIDE AND OUTSIDE TAKES ON FORM AND FLESH IN EARTHLY EXISTENCE, BECOMING VISIBLE THROUGH BOUNDARIES AND DISTINCTIONS. GOD IS ALWAYS INSIDE. WHEN HE COMES OUTSIDE, HE IS CRUCIFIED, FOR THOSE OUTSIDE CANNOT BEAR TO BE OUTSIDE; THEY WANT TO BE INSIDE THEMSELVES. AND BEFORE THE LORD RETURNED TO HEAVEN, HE GAVE THE HEAVENLY INSIDE PRINCIPLE TO HIS DISCIPLES IN THE WORDS: 'ABIDE IN ME, AND I IN YOU!' (JOHN 15:4). THUS, THERE IS NOT ONLY AN INSIDE AND THEREFORE SPACE IN THE EARTHLY, VISIBLE WORLD, BUT ALSO IN THE INVISIBLE HEAVENLY WORLD. IN THE GREEK LANGUAGE, SPACE = CHORA. IT IS STILL PRESERVED IN THE WORDS CHURCH CHOIR AND CHORAL. THE TABERNACLE ALSO SHOWS US THAT BOTH IN THE COURTYARD AND IN THE HOLY OR THE MOST HOLY PLACE, THERE ARE SPACES THAT BECOME SMALLER AND LESS ACCESSIBLE AS ONE GOES INWARD. WHOEVER DENIES THE SPATIAL FOUNDATION AND PREREQUISITE OF ALL APPEARANCES OR REVELATIONS OF GOD DENIES THE INCARNATION OF THE WORD OF GOD FROM THE VERY BEGINNING. 'WHAT WAS FROM THE BEGINNING, WHAT WE HAVE HEARD, WHAT WE HAVE SEEN WITH...'

IN OUR EYES, WHAT WE LOOKED AT AND WHAT OUR HANDS TOUCHED FROM THE WORD OF LIFE ... (1 JOHN 1:1). TO BE CREATIVE, TO CREATE, MEANS PRIMARILY TO MAKE SPACE FOR SOMETHING, A WORD, A THOUGHT. THE SPACE FOR THE THOUGHT IS ALREADY THE THOUGHT ITSELF. THE SPACE FOR THE WORD IS ALREADY THE WORD ITSELF; THE SPACE FOR AN ACTION IS ALREADY THE ACTION ITSELF, EVEN IF ONLY IN ITS BEGINNINGS. AND THE SPACE FOR THE UNIVERSE IS ALREADY THE UNIVERSE ITSELF! THIS IS ALSO TRUE AT THE HIGHER LEVEL OF DIVINE LIFE IN REBIRTH AND NEW CREATION. IT BEGINS WITH REPENTANCE OR A CHANGE OF MIND. HOWEVER, ONE MUST FIRST FIND 'SPACE FOR REPENTANCE' (HEBREWS 12:17). IF SOMETHING DOES NOT RECEIVE SPACE, IT CANNOT EVEN COME INTO BEING. IF GOD HAD NOT FIRST CREATED HEAVEN AND EARTH, HOW COULD THE SPIRIT OF GOD THEN BE BROODING, EXPANDING, AND CREATIVELY ACTIVE? EVERYTHING THAT WAS CREATED AFTERWARDS IS NOTHING MORE THAN SMALL SPACES WITHIN THE LARGER SPACE. A PERSON, AN ANIMAL, A PLANT, A STONE, A CLOUD–THESE ARE ALL INITIALLY JUST DEFINED AND FILLED SPACES, MEANING ALWAYS NEW ORIGINAL REVELATIONS OF GOD. 'DO NOT GIVE SPACE TO THE SLANDERER!' (EPHESIANS 4:27), WHICH MEANS THAT THE ENEMY'S WORK BECOMES IMPOSSIBLE WHERE HE HAS NO PLACE, NO CONDITIONS IN A SPACE. LIKEWISE, 'GIVE SPACE TO THE WRATH OF GOD!' (ROMANS 12:19). OR: 'A MAN'S GIFT MAKES ROOM FOR HIM AND BRINGS HIM BEFORE THE GREAT!' (PROVERBS 18:16). THE HUMAN BODY IS NOTHING OTHER THAN A LIMITED AND SHAPED SPACE FILLED WITH BONES, FLESH, AND BLOOD, WITH SOUL AND SPIRIT. 'FIRST THE NATURAL BODY, THEN THE SPIRITUAL BODY,' WE READ IN 1 CORINTHIANS 15:46. IF THERE IS A NATURAL (SOUL) BODY, THEN THERE IS ALSO A SPIRITUAL ONE (1 CORINTHIANS 15:44). IF THERE IS A VISIBLE (SOUL) SPACE, THEN THERE IS ALSO AN INVISIBLE, SPIRITUAL SPACE, EXTENSION, OR DIMENSIONS. FOR EVERYTHING VISIBLE IS MERELY A PARABLE FOR THE INVISIBLE, SPIRITUAL. THE SPIRITUAL SPACE DIFFERS FROM THE SOUL, EARTHLY SPACE IN THAT IT HAS FURTHER DIMENSIONS, EXTENSION, AND POSSIBILITIES OF EXPERIENCING GOD. IN OTHER WORDS, IT REPRESENTS A REVELATION OF GOD AT A HIGHER LEVEL FOR MORE DEVELOPED BEINGS. SPACE IS NOTHING OTHER THAN THE FIRST REVELATION OF GOD, THE FIRST SPEAKING AND ACTING OF GOD. WHEN WE EXPERIENCE SPACE, WE EXPERIENCE A PRIMAL REVELATION OF GOD. BY NATURE, WE CAN ONLY GRASP GOD'S REVELATIONS IN TERMS OF WIDTH, LENGTH, AND HEIGHT OR DEPTH (THICKNESS), FOR THIS TRIPARTITE OR THREE-DIMENSIONAL...

THE FORM OF PERCEPTION OR EXPERIENCE HAS REMAINED WITH THE HUMAN SPIRIT AND SOUL SINCE THE FALL FROM GRACE. THE ABILITY TO PERCEIVE SPACE AND THUS GOD IN NATURE IS INHERENTLY GIVEN TO US. THEREFORE, WE ARE RESPONSIBLE IF WE DO NOT USE THIS ABILITY TO GLORIFY GOD (ROMANS 1:20). THERE ARE SUCH DIFFERENCES IN EXPERIENCING SPACE! WHAT DOES AN ANT, A SMALL CHILD, OR AN ADULT WHO HAS TRAVELED WIDELY RECOGNIZE ABOUT SPACE AND THUS ABOUT GOD? GOD IS SPIRIT, GOD IS LIGHT, GOD IS LOVE. THESE THREE FUNDAMENTAL ATTRIBUTES OF GOD, AS CONVEYED BY THE BIBLE, ARE ALL BOUND TO SPACE. SPIRIT IS AND CREATES SPACE OR EXTENSION THROUGH ITS INHERENT POWER (GENESIS 1:6-8). LIGHT IS WHAT ILLUMINATES THE SPIRITUAL SPACE, AND LOVE IS GOD'S SACRIFICE IN THIS SPACE, WHICH FILLS IT WITH LIFE. 'CHRIST OFFERED HIMSELF WITHOUT BLEMISH TO GOD THROUGH THE ETERNAL SPIRIT' (HEBREWS 9:14). THE LIMITATION OF SPIRITUAL SPACE OR SPIRITUAL EXTENSION IS REVEALED AS GLORY. 'LIGHT IS YOUR GARMENT' (PSALM 104:2). JUST AS CLOTHING ON EARTH MAKES THE LIMITATION OF A PERSON OR THEIR FORM VISIBLE AND COVERS IT. THE REJECTION OF SPATIAL THINKING IN SPIRITUAL TRUTHS THROUGH 'SPIRITUALIZATION' IS A SATANIC ATTEMPT TO RENDER THE INCARNATION AND THUS THE SPATIAL MANIFESTATION OF THE WORD INEFFECTIVE FOR OUR SPIRITUAL LIFE AND GROWTH. THE DEVIL IS PLEASED WHEN WE SAY THAT ONE SHOULD NOT IMAGINE HEAVEN SPATIALLY, AND NATURALLY, HELL AND THE ABYSS SHOULD NOT BE EITHER; THEY SHOULD ONLY REPRESENT 'THE PRINCIPLE OF EVIL.' JUST AS OUR EARTHLY, SOULFUL SENSES EXPERIENCE VISIBLE SPACE, SO OUR SPIRITUAL SENSES EXPERIENCE THE INVISIBLE, AEONIAN SPACE OF HEAVENLY WORLDS OR ORDERS. ORDER MEANS: RELATIONSHIPS AND HIERARCHIES IN A SPACE OR IN THE UNDERSTANDING OF GOD'S REVELATION. SPACE INCLUDES FREEDOM BECAUSE FREEDOM BELONGS TO GOD. UNFREEDOM OR SLAVERY BELONGS TO SPATIAL LIMITATION, TO GUILT, TO CAPTIVITY, TO CONFINEMENT, TO NARROWNESS OR FEAR. THAT IS WHY DAVID ALSO SINGS IN 2 SAMUEL 22:20: 'HE BROUGHT ME OUT INTO A SPACIOUS PLACE; HE RESCUED ME BECAUSE HE DELIGHTED IN ME.' AND IN PSALM 31:9: 'AND YOU SET MY FEET IN A WIDE PLACE.' THE DEVELOPMENT OF TRANSPORTATION IN OUR TECHNOLOGICAL AGE IS NOTHING OTHER THAN HUMANITY'S ATTEMPT TO REDEEM ITSELF FROM THE BONDAGE OF GUILT ON THE FIELD BY MOVING BACK AND FORTH ON EARTH AND AS HIGH AS POSSIBLE WITH GREAT SPEED. THIS IS MEANT TO GIVE HIM THE FEELING OF FREEDOM.

EXPANDING SPACE IS CONVEYED, BUT IT IS MERELY SELF-DECEPTION. TRUE FREEDOM OF VAST SPACE CAN ONLY BE POSSESSED AND BROUGHT BY THE SPIRIT, AND CAN ALSO BE EXPERIENCED THROUGH THE SPIRITUAL BODY. TO ACHIEVE THIS, ONE MUST FIRST PASS THROUGH THE NARROWNESS OF DEATH. THE CONCEPTS OF GENTLENESS, PATIENCE, AND ENDURANCE ALSO CONTAIN REFERENCES TO SPACE AND TIME. ONLY THOSE WHO MASTER TIME AND SPACE CAN BE PATIENT, ENDURING, AND GENTLE. HOWEVER, THOSE WHO FEAR MISSING AN OPPORTUNITY OR LOSING SOMETHING IN TIME AND SPACE ARE UNDER THE CONSTRAINTS OF BOTH; THEY HAVE VERY LITTLE OF EITHER, WHICH WE CALL IMPATIENCE! 'ENLARGE THE PLACE OF YOUR TENT, AND LET THEM STRETCH OUT THE CURTAINS OF YOUR DWELLING; DO NOT SPARE! LENGTHEN YOUR CORDS, AND STRENGTHEN YOUR STAKES. FOR YOU SHALL EXPAND TO THE RIGHT AND TO THE LEFT...' (ISAIAH 54:2). '...FOR THERE WAS NO ROOM FOR THEM IN THE INN' (LUKE 2:7). GRACE, ON THE OTHER HAND, STILL HAS ROOM, WHICH IS WHY THE INVITATION GOES OUT TO THOSE WHO ARE ON THE HEDGES AND FENCES... (LUKE 14:22). 'THOSE WHO SIT IN THE REGION AND SHADOW OF DEATH, LIGHT HAS DAWNED ON THEM...' (MATTHEW 4:16). IN CHILDHOOD, SPACE IS INITIALLY EXPERIENCED ALMOST WITHOUT A SENSE OF TIME. THE CHILD EXPERIENCES SPACE IN EVER-WIDENING CIRCLES IN A KIND OF DREAM WITHOUT MUCH SENSE OF TIME. AS A PERSON GROWS OLDER, THEY INCREASINGLY PERCEIVE SPACE AS TIME, REALIZING THAT TIME IS THE BOUNDARY OF THEIR SPACE. THEREFORE, FOR OLDER INDIVIDUALS, DAYS AND YEARS PASS MORE QUICKLY, AND THEY ARE ALSO EAGER TO SAVE TIME AND GAIN MORE OF IT. ALL MACHINES THAT HUMANS INVENT ARE MEANT TO SAVE TIME AND ULTIMATELY TO ENHANCE AND EXPAND THE EXPERIENCE OF SPACE, THAT IS, THE EXPERIENCE OF GOD OR THE GIFT OF GRACE. OF COURSE, THIS IS UNCONSCIOUS FOR MANY PEOPLE. THE TIME SAVINGS THAT HUMANS ACHIEVE WITH THEIR MACHINES ARE THEN EXCHANGED FOR MORE SPACE, MEANING THEY WANT MORE FROM THEIR GOD, OR FROM LIFE, OR WHATEVER THEY CONSIDER IT TO BE. LIFE IS NOTHING OTHER THAN A SPECIFIC COMBINATION OF SPACE AND TIME, OR A REVELATION OF THE SPIRIT. THE HIGHER THE LEVEL OF LIFE, THE GREATER THE SPACE AND THE MORE EXTENDED THE TIME, MEANING ETERNITY. IN CONTRAST, DEATH IS: A NARROWER SPACE AND NO TIME, WHICH ALSO MEANS ETERNITY. WE CAN THUS ASSOCIATE THE CONCEPT OF SPACE WITH GRACE, WITH GIFT, WITH EXPANSIVENESS AND GOODNESS. GOD'S ORIGINAL REVELATION IN THE CREATION OF SPACE IS ALREADY THE FIRST REVELATION OF GRACE. THE TERM 'NARROW,' WHICH IS CONTAINED IN THE WORD FEAR, IS OPPOSED TO SPACE, CONSTRICTS IT, AND SEEKS TO LIMIT GOD'S REVELATION OF GRACE.

REDUCE THE CONFINES OF SPACE AND, IF POSSIBLE, ELIMINATE THEM ENTIRELY. ONE CAN NO LONGER RECOGNIZE AND BELIEVE IN GOD'S GRACE. HENCE THE FEAR, THE DREAD OF CONFINEMENT, BECAUSE THE REMOVAL OF SPACE OR EVEN THE CONSTRICTION OF SPACE THREATENS THE FOUNDATION OF ALL LIFE, OF EVERY EXISTENCE. ALSO COMPARE THE VERSE 2 CORINTHIANS 6:12: 'YOU ARE NOT RESTRICTED BY US, BUT YOU ARE RESTRICTED IN YOUR OWN AFFECTIONS.' WHEN THE LORD JESUS, KNOWN AS THE LORD FROM HEAVEN, SAYS, 'IN MY FATHER'S HOUSE ARE MANY MANSIONS ...', HE DOES NOT ADD: BUT YOU MUST NOT IMAGINE ANY PHYSICAL DWELLINGS AMONG THEM. THE CONCEPT OF 'DWELLING' REMAINS INSEPARABLY LINKED TO SPACE, WHETHER VISIBLE OR INVISIBLE. NOTABLY, THE BIBLE STATES ONCE: THERE WILL BE NO MORE TIME (REVELATION 10:6), BUT IT DOES NOT SAY: THERE WILL BE NO MORE SPACE! FOR THE OLD EARTH AND THE OLD HEAVEN, WHICH WILL PASS AWAY, A NEW HEAVEN AND A NEW EARTH WILL APPEAR, MEANING NEW SPACES OR REVELATIONS OF GOD WILL ARISE, IN WHICH RIGHTEOUSNESS DWELLS (2 PETER 3:13). AND THE HEAVENLY JERUSALEM, WHICH COMES DOWN FROM HEAVEN TO EARTH IN REVELATION 21:10 FF., IS UNDOUBTEDLY A SPACE, A GOLDEN GIANT PYRAMID, EACH SIDE MEASURING 12,000 STADIA IN LENGTH, WIDTH, AND HEIGHT! FROM ALL THIS, WE SEE: SPACE AS SUCH REMAINS. IT IS THE FUNDAMENTAL REVELATION OF GOD'S LOVE. FOR LOVE AND SPACE ARE PARTICULARLY INTERTWINED. THE UNIVERSE IS A CREATION OF GOD'S LOVE. AN EGG IN THE MOTHER, NO MATTER HOW SMALL, IS STILL A SPACE THAT THE SPIRIT OF LOVE EXPANDS THROUGH THE GENERATION OF LIFE, ALLOWING IT TO GROW UNTIL THIS CREATION OF LOVE CAN BE BORN (REVEALED) AS A SMALL HUMAN BEING, THAT IS, AS A COMPLETELY FILLED HUMAN SPACE INTO THE SPACE OF THE EARTH. GENERATION IS PRECISELY THE POINT-LIKE BEGINNING OF A CREATION OF SPACE OR REVELATION OF GOD, IN BOTH THE EARTHLY-SOUL AND THE HEAVENLY-SPIRITUAL REALMS. ELOHIM = GOD OF SPACE, CREATOR OF THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH. JEHOVAH OR YAHWEH = GOD OF TIME AND THE COURSE OF HISTORY: I AM WHO I WILL BE; THE ONE WHO IS, WHO WAS, AND WHO IS TO COME. THE SON WILL ONE DAY HAND OVER THE KINGDOM TO THE FATHER (1 CORINTHIANS 15:24). WITH THAT, TIME WILL CEASE AND THE EXISTENCE OF SPACE WITHOUT TIME LIMITATIONS WILL BEGIN, IN WHICH GOD WILL BE ALL - IN ALL! OUR THINKING CAN ALREADY DEMONSTRATE THAT THERE IS NOT ONLY ONE MATERIAL, VISIBLY PERCEIVABLE SPACE, BUT THERE MUST ALSO BE A SPACE THAT CONTAINS FURTHER DIMENSIONS, DEEPENING OR EXPANSION POSSIBILITIES. THESE ARE SPHERES THAT ARE STILL CLOSED TO US IN THE FLESH. IN OUR EARTHLY EXPERIENCE OF SPACE, WE LIKELY KNOW ONLY A SMALL PART OF IT.

THE TOTAL REVELATION OF GOD'S SPACE. THE RESURRECTED LORD, WHO CAN ENTER ROOMS THROUGH CLOSED DOORS, STILL HAS A BODY, A LIMITED SPATIALITY, FILLED ONLY WITH SPIRITUAL RADIANT SUBSTANCE, NO LONGER WITH FLESHLY MATTER AND ITS PROCESS OF DECAY. THAT SPACE IS A DIVINE-SPIRITUAL PHENOMENON BECOMES ESPECIALLY CLEAR FROM GENESIS 1:6: 'AND GOD SAID: LET THERE BE A FIRMAMENT IN THE MIDST OF THE WATERS...' FIRST, GOD CREATES THE SPACES OF HEAVEN AND EARTH. THEN, IN THE RESTORATION, HE FIRST CREATES A SPACE, A FIRMAMENT (LUTHER: FIRM), FOR HIMSELF, A HEAVENLY SPACE. NOTABLY, THE BIBLE DOES NOT SPEAK OF A VISIBLE SPACE WITHOUT END, ONLY OF A LIFE WITHOUT BEGINNING AND END FOR MELCHIZEDEK (HEBREWS 7:3) AND OF THE POWER OF ETERNAL LIFE (HEBREWS 7:16). IF THE UNIVERSE WERE INFINITELY LARGE FOR US HUMANS, THIS IMPORTANT INDICATION WOULD SURELY APPEAR SOMEWHERE IN THE BIBLE. HOWEVER, WE ONLY READ ABOUT THE ENDS OF HEAVEN AND THE ENDS OF THE EARTH, MEANING SPACES THAT HAVE A COMPREHENSIBLE, FINITE LIMITATION FOR US. THE INCARNATION OF THE WORD OR SPIRIT ALWAYS MEANS THAT A SPIRITUAL ENTITY OR SPACE ENTERS A MATERIAL, LIMITED FORM: WHEN THE BIBLE SAYS, 'GOD CREATED HEAVEN AND EARTH,' AND FURTHER STATES, 'THE EARTH IS HIS FOOTSTOOL, BUT HEAVEN IS HIS THRONE,' WHY SHOULD ONLY THE FOOTSTOOL, THE EARTH, BE UNDERSTOOD SPATIALLY AND LITERALLY, WHILE HEAVEN IS NOT? JUST BECAUSE THE UNBELIEVING WORLD AND ITS SCHOLARSHIP, WHICH IS FOOLISHNESS TO GOD, WANT IT THAT WAY? WE HAVE EVEN MORE EVIDENCE FROM SCRIPTURE ABOUT THE REVEALED SPATIAL CHARACTER OF HEAVENLY PLACES. THERE ARE GOLDEN STREETS, MANY MANSIONS IN THE FATHER'S HOUSE, ANGELS FLYING THROUGH THE HEAVENLY CENTER, FESTIVE GATHERINGS ON MOUNT ZION WITH MYRIADS OF ANGELS AND SPIRITS (HEBREWS 12:22), THERE IS A HEAVENLY JERUSALEM, WHERE WIDTH, LENGTH, AND HEIGHT ARE EQUAL, AND ACCORDING TO EPHESIANS 3, WE ARE TO RECOGNIZE THE FOUR DIMENSIONS OF HEIGHT, WIDTH, LENGTH, AND DEPTH, MEANING WE ARE TO SPIRITUALLY EXPERIENCE THEM. THUS, SPACE IS NOT ONLY AN EARTHLY, NATURAL, THREE-DIMENSIONAL CONCEPT, BUT ABOVE ALL, A SPIRITUAL AND LATER A SPIRITUAL-BODY CONCEPT AND STATE. THE SPIRITUAL SPACE WITH ITS DIMENSIONS OR EXPERIENTIAL POSSIBILITIES THAT ARE STILL HIDDEN FROM US ('WHAT NO EAR HAS HEARD AND NO EYE HAS SEEN...!') PERMEATES EARTHLY SPACE EVERYWHERE AND IS WITHIN IT. WE GROW.

HERE ALREADY IN THE SPIRITUAL EXPERIENCE OF SPACE, THAT IS, EXPERIENCING GOD THROUGH OUR SPIRITUAL GROWTH. WE SHOULD NO LONGER WORSHIP IN JERUSALEM OR ON MOUNT GERIZIM, BUT IN SPIRIT AND IN TRUTH, MEANING WE SHOULD ALREADY HAVE THE SPIRITUAL EXPERIENCE OF SPACE IN FAITH. 'FOR WE WALK BY FAITH, NOT BY SIGHT.' THE NEW CREATION, THE INNER PERSON, CHRIST IN US, WHO TAKES SHAPE WITHIN US, WANTS TO OCCUPY AND FILL THE SPACE IN OUR SOUL AND ITS SPIRITUAL EXPANSION, WHICH CANNOT BE GRASPED WITHOUT A SPIRITUAL UNDERSTANDING OF SPACE. THE APOSTLE PAUL OFTEN MOVES WITH HIS MANY 'IN' AND 'ALL' MUCH MORE IN SPATIAL THAN IN TEMPORAL CONTEXTS: WE IN CHRIST, CHRIST IN US, THE HOPE OF GLORY, THE NATURAL MAN IN ADAM, THE COSMOS IS IN DISARRAY, CAUGHT UP TO THE THIRD HEAVEN. INSIDE AND OUTSIDE ARE FUNDAMENTAL CONCEPTS AND TRUTHS OF SCRIPTURE. THE LORD ALSO SAYS: ABIDE IN ME! THE SPIRITUAL SPACE, THE THRONE OF GOD, IS NOT ONLY ABOVE THE EARTHLY BUT ALSO HIDDEN WITHIN IT. THE JUXTAPOSITION IS THE ESSENCE IN THE EARTHLY-NATURAL, THREE-DIMENSIONAL SPACE. IN CONTRAST, THE INTERPENETRATION IS THE ESSENCE IN SPIRITUAL SPACE. FOR EXAMPLE, SEE THE INTERPENETRATION OF THE WHEELS ON GOD'S CHARIOT IN EZEKIEL 1:16. THE SPACE BECOMES SPIRITUAL AND SPIRITUAL-BODY, MEANING IT DEVELOPS INWARDLY, BUT IT DOES NOT DISAPPEAR; RATHER, IT DEEPENS. JUST AS TIME IS SOMEWHAT A FUNCTION OF EARTHLY-MATERIAL SPACE, ETERNITY BELONGS TO THE EXPERIENCE OF SPIRITUAL SPACE. IT IS NOT THE MATERIAL SPACE THAT IS INFINITE, BUT THE LIFE AND ESSENCE ASSOCIATED WITH SPIRITUAL EXPERIENCE CAN ONLY BE EXPERIENCED WITHOUT TEMPORAL LIMITS. PERHAPS ONLY A VERY SMALL MATERIAL SPACE IS NEEDED FOR THIS. SCHOLARS TODAY ARE BEGINNING TO SENSE THESE THINGS IN ATOMIC RESEARCH. WE THINK AND LIVE ON EARTH IN THREE DIMENSIONS, THAT IS, HEIGHT, WIDTH, AND LENGTH. THIS THREE-DIMENSIONAL SPACE IS ACCESSIBLE TO US IN EVERY DIRECTION. IT IS, AS KANT SAID, 'A FORM OF INTUITION OF THE HUMAN MIND, WHICH UNCONSCIOUSLY ORGANIZES THE FACTS OF SENSORY PERCEPTION SPATIALLY AND MAKES THEM INTO OBJECTIVE PERCEPTIONS.' HOWEVER, WE CAN ONLY EXPERIENCE TIME AT ONE POINT, NAMELY THE PRESENT. WE CANNOT REVERSE ITS DIRECTION, AT LEAST NOT IN THE BODY. ONLY IN THOUGHT CAN WE TRAVEL INTO THE PAST AND FUTURE. FROM A GREAT HEIGHT OR FROM THE UNIVERSE, HOWEVER, TIME COULD MERELY BE UNDERSTOOD AS A FOURTH SPATIAL DIMENSION. ANY BEING OF A LOWER DIMENSION COULD EXPERIENCE THE NEXT HIGHER DIMENSION AS TIME.

A POINT-LIKE BEING COULD ONLY 'EXPERIENCE' THE LINE IN ONE DIRECTION SEQUENTIALLY, MUCH LIKE A DRIVER EXPERIENCES A COUNTRY ROAD. THE LINE-LIKE BEING WOULD PERCEIVE THE LINE SIMULTANEOUSLY, BUT THE SURFACE ONLY SEQUENTIALLY. THE SURFACE BEING WOULD EXPERIENCE THE SAME WITH THE THIRD DIMENSION, THE BODY. AND WE THREE-DIMENSIONAL, PHYSICAL BEINGS EXPERIENCE THE NEXT HIGHER, FOURTH DIMENSION AS TIME. FOR A FOUR-DIMENSIONAL BEING, THE SEQUENCE OF PAST, PRESENT, AND FUTURE WOULD DISAPPEAR; IT COULD ALWAYS 'EXPERIENCE' THE PRESENT, IN OTHER WORDS, LIVE IN ETERNITY. A ROUGH COMPARISON CAN ILLUSTRATE THE TRANSITION TO A HIGHER DIMENSION BY COMPARING IT TO THE TRANSITION FROM A CAR TO AN AIRPLANE. WHAT THE DRIVER CAN ONLY SEE AND EXPERIENCE SEQUENTIALLY, THE FLYER CAN OVERVIEW SIMULTANEOUSLY FROM ABOVE; WHAT IS PAST AND FUTURE FOR THE DRIVER IS IMMEDIATELY CLEAR TO THE FLYER. FOR A LONG TIME, THE THREE DIMENSIONS WERE CONSIDERED A FUNDAMENTAL PROPERTY OF SPACE UNTIL IT BECAME POSSIBLE TO MENTALLY CONSTRUCT AND CALCULATE WITH MULTIDIMENSIONAL SPACES. FOR A TWO-DIMENSIONAL BEING BOUND TO ITS PLANE, TWO TRIANGULAR PANELS LYING OPPOSITE EACH OTHER ARE TWO SHAPES THAT CANNOT BE ALIGNED IN ANY WAY. WITH THE HELP OF THE THIRD SPATIAL DIMENSION, THIS IS EASILY POSSIBLE BY SIMPLY FLIPPING ONE OF THE TRIANGLES. HOWEVER, THIS PROCESS WOULD BE COMPLETELY INCOMPREHENSIBLE TO THE TWO-DIMENSIONAL SURFACE BEING. SIMILARLY, REGARDING THE FOURTH DIMENSION, WHICH WE DO NOT POSSESS IN THE BODY, A RIGHT HAND CAN BE TRANSFORMED INTO A LEFT HAND, OR A LEFT-HANDED SCREW CAN BE FITTED INTO A RIGHT-HANDED NUT. IF A FOUR-DIMENSIONAL BEING WERE TO ACTUALLY PERFORM THIS, IT WOULD BE AN INCOMPREHENSIBLE MIRACLE FOR THE THREE-DIMENSIONAL WORLD. HOWEVER, THROUGH FAITH, THE HUMAN SPIRIT CAN MOVE IN HIGHER DIMENSIONS. 'FOR TRULY, I SAY TO YOU: IF YOU HAVE FAITH LIKE A MUSTARD SEED, YOU MAY SAY TO THIS MOUNTAIN: MOVE FROM HERE TO THERE! AND IT WILL MOVE, AND NOTHING WILL BE IMPOSSIBLE FOR YOU!' (MATT. 17:20). THE 'FAITH LIKE A MUSTARD SEED' IS THE FOURTH DIMENSION FROM WHICH SUCH MIRACLES CAN BE PERFORMED IN THE PHYSICAL WORLD OF THREE DIMENSIONS. BECAUSE THE DIMENSIONS WE CURRENTLY LACK WILL ONE DAY BE AVAILABLE TO US, 'WE WILL ALSO DO THE WORKS THAT I DO AND EVEN GREATER WORKS THAN THESE...' (JOHN 14:12). FAITH POSSESSES THE DIMENSIONS WE STILL LACK AND WILL ONE DAY BE ABLE TO MANIFEST THEM EFFORTLESSLY IN ITS SPIRITUAL AND PHYSICAL PERFECTION.

IF WE UNDERSTAND THE EARTHLY CONCEPT OF TIME AS A RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN HUMANS AND SPACE, THEN THE WORD 'ETERNITY' LOSES ITS ORIGINAL, PRIMITIVE MEANING AS AN ENDLESSLY STRUNG-OUT TIME. ETERNITY IS AS LITTLE ENDLESS TIME AS IT IS AN ENDLESS THREE-DIMENSIONAL SPACE, AND AS LITTLE AS GOD IS A MAN GROWN TO AN ENORMOUS SIZE. AFTER PHYSICAL DEATH, WE RATHER ENTER A STATE OF EXISTENCE IN WHICH EARTHLY TIME WILL LIKELY BECOME THE FOURTH DIMENSION OF SPACE FOR US. A THOUSAND YEARS WILL THEN BE LIKE A DAY FOR US - AND VICE VERSA (2 PETER 3:8). IT IS THE FORM OF EXISTENCE OF THE TIMELESS, OTHERWORLDLY, IN WHICH WE ALREADY LIVE HERE AND NOW, BUT FROM WHICH WE ARE STILL EFFECTIVELY SEPARATED BY THE VEIL OF OUR PHYSICAL BODIES. THEREFORE, WHEN SCHOLARS SAY: 'A BILLION LIGHT-YEARS AWAY,' IT IS UNCONSCIOUSLY JUST A CHILDISH, STAMMERING ATTEMPT TO FIT FOUR- AND MULTIDIMENSIONAL EXISTENCE INTO THREE-DIMENSIONAL CONCEPTS AND CALCULATIONS. IN TRUTH, THE 'COSMIC SPACE' THEY SEARCH WITH THEIR TELESCOPES IS NOT SO MANY BILLIONS OF KILOMETERS OR LIGHT-YEARS 'DEEP,' BUT IS AN EXPRESSION OF A COMPLETELY DIFFERENT, AT LEAST FOUR-DIMENSIONAL AND LIVING ESSENCE THAT CANNOT BE GRASPED BY THE STRONGEST TELESCOPES AND US THREE-DIMENSIONAL HUMANS BEHIND THEM AT ALL. THE SAME MISTAKE SCHOLARS MAKE WITH SPACE, THEY ALSO MAKE WITH TIME WHEN LOOKING INTO THE PAST. JUST AS THE SPACES OF THE UNIVERSE GREW INTO THE IMMEASURABLE AND UNIMAGINABLE WITH THE SO-CALLED PROGRESS OF SCIENCE, SO TOO DID THE TIMES CLAIMED FOR THE FORMATION OF THE EARTH, THE 'SOLAR SYSTEM,' AND THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE HAVE TO BE REPEATEDLY EXTENDED ENORMOUSLY. THEY MOVED THERE WITH THE GREATEST SELF-EVIDENCE IN THE BOUNDLESSNESS OF THREE-DIMENSIONAL VIEWS OF DISBELIEF. TODAY, FOR EXAMPLE, THE 'AGE OF THE EARTH' AND THE OTHER PLANETS OR WANDERING STARS IS ESTIMATED AT 'ONLY' TWO TO THREE BILLION YEARS. THE SUN, ON THE OTHER HAND, IS SAID TO BE FIVE TO EIGHT BILLION YEARS OLD. AT THE SAME TIME, SCIENCE FEELS STRONG ENOUGH TO PREDICT THE SUN A LIFESPAN OF ABOUT TWICE AS LONG, AROUND 20 TRILLION YEARS! TO RECOGNIZE THIS NONSENSE IN ITS ENTIRETY, LET US BRIEFLY INTERJECT THE VIEW OF THE WORD OF GOD ON THIS QUESTION: AFTER THE THOUSAND-YEAR REIGN OF PEACE UNDER THE RULE OF JESUS CHRIST ON EARTH, BEFORE WHOSE ARRIVAL WE STAND TODAY, THE FOLLOWING HAPPENS: 'AND I SAW A WHITE THRONE, AND THE ONE WHO SAT ON IT; FROM WHOSE FACE THE EARTH FLED AND THE...

HEAVEN, AND NO PLACE (NO ROOM LEFT!) WAS FOUND FOR THEM... AND I SAW A NEW HEAVEN AND A NEW EARTH, FOR THE FIRST HEAVEN AND THE FIRST EARTH HAD PASSED AWAY (DOES THIS ONLY MEAN: BECOME INVISIBLE? FOR WHAT STATE? WHAT IMMENSE MYSTERIES ARE CONTAINED IN THIS ONE EXPRESSION 'TO PASS AWAY!'), AND THE SEA IS NO MORE. AND I SAW THE HOLY CITY, THE NEW JERUSALEM, COMING DOWN OUT OF HEAVEN FROM GOD... AND THE CITY DOES NOT NEED THE SUN OR THE MOON TO SHINE ON IT... AND HE SAID TO ME: DO NOT SEAL THE WORDS OF THE PROPHECY OF THIS BOOK, FOR THE TIME IS NEAR... BEHOLD, I COME QUICKLY!" (REVELATION 21:22). SCIENCE THUS FINDS THE FOLLOWING 'TRUTH': THE SUN AND EARTH WILL LAST FOR BILLIONS OF YEARS! GOD'S PROPHETIC WORD, WHICH IS HIDDEN FROM THE WISE AND PRUDENT, SAYS: JUST OVER A THOUSAND MORE YEARS, THEN HEAVEN, EARTH, AND THE COSMOS WILL PASS AWAY...! SCIENCE LIKES TO ILLUSTRATE THE VAST TIME SPANS IT HAS DISCOVERED IN ITS BOOKS THROUGH REDUCED SCALES. 'IF WE LET THE SUN ARISE IN THE GRAY ANTIQUITY, THEN FOR THE ENTIRE HISTORY OF THE EARTH, INSTEAD OF TWO BILLION YEARS, ONLY ONE YEAR OF THE PRESENT REMAINS. BUT ONLY IN THE AUTUMN OF THIS YEAR WOULD THE COAL FORESTS GROW, AND ONLY IN MID-NOVEMBER WOULD THE FIRST MAMMALS APPEAR. FOR THE ENTIRE MODERN ERA OF THE EARTH WITH THE FORMATION OF THE HIGH MOUNTAINS, DESPITE THEIR 60 MILLION YEARS, ONLY THE LAST TWO WEEKS OF THE YEAR WOULD REMAIN. AND ONLY ON NEW YEAR'S EVE AT 6 O'CLOCK WOULD THE ICE AGE BEGIN WITH THE OLDEST HUMANS. AND WHAT WE SO ARROGANTLY CALL 'WORLD HISTORY' WOULD HARDLY BEGIN TWO MINUTES BEFORE MIDNIGHT. FOR OUR OWN LIVES, ONLY A SECOND, A HEARTBEAT WOULD REMAIN.' THIS TIME MODEL ILLUSTRATES THE CURRENT LIFESPAN OF OUR SOLAR SYSTEM. HOWEVER, OUR SUN IS JUST ONE AMONG THE BILLIONS OF SUNS IN THE MILKY WAY, AND OUR MILKY WAY IS JUST ONE AMONG THE BILLIONS OF GALAXIES IN THE UNIVERSE. WHILE OUR SUN AGES SLOWLY, NEW ONES ARE BORN ELSEWHERE, PERHAPS FROM THE REMNANTS OF OVER-AGED CELESTIAL BODIES. HOW LONG DOES IT TAKE TO FORM A GALAXY SYSTEM, HOW LONG FOR THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE UNIVERSE? IT IS IMPOSSIBLE TO EVEN ESTIMATE ANSWERS TO SUCH QUESTIONS. WE CAN ONLY SENSE THAT THESE TIME SPANS GROW INTO THE UNIMAGINABLE IN THE SAME WAY THAT DISTANCES IN SPACE DO. OUR EARTH'S HISTORY SEEMS TO BE NOTHING MORE THAN A BREATH IN THE LIFE OF THE COSMOS. IF THE WORD 'INFINITE' IS JUSTIFIED ANYWHERE, IT IS HERE.

LOOKING AT THE 'STARS'. THIS IS HOW A RESPECTED ASTRONOMER IN GERMANY WROTE IN 1954. HOWEVER, THIS IDEA OF AN INFINITE SPACE THROUGH WHICH A STEADY STREAM OF TIME FLOWS HAS BEEN ABANDONED BY SOME SCHOLARS IN MODERN TIMES. PROFESSOR P. JORDAN PROPOSED THE HYPOTHESIS THAT OUR UNIVERSE IS A 'THREE-DIMENSIONAL RIEMANNIAN SPACE OF INFINITE CURVATURE' THAT EXPANDS AT THE SPEED OF LIGHT. TO CLARIFY THIS STATEMENT, ONE SHOULD OBSERVE AN EXPANDING SOAP BUBBLE. FOR A TWO-DIMENSIONAL BEING, THE SURFACE OF THE SOAP BUBBLE IS UNLIMITED, BUT NOT INFINITE. PREVIOUSLY, ASTRONOMERS HAVE OCCASIONALLY ENTERTAINED THE IDEA OF AN EXPANDING UNIVERSE. IF SPACE WERE INFINITELY LARGE AND UNIFORMLY FILLED WITH STARS LIKE THE SUN, AT A DENSITY SIMILAR TO THAT FOUND IN THE MILKY WAY AND ITS VICINITY, THE NIGHT SKY WOULD HAVE TO SHINE AS BRIGHTLY AS THE SUN. THUS, SOME SCHOLARS TODAY ASSUME A FINITE BUT UNBOUNDED CURVED UNIVERSE. IN SUCH A SPACE, ACCORDING TO THE CONCEPTS DEVELOPED BY EINSTEIN AND OTHERS, ENTIRELY DIFFERENT LAWS WOULD PREVAIL THAN THOSE WE HAVE KNOWN ON EARTH. FOR EXAMPLE, 'THE TIME ATOM' WOULD PLAY A SIGNIFICANT ROLE. SINCE THE FORMATION OF THE FIRST TIME ATOM, SPACE HAS SOMEHOW EXPANDED IN PARALLEL WITH THE GROWTH OF TIME. THEREFORE, TIME ONLY PROGRESSES UNIDIRECTIONALLY, NEVER BACKWARD! THE QUESTION OF WHAT EXISTED BEFORE THE TIME ZERO POINT IS SIMPLY MEANINGLESS FOR OUR WORLD, JUST AS THE QUESTION OF WHAT MIGHT EXIST OUTSIDE OUR FINITE RIEMANNIAN SPACE. FOR THE RIEMANNIAN SPACE AND THE BEINGS LIVING WITHIN IT, THERE IS NO 'OUTSIDE'. WE LEARN FROM THE HOLY SCRIPTURES THAT TIME BEGAN WHEN GOD SPOKE... 'AND THERE WAS EVENING AND THERE WAS MORNING, THE FIRST DAY' (GENESIS 1:5). WE ALSO READ THAT THE ETERNITIES OR WORLD AGES HAD A BEGINNING AND WILL THUS ALSO HAVE AN END (2 TIMOTHY 1:9; TITUS 1:2, AMONG OTHERS). SCIENCE TODAY WOULD THEREFORE BE INCLINED TO ACKNOWLEDGE THIS. HOWEVER, THE HYPOTHESIS OF THE CURVED, UNBOUNDED BUT FINITE SPACE COMES CLOSER TO THE BIBLICAL VIEW, AND THE BILLIONS OF LIGHTS MAY, IF THIS PERSPECTIVE FULLY PREVAILS, ONE DAY BE QUIETLY DISMISSED. THE VIEW OF THE EXPANDING OR CONTINUOUSLY EXPANDING UNIVERSE AND THE ALTERNATIVE VIEW OF THE CONTRACTING OR ALREADY COLLAPSING UNIVERSE SPACE, WHICH COMES FROM...

THE SHIFT OF SPECTRAL LINES OF STARS AND STAR CLUSTERS (THE SHIFT OF RED LINES IN THE STAR SPECTRUM IS NOW EXPLAINED DIFFERENTLY) SEEMS TO STRANGELY ALIGN WITH THE IDEAS OF THE ANCIENT INDIANS, BABYLONIANS, AND CHINESE, WHO BELIEVED THAT THE WORLD IS A GIANT TURTLE, OR AN ELEPHANT, OR SOME OTHER LIVING BEING THAT BREATHES. PAUL ALSO EXPLAINS, AS WE HAVE SEEN, THAT THE UNIVERSE IS A LIVING ENTITY, A BEING THAT GROWS, IN WHICH SOMETHING GROWS, AND THAT IS IN CHRIST. THEREFORE, THE LIVING, BREATHING UNIVERSE IS MUCH CLOSER TO THE TRUTH THAN THE RIGID INFINITE CONCEPT OF SPACE IN PREVIOUS SCIENCE. PAUL'S ASSERTION THAT THE UNIVERSE IS IN CHRIST AND THUS IN GOD IS, BY THE WAY, THE STRONGEST ARGUMENT FOR UNIVERSAL RECONCILIATION. ALL ENEMIES OF CHRIST AND GOD ARE, WITHOUT KNOWING IT, IN CHRIST AND IN GOD!

WIDTH, LENGTH, DEPTH, HEIGHT IN THE MIDDLE OF THE LETTER TO THE EPHESIANS, RIGHT IN THE MIDST OF A PARTICULARLY REVERENT AND INSPIRED PRAYER OF WORSHIP BY THE APOSTLE PAUL, WE SUDDENLY ENCOUNTER THE DESIRE THAT THE BELIEVERS AND SAINTS MAY GRASP WHAT THE WIDTH, LENGTH, DEPTH, AND HEIGHT ARE. ONE INEVITABLY ASKS: OF WHAT? THESE MEASUREMENTS MUST PERTAIN TO AN OBJECT. THE CONTEXT THEN REVEALS THAT IT IS ABOUT LOVE. THE COMPANION BIBLE READS THIS VERSE AS FOLLOWS: "THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO FULLY GRASP WITH ALL THE SAINTS WHAT IS THE WIDTH, LENGTH, DEPTH, AND HEIGHT OF LOVE, NAMELY THE LOVE OF GOD IN CHRIST." IT FURTHER EXPLAINS: "THIS LOVE IS BOUNDLESS IN WIDTH, ENDLESS IN LENGTH, BOTTOMLESS IN DEPTH, UNFATHOMABLE, AND IMMEASURABLE IN HEIGHT." THIS IS UNDOUBTEDLY CORRECT AND PROVIDES GREAT COMFORT AND EDIFICATION FOR US HUMANS. HOWEVER, THERE MUST BE SOMETHING MORE AND MORE PRECISE IN THE FACT THAT EXACTLY FOUR MEASUREMENTS ARE GIVEN, CORRESPONDING TO FOUR DIMENSIONS. THE PURPOSE OF EDIFYING COMFORT WOULD HAVE BEEN ACHIEVED IF THE HOLY SPIRIT HAD WRITTEN: THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO FULLY GRASP WITH ALL THE SAINTS HOW INEXHAUSTIBLE (OR IMMEASURABLE) THE LOVE OF GOD IS. BUT THAT IS NOT WHAT HE DID HERE (IN 1 CORINTHIANS 13 WE READ THAT LOVE NEVER ENDS AND IN ROMANS 11:33 THAT HIS WAYS ARE UNSEARCHABLE), INSTEAD, HE PROVIDED FOUR MEASUREMENTS. THE NEW JERUSALEM COMING DOWN FROM HEAVEN IS STILL MEASURED IN THREE DIMENSIONS ACCORDING TO LENGTH, WIDTH, AND HEIGHT (REVELATION 21:16), ALTHOUGH IT IS ALREADY INCOMPREHENSIBLE TO US HOW A 77.

A GIANT CITY CAN BE AS HIGH AS IT IS WIDE AND LONG, AND THIS CANNOT BE EXPLAINED MERELY BY 'SKYSCRAPERS.' IT SEEMS TO BE A MATTER OF LIVING IN OVERLAPPING SPHERES. HOWEVER, FOUR FUNDAMENTAL DIRECTIONS ARE INDICATED HERE, PARTICULARLY HEIGHT AND DEPTH CAPTIVATE US. IN OUR CURRENT EXPERIENCE OF THREE-DIMENSIONAL SPACE, HEIGHT AND DEPTH ARE EQUIVALENT, REPRESENTING THE THIRD DIMENSION. ONLY THREE VERTICAL LINES CAN INTERSECT AT A POINT, WITH THE THIRD BEING EITHER HEIGHT OR DEPTH, OFTEN REFERRED TO AS HEIGHT. YET, HERE HEIGHT AND DEPTH ARE PRESENTED AS TWO FUNDAMENTALLY DIFFERENT EXTENSIONS. JUST AS LENGTH IS DIFFERENT FROM WIDTH, HEIGHT IS SOMETHING ELSE ENTIRELY FROM DEPTH. IT IS IMPORTANT TO CLARIFY THIS, AS OUR NATURAL UNDERSTANDING AND FEELING PERCEIVE DEPTH MERELY AS A LINEAR EXTENSION OF HEIGHT DOWNWARDS, AND HEIGHT AS A LINEAR EXTENSION OF DEPTH UPWARDS. HOWEVER, HEIGHT AND DEPTH ARE NOT FUNDAMENTALLY RELATED OR IDENTICAL; THEY ARE ESSENTIALLY DIFFERENT, SEPARATED NOT ONLY BY THE PLANE OF LENGTH AND WIDTH. IF WE EXTEND THE DEPTH IN WHICH WE LIVE LINEARLY, WE ARRIVE AT TWO BILLION LIGHT-YEARS AND ALL THE OTHER SIGNIFICANT MISCONCEPTIONS AND CONSTRUCTS OF ASTRONOMY. HOWEVER, IF WE RECOGNIZE THAT THERE EXISTS A TREMENDOUS FUNDAMENTAL DIFFERENCE BETWEEN HEIGHT AND DEPTH, WITH HEIGHT STANDING AS THE FOURTH VERTICAL AT THE POINT, YET REMAINING INVISIBLE AND INCOMPREHENSIBLE TO US, WE REALIZE THAT THE APOSTLE PAUL INTENDS TO TEACH THE SAINTS ABOUT FOUR-DIMENSIONAL ETERNAL THINKING. NOTABLY, IT DOES NOT SAY THAT WE SHOULD RECOGNIZE THE WIDTH, LENGTH, DEPTH, AND HEIGHT OF LOVE, ALTHOUGH THE CONTEXT SUGGESTS THIS ADDITION. IT DOES NOT STATE THIS BECAUSE, IN SPIRITUAL GROWTH, WE NATURALLY REACH A POINT WHERE THE FOURTH DIMENSION LITERALLY BECOMES CLEAR TO US. IN OTHER WORDS, WE ARE ABLE TO JUDGE SPIRITUALLY WHERE WE PREVIOUSLY COULD ONLY JUDGE AND SEE IN A SOULISH-NATURAL, I.E., THREE-DIMENSIONAL MANNER (1 COR. 2:14). TO JUDGE SPIRITUALLY MEANS TO CONSTANTLY ACCOUNT FOR THE INVISIBLE REALITY, SUBORDINATING VISIBILITY TO IT. FAITH IS THE ORGAN FOR THIS, BUT IT MUST FIRST GROW UNTIL THE LOVE OF GOD IS POURED INTO OUR HEARTS THROUGH THE HOLY SPIRIT WHO HAS BEEN GIVEN TO US. WITH THE LOVE OF GOD, WE POSSESS THE FOUR DIMENSIONS WITHIN US AND CAN MOVE IN SPIRIT WITHIN THE FOUR-DIMENSIONAL UNIVERSE, WHICH WE COULD NOT DO BEFORE.

THIS IS THE GREAT TRUTH OF SCRIPTURE THAT ONE CAN ONLY RECOGNIZE AFTER HAVING BEEN RECOGNIZED ONESELF (1 CORINTHIANS 8:3). FIRST, WE MUST BE RECOGNIZED AS THREE-DIMENSIONAL BEINGS IN A FOUR-DIMENSIONAL WAY, MEANING WE MUST BE TOUCHED AND TRANSFORMED IN OUR ESSENCE; ONLY THEN CAN WE TRULY UNDERSTAND WHAT WIDTH, LENGTH, DEPTH, AND HEIGHT ARE. NOT ONLY DO WE GRASP THE DIMENSIONS OF GOD'S SACRIFICIAL AND SAVING LOVE IN CHRIST, BUT WE ALSO UNDERSTAND THE TRUTH THAT THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE IS AN EXPRESSION OF GOD'S LOVE, A CREATION OF LOVE OR AN EXTENSION OF LOVE, THUS HAVING A PURPOSE OF LOVE AND UNDERGOING A DEVELOPMENT OF LOVE TOWARDS A GOAL OF LOVE. FOUR SPATIAL DIMENSIONS ARE NECESSARY FOR THIS UNDERSTANDING. THEY ARE SUFFICIENT; OTHERWISE, THE HOLY SPIRIT WOULD HAVE REVEALED MORE THROUGH PAUL IN THIS PASSAGE FROM EPHESIANS. INITIALLY, THIS UNDERSTANDING IS PRESENT IN EVERY BELIEVER, BUT TO FULLY COMPREHEND, OUR INNER BEING MUST FIRST BE STRENGTHENED BY THE INFLUX OF THE SPIRIT UNTIL IT BECOMES CONSCIOUS THAT CHRIST DWELLS IN OUR HEARTS THROUGH FAITH. HERE, AN INTERESTING GROWTH PROCESS OF THE INNER LIFE IS DEPICTED. THE INNER PERSON IS THE SPIRITUAL BEING WITHIN US, THE NEW CREATION. IT STARTS SMALL AND GROWS THROUGH THE INFLUX OF THE WORD OF GOD. ONCE IT REACHES A CERTAIN MATURITY, WE RECOGNIZE THAT THIS INNER PERSON IS NOTHING OTHER THAN CHRIST HIMSELF IN US, THE HOPE OF GLORY; PREVIOUSLY, WE ONLY REFERRED TO IT AS FAITH OR SPIRITUAL LIFE WITHIN US. HOWEVER, ONCE THE INNER LIFE TAKES SHAPE, ALLOWING US TO RECOGNIZE CHRIST WITHIN IT, WE ARE ALSO CAPABLE OF RECOGNIZING FOUR DIMENSIONS. NOT BEFORE. WHEN WE HEAR THESE BIBLICAL PREREQUISITES FOR GRASPING THE FOUR DIMENSIONS OF GOD'S LOVE IN THE UNIVERSE, WE ARE NO LONGER SURPRISED BY THE SIGNIFICANT ERRORS OF SCIENTISTS, AS THEY APPROACH THEIR OBSERVATIONS WITH ONLY INTELLECTUAL TRAINING, LACKING AN INITIAL INNER PERSON OF FAITH, LET ALONE A DEVELOPED SPIRITUAL INNER PERSON. OUR BIBLICAL EXPLANATIONS CAN ONLY BE GRASPED BY THOSE WHO KNOW CHRIST DWELLING IN THEIR HEARTS THROUGH FAITH. WE HAVE ALREADY DISTINGUISHED HEIGHT AS SOMETHING SPECIAL, AS THE FOURTH DIMENSION, SEPARATE FROM THE OTHER THREE: WIDTH, LENGTH, AND DEPTH, WHICH ARE NATURALLY KNOWN TO US. THIS COMPOSITION OF THREE AND ONE IS ALSO REFLECTED ELSEWHERE: WE HAVE FOUR GOSPELS, THREE OF WHICH ARE SIMILAR, WHILE ONE, THE GOSPEL OF JOHN, HAS A UNIQUE CHARACTER, A DIRECTION OF HEIGHT, BRINGING FORTH THE SON OF GOD. WE HAVE FOUR CARDINAL DIRECTIONS.

AMONG THEM IS THE EAST, FROM WHICH THE LIGHT RISES. NATURALLY, WE MOVE ON A HORIZONTAL PLANE. WE HUMANS GO BACK AND FORTH IN THE MULTITUDE OF OUR PATHS (ISAIAH 57:10). MOVEMENT IN A VERTICAL DIRECTION IS MUCH RARER AND ALWAYS STRICTLY LIMITED, WHEREAS HORIZONTAL MOVEMENT IN WIDTH AND LENGTH IS PRACTICALLY UNRESTRICTED AND LIMITLESS. WE TRAVERSE THE VASTNESS OF THE EARTH AND ITS SEAS. HOWEVER, THIS DOES NOT SATISFY HUMANITY. WE ALSO DRILL DOWNWARDS AND STRIVE UPWARDS. THE WELL-KNOWN LONGING FOR THE VASTNESS, WANDERLUST, IS MERELY A POOR SUBSTITUTE FOR THE LONGING FOR HEIGHT OR THE HOMESICKNESS FOR ABOVE. AS EASY AS MOVEMENT IN WIDTH AND LENGTH IS, IT BECOMES DIFFICULT AS SOON AS WE WANT TO MOVE DOWNWARDS OR UPWARDS. NO MATTER HOW HIGH THE MOUNTAINS REACH, PEOPLE CLIMB THEM, DRIVEN BY AN INEXPLICABLE URGE TO LOOK DOWN UPON THE SURFACE OF THE EARTH FROM ABOVE. THE PSALMIST LIFTS HIS EYES TO THE MOUNTAINS (PSALM 121). HE NO LONGER EXPECTS HELP FROM THE VASTNESS, FROM HORIZONTAL MOVEMENT, BUT ONLY FROM VERTICAL MOVEMENT, FROM ABOVE. THE MODERN PERSON, WITH THEIR INCREASINGLY INTENSE SELF-REDEMPTION RELIGION CALLED SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY, WITH THEIR TOWER OF BABEL IN THESE END TIMES, IS ALREADY REACHING CONSIDERABLE HEIGHTS, INTO THE STRATOSPHERE WITH AIRPLANES, MISSILES, AND BALLOONS. YET, IT IS PRECISELY THE TECHNICAL PERSON WHO BECOMES AWARE OF THE PECULIARITIES OF HEIGHT, AS IT REQUIRES LOUD, EXPENSIVE MACHINES OF THE HIGHEST POWER TO ASCEND JUST A FEW KILOMETERS. ONCE THE DEVIL'S OIL FROM THE DEPTHS OF THE EARTH IS EXHAUSTED, HUMANITY, ALONG WITH ITS MACHINES, SINKS BACK DOWN TO ITS EARTHLY LEVEL AND ITS WIDTH AND LENGTH, TO WHICH IT HAS BEEN BOUND SINCE THE FALL. TO EXPLAIN THIS, THE MEDICINE MEN OF THE RELIGION OF REASON, KNOWN AS SCIENCE, INVENTED THE MYTH OF GRAVITY. IN THEIR CONCEPTION AND TEACHING, THE EARTH IS A LARGE MASSIVE SPHERE OF STONE, EARTH, AND WATER, WITH A STILL MOLTEN METAL CORE INSIDE. SUCH A GIANT SPHERE, WHICH ALSO ROTATES QUICKLY, MUST EXERT A GRAVITATIONAL FORCE THAT IS STRONGER THAN THE CENTRIFUGAL FORCE THAT IS ALSO PRESENT. THE SUN, MOON, AND OTHER PLANETS ALSO POSSESS THIS MYSTERIOUS GRAVITATIONAL FORCE BECAUSE THEY TOO ARE LARGE OR EVEN LARGER SPHERES, AND THE STRENGTH OF THIS GRAVITATIONAL FORCE IS RELATED TO MASS. THE GRAVITATIONAL FORCE OF THE GREAT SUN IS RESPONSIBLE FOR KEEPING THE PLANETS, INCLUDING SUPPOSEDLY OUR EARTH, FROM JUMPING OUT OF THEIR ORBITS, BUT RATHER NICELY ORBITING AROUND THE SUN.

ORBITING. IF THE ROCKETS ARE FAST ENOUGH, THEY CAN OVERCOME THIS GRAVITATIONAL PULL AND TRAVEL INTO THE EMPTY SPACE UNTIL THEY REACH A POINT WHERE THE EARTH'S GRAVITY IS PRACTICALLY ZERO. AT THAT POINT, THESE ROCKETS WOULD FLOAT IN THE VOID AND ORBIT THE EARTH JUST LIKE THE MOON. TODAY, THERE ARE SERIOUS PLANS TO BUILD SUCH ARTIFICIAL MOONS IN THE EAST AND WEST, INTENDING TO USE THEM AS SPACE STATIONS FOR FUTURE MISSIONS TO THE PLANETS. SPACE RESEARCH SOCIETIES ARE ALREADY WIDESPREAD, WITH THEIR MEDICAL EXPERTS THOROUGHLY STUDYING THE HUMAN BODY'S ABILITY TO ENDURE SPACE TRAVEL. NEWSPAPERS FREQUENTLY SPARK HOPE THAT THIS WILL BECOME A REALITY IN JUST A FEW YEARS. HOWEVER, PROFESSOR PICCARD, ONE OF THE BOLDEST DEEP-SEA DIVERS AND HIGH-ALTITUDE BALLOONISTS, HAS CAST A SIGNIFICANT SHADOW OVER THESE LOFTY DREAMS AND HOPES. HE EXPRESSED HIMSELF IN THE SPRING OF 1955 IN VENICE AS 'SURPRISINGLY PESSIMISTIC' ABOUT THE PROSPECTS OF FUTURE SPACE TRAVEL AND THE POSSIBILITIES OF 'INTERPLANETARY TRAFFIC.' THIS REMARKABLY HONEST SCIENTIST STATED, 'AFTER THOROUGHLY STUDYING THE ENTIRE PROBLEM, I HAVE COME TO THE CONCLUSION THAT INTERPLANETARY TRAFFIC IS LIKELY TO BE IMPOSSIBLE. I KNOW THAT THIS PROVOKES MANY RESEARCHERS AND SCIENTIFIC COLLEAGUES AND THAT IT IS NOT WELL RECEIVED, AS THIS ASSERTION DESTROYS AN OLD DREAM OF HUMANITY. BUT I HAVE STUDIED THE PHYSICAL FORCES OF THE STRATOSPHERE IN DEPTH AND MUST SAY THAT THE HUMAN PHYSICAL AND SCIENTIFIC LAWS SEEM LIKE CHILD'S PLAY AGAINST THE FORCES OF SPACE.' PROFESSOR PICCARD DOES NOT DOUBT THAT UNMANNED ROCKETS AND, 'WITH SACRIFICES,' ALSO MANNED ONES CAN VENTURE INTO SPACE. HE ALSO BELIEVES IT IS POSSIBLE FOR A ROCKET TO ORBIT THE MOON AND THEN RETURN TO EARTH. HOWEVER, HE CLAIMS THAT NO HUMAN, WITH THEIR INADEQUATE EQUIPMENT, COULD ACTUALLY PENETRATE INTO THE 'DEEPER SPACE' AND RETURN ALIVE TO EARTH. 'I HAVE EXAMINED THE FIVE- AND EIGHT-LAYER SPACE SUITS AND STUDIED THE VARIOUS DANGERS THAT THE HUMAN ORGANISM WILL FACE AT ALTITUDES OVER 35,000 METERS AND IN THE WEIGHTLESSNESS OF SPACE. FROM A SCIENTIST'S PERSPECTIVE, I CONSIDER THESE SPACE SUITS IMPOSSIBLE AND SO COMPLICATED THAT THEY WILL ONLY PARTIALLY WITHSTAND THE CONCENTRATED FORCES OF THE STRATOSPHERE AND SPACE. THERE ARE ALMOST CERTAINLY PHYSICAL AND CHEMICAL FACTORS...

THAT WE DO NOT KNOW AND WHICH CREATE A GAP IN OUR COMPLICATED CALCULATIONS AND PROTECTIVE MEASURES. I ALSO DO NOT BELIEVE THAT THE HUMAN MIND CAN SOLVE ALL, LET'S SAY, SCIENTIFIC PROBLEMS OF SPACE. HUMAN MEANS MAY SIMPLY NOT BE SUFFICIENT TO CONQUER THE FORCES OF THE UNIVERSE! IN RESPONSE TO A QUESTION FROM AN ITALIAN CORRESPONDENT ABOUT WHETHER HE EXPECTED A SERIES OF DISASTERS IN THE ATTEMPTS TO FINALLY CONQUER THE STRATOSPHERE AND VENTURE INTO SPACE, PROFESSOR AUGUSTE PICCARD STATED THAT THIS COULD NOT BE RULED OUT, INDEED IT WAS EVEN LIKELY. FOR HIM, IT WAS CLEAR THAT THE 'SPACE PIONEERS' WOULD NOT SEE THEIR EARTHLY HOME AGAIN AND WOULD RETURN TO EARTH ONLY AS DEAD AND CAUTIONARY WITNESSES, HAVING NOT DARED TO CONFRONT THE GREAT UNKNOWN. HOWEVER, PETRO VECCI, A CORRESPONDENT FROM MILAN, COUNTERED: 'THERE ARE DOZENS OF RENOWNED SCIENTISTS WHO CLAIM THE OPPOSITE, SAYING THAT A JOURNEY TO THE MOON OR EVEN MARS IS ALREADY TECHNICALLY POSSIBLE TODAY. THEY ALSO ASSERT THAT SOON A SATELLITE STATION WILL BE BUILT IN SPACE FOR EARTH, WHICH WILL THEN SERVE AS THE BASIS FOR THE ACTUAL ADVANCE INTO SPACE. ARE YOU SAYING THAT THESE CLAIMS AND ANNOUNCEMENTS LACK SCIENTIFIC FOUNDATION?' 'I WILL BE CAUTIOUS,' REPLIED PROFESSOR PICCARD. 'BUT ROCKET SCIENTISTS LIKE MR. WERNHER VON BRAUN ARE TOO MUCH OF THEORISTS FOR ME! THEY BECOME TOO FASCINATED BY THEIR TASK AND LOSE SIGHT OF THE UNRESOLVED PROBLEMS, LEADING THEM TO BELIEVE THEY HAVE EVERYTHING CLEAR FOR THE LAUNCH. I FEAR THAT ONE DAY THERE WILL BE TERRIBLE MISTAKES!' HERE A PROFESSOR HAS EXPRESSED AN INKLING OF WHAT HEIGHT IS. IT IS NOT JUST A STRAIGHT EXTENSION UPWARDS, AS WE CAN EXTEND IN WIDTH AND LENGTH, NOR IS IT MERELY OVERCOMING THE SO-CALLED GRAVITY THROUGH GREAT SPEED, BUT HEIGHT IS A FOURTH DIMENSION, AND SPACE TRAVEL MEANS ADVANCING INTO A HIGHER FORM OF EXISTENCE IN BODIES OF FLESH AND BLOOD AND WITH ONLY THREE-DIMENSIONAL CAPABILITIES. THEY WANT TO INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD IN FLESH AND BLOOD WITHOUT HAVING DIED AND BEEN REBORN FIRST, THE ANCIENT DREAM OF HUMANITY. AND WITH THAT, THEY WANT TO TEST GOD. PROF. PICCARD, THROUGH HIS PRACTICAL ASCENTS AND DESCENTS AND THE DANGERS HE HAS ENDURED, AS WELL AS THROUGH HIS FEAR OF GOD AND FAITH, HAS A STRONG INTUITION OF WHAT COULD BE IN THE HEIGHTS ABOVE THE EARTH.

TO BE RIGHT WITH HIS WARNINGS. JUST THINKING OF THE VAST ELECTRIC FIRE BELT THAT SEPARATES THE EARTH'S ATMOSPHERE FROM THE BEGINNING OF THE HEAVENLY WORLDS, REFERRED TO AS THE 'CIRCLING SWORD OF THE CHERUBIM' (GENESIS 3:24)! THE VERSE IN PROVERBS 25:3: 'HEAVEN IS HIGH AND THE EARTH IS DEEP, AND THE HEARTS OF KINGS ARE UNSEARCHABLE' REMAINS TRUE. IT DOES NOT MEAN THAT HEAVEN AND EARTH ARE BOTH INFINITE, BUT RATHER THAT WE HUMANS CAN NEVER EXPLORE THEIR HEIGHT AND DEPTH THROUGH EXPERIENCE AND OBSERVATION, AS WE CAN WITH THE LENGTH AND BREADTH OF THE EARTH. DEPTH IN THE GREEK TEXT IS 'BATHOS,' AND HEIGHT IS 'HYPSOS.' BOTH ARE OPPOSITES IN DIRECTION, INDICATING THEIR TOTAL ESSENTIAL DIFFERENCE. JUST AS THERE CAN BE NO LENGTH WITHOUT BREADTH (AND VICE VERSA), THERE CAN ALSO BE NO HEIGHT WITHOUT DEPTH AND VICE VERSA, AT LEAST FROM OUR PERSPECTIVE. UNDERSTANDING REQUIRES MATURITY. A CHILD DOES NOT COMPREHEND AS MUCH AS AN ADULT. WHEN WE REACH THE POINT OF GRASPING NOT ONLY THE BREADTH AND LENGTH BUT ALSO THE DEPTH AND HEIGHT OF GOD'S REVELATION, IT IS PROOF OF ADVANCED GROWTH. THOSE WHO CAN UNDERSTAND THAT THE DEPTHS IN OUR LIVES ARE THE NECESSARY COUNTERBALANCE TO THE HEIGHTS, THAT HEIGHT MUST FIRST BE EXPERIENCED AND RECOGNIZED IN REPENTANCE, SUBMISSION, AND HUMILITY AS DEPTH, HAVE GRASPED THE VERTICAL MOVEMENT OF GOD'S LOVE. 'IF YOU DO NOT DARE TO VENTURE INTO THE DEPTHS OF YOUR OWN HEART, YOU WILL NEVER BE CARRIED TO THE HEIGHTS OF GOD'S HEART.' FROM THE BEGINNING OF SCRIPTURE, DEPTH HAS BEEN ASSOCIATED WITH DARKNESS OR BEING 'COVERED.' ADDITIONALLY, DEPTH IS AN ESSENCE. ACCORDING TO JOB 28:4, IT SPEAKS (OF WISDOM): 'IT IS NOT IN ME, AND THE SEA SAYS, IT IS NOT WITH ME.' IN HABAKKUK 3:10: 'THE DEEP GAVE FORTH ITS VOICE; IT LIFTED ITS HANDS TO THE HEIGHT.' IN PROVERBS 3:20: 'BY HIS KNOWLEDGE, THE DEPTHS BROKE FORTH...' THIS DEPTH OR DEPTHS ACTUALLY SIGNIFY IN HEBREW A DEEP, ROARING MASS OF WATER. WATER IS ALWAYS A SIGN OF MOVING LIFE AT A CERTAIN LEVEL. WE READ OF THE DEPTHS OF THE SEA, THE DEPTHS OF GOD, THE DEPTHS OF SATAN, THE DEPTH OF RICHES. ALL THIS INDICATES THAT DEPTH IS SOMETHING ALIVE, THAT CAN HEAR, THAT CAN SPEAK, THAT CAN LIFT HANDS TO THE HEIGHT AND THUS RELATE TO ITS COUNTERPART, THE HEIGHT. THERE WAS A TIME WHEN THE DEPTHS DID NOT EXIST; WISDOM WAS ALREADY BORN THEN (PROVERBS 8:24). JONAH WAS IN THE DEPTHS, IN THE HEART OF THE SEAS (JONAH 2:4). FROM THIS DEPTH, THE PSALMIST OFTEN CRIES OUT TO GOD.

THE LORD JESUS HIMSELF THEN DESCENDED INTO THE DEPTHS, WHICH IS NOTABLY REFERRED TO IN EPHESIANS 4:10 AS 'THE LOWER PARTS OF THE EARTH' (OR: BENEATH THE EARTH). DEPTH HAS BELONGED TO THE EARTH SINCE GENESIS 1:2 AND FOLLOWING! FOR THE SEA AND ITS DEPTHS ARE INDEED BOTH ABOVE AND BELOW THE EARTH. HEIGHT IS ABOVE THE EARTH. THESE CONCLUSIONS ARE EXCEEDINGLY IMPORTANT. HEIGHT AND DEPTH ARE PART OF THE THREE-TIERED UNIVERSE OF THE BIBLE, RELATING TO THE DIVINE ORDER OF INTERRELATION AND HIERARCHY IN THE COSMOS. IN THE MATHEMATICIAN'S COORDINATE SYSTEM, DEPTH REPRESENTS THE DIRECTION OF NEGATIVE VALUES, WHILE HEIGHT REPRESENTS THE POSITIVE. 'WHATEVER JEHOVAH PLEASES, HE DOES IN THE HEAVENS AND ON THE EARTH, IN THE SEAS AND IN ALL DEPTHS' (PSALM 135:6). '... THE DEPTHS TREMBLED' (PSALM 77:16). DEPTH IS ASSOCIATED WITH THE FALL, THE ORIGINAL FALL, AS WE CAN GLEAN FROM GENESIS 1:2. WHEN HEIGHT INFLUENCES DEPTH, IT FIRST MANIFESTS AS LIGHT, WHICH INITIATES SEPARATION OR JUDGMENT. 'LET THERE BE LIGHT!' HEIGHT IS NOT ONLY DIRECTLY OPPOSED TO DEPTH; IT IS THE SPACE WHERE THE SANCTUARY IS AND WHERE GOD'S THRONE IS, WHERE GOD DWELLS, FOR HE DWELLS IN THE HEIGHT ACCORDING TO ISAIAH 57:15 AND OTHER PASSAGES. GOD IS ALSO IN THE DEPTHS, BUT HE DOES NOT DWELL THERE. MAJESTY IS IN THE HEIGHT (HEBREWS 1:3). HEIGHT IS ALSO A BEING THAT CAN BECOME ACTIVE. ACCORDING TO ROMANS 8:39, NEITHER HEIGHT NOR DEPTH NOR ANY OTHER CREATURE CAN SEPARATE US FROM THE LOVE OF GOD, WHICH IS IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD. THE HOST OF THE HEIGHT WILL ONE DAY BE VISITED (ISAIAH 24:21). IN THE COPERNICAN SCIENTIFIC THREE-DIMENSIONAL INFINITE UNIVERSE, THE FOUR DIRECTIONS OR DIMENSIONS OF WIDTH, LENGTH, HEIGHT, AND DEPTH HAVE NO MEANING; IT GOES ENDLESSLY IN ALL DIRECTIONS. WHAT IS THERE TO GRASP OR COMPREHEND HERE? HIS DEFENDERS MIGHT SAY: WELL, JUST UNDERSTAND THAT GOD'S LOVE IS INFINITE LIKE OUR UNIVERSE. THAT IS ALWAYS SPIRITUALLY VALUABLE. THE SCRIPTURE DOES SAY: LOVE NEVER FAILS (LITERALLY: LOVE WILL NEVER BECOME VOID!). THIS IS TEMPORAL, NOT SPATIAL! IT IS ALWAYS THERE - IN ITS PLACE. BUT GOD'S WRATH IS ALSO THERE IN ITS PLACE, AND THUS WE ALREADY HAVE HEIGHT AND DEPTH. GOD'S LOVE IS ORDERED AND STRUCTURED; IT HAS DEPTH AND HEIGHT, LENGTH AND BREADTH, WHICH ARE DIFFERENT MANIFESTATIONS AND EXPERIENCES OF GOD'S LOVE FOR HIS CREATIONS. WE ARE TO LEARN TO DISTINGUISH AND COMPREHEND THESE. DEPTH IS GOD'S LOVE IN JUDGMENT, HEIGHT IS GOD'S LOVE IN GRACE, IN PEACE AND JOY, WIDTH AND LENGTH IS GOD'S LOVE IN THE LAW, IN PATIENCE.

AND PATIENCE, IN THE TIME WITHOUT AND UNDER THE LAW, WHEN GOD WAITED AND HAD PATIENCE... (1 PETER 3:20; ROMANS 3:25). FOR ALL PEOPLE, THE HEIGHT IS ABOVE THEM, ABOVE THE EARTH, AND THE DEPTH IS BELOW THEM, ON AND UNDER THE EARTH. HOWEVER, ON A GLOBE, THE DIRECTION OF DEPTH FOR US HERE WOULD BE THE DIRECTION OF HEIGHT FOR PEOPLE ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE 'GLOBE'! HEIGHT IS NOT A RELATIVE DIRECTION, BUT AN ABSOLUTE ONE, A UNIVERSALLY CONSISTENT DIRECTION UPWARDS. DEPTH IS THE SAME DOWNWARDS. HEIGHT IS THE DIRECTION TOWARDS THE CENTER, UPWARDS AND SIMULTANEOUSLY INWARDS. FOR WHERE THERE IS AN ABOVE, THERE IS ALSO AN INSIDE. AND WHERE THERE IS AN INSIDE, THERE IS ALSO AN ABOVE. PROOF? WHO WANTS TO AND CAN REFUTE THIS? THE LORD DWELLS IN THE HEIGHTS AND WITH THE BROKEN, HUMBLED SPIRIT, MEANING IN THE INNERMOST, IN THE CENTER OF THE HUMAN PERSONALITY CONSISTING OF THE THREE CONCENTRIC WORLDS OF BODY, SOUL, AND SPIRIT! THEREFORE, FOR HUMANS, GOING INWARD MEANS GOING UPWARDS, AND GOING OUTWARD MEANS GOING DOWNWARDS. AND IN THE UNIVERSE, GOING UPWARDS ALSO MEANS GOING INWARD! AND GOING DOWNWARDS ALSO MEANS GOING OUTWARD, AWAY FROM THE CENTER! IF A PERSON WANTS TO DEVELOP UPWARDS, THEY MUST INTERNALIZE THEMSELVES. DEPTH IS THE DIRECTION AWAY FROM THE CENTER AND THUS AWAY FROM HEIGHT, DOWNWARDS AND OUTWARD. LENGTH AND WIDTH REPRESENT MOVEMENT AT A CONSTANT DISTANCE FROM THE CENTER AROUND THE CENTER. THIS MOVEMENT ALONG THE CIRCULAR LINE AROUND A CENTER IS, BY NATURE, THE LEVEL OF EXISTENCE, THE WIDTH AND LENGTH OF THE SOUL IN THE BODY. ITS ELEMENT, AND THUS OUR ELEMENT, IS THE CIRCULAR MOVEMENT, THE BLOOD CIRCULATION, FOR THE SOUL IS IN THE BLOOD (DEUTERONOMY 12:23). THE MOVEMENT OF THE SPIRIT, ON THE OTHER HAND, IS THE VERTICAL OR UP-AND-DOWN MOVEMENT THAT RUNS PERPENDICULAR TO THE HORIZONTAL, TO THE WIDTH AND LENGTH. GOD IS SPIRIT, AND THE LORD IS THE SPIRIT (JOHN 4:24). HE CAME DOWN TO THE EARTH AND DESCENDED INTO THE LOWER PARTS OF THE EARTH AND ALSO ASCENDED ABOVE ALL HEAVENS. HE WAS THE SON OF MAN CONCEIVED BY THE SPIRIT, WHO HAD THE SPIRIT WITHOUT MEASURE. HENCE THE TREMENDOUS CAPACITY FOR ASCENT. ASCENSION AND HEAVENLY ASCENT PRESUPPOSE SPIRITUAL DOMINION! HOWEVER, THIS INITIALLY LEADS INTO 'DEPTHS OF SUFFERING'! WHERE THE SPIRIT IS ABSENT OR WHERE IT DOES NOT HAVE DOMINION, THERE ARE ONLY SOUL CYCLES; IT ONLY EVER GOES INTO THE EXPANSE OF A SURFACE OR A MATTER IN WIDTH AND LENGTH. UNDER THE LAW, THERE CAN ONLY EVER BE A LINEAR IMPROVEMENT ON THE SAME LEVEL. ONE CAN LEARN TO RECOGNIZE SIN, THAT IS, DEPTH, FOR DEPTH ALSO BELONGS TO THE EARTH. BUT ONLY THE POWER THAT COMES DOWN FROM ABOVE, THAT IS, THE SPIRIT OF GOD, LEADS UPWARDS.

LENGTH AND WIDTH REPRESENT MOVEMENT ALWAYS AT THE SAME DISTANCE FROM THE CENTER; THESE ARE THE PATHS ALONG WHICH THE NATURAL SELF CAN WALK. HOWEVER, THE NATURAL WAY FOR HUMANS TO ASCEND NO LONGER EXISTS SINCE THE CHERUBIM GUARD THE WAY TO THE TREE OF LIFE (THE PATH TO THE HEIGHTS) WITH THE FLAME OF THE FLASHING SWORD (GENESIS 3:24). AND SINCE ALL FLESH HAD COMPLETELY CORRUPTED ITS WAY ON EARTH, LENGTH AND WIDTH WERE ALSO DROWNED BY THE JUDGMENT WATERS OF THE FLOOD. THE PATHS TO THE HEIGHTS NOW LEAD THROUGH JUSTICE AND JUDGMENT. FOR JUSTICE AND JUDGMENT ARE, ACCORDING TO PSALM 89:15, THE FOUNDATION OR SUPPORTS OF HIS THRONE. THUS, ONE ASCENDS TOWARDS THE THRONE OF GOD, HEAVEN, TO THE RIGHTEOUSNESS THAT HOLDS BEFORE GOD. THE STRONGEST ROCKET CANNOT ACHIEVE THIS. WHOEVER DOES NOT UNDERSTAND AND HEED THE TOTAL ESSENTIAL DIFFERENCE OF THE UPWARD DIRECTION FROM ALL OTHER DIRECTIONS WILL ONLY GO IN LENGTH AND WIDTH WHEN THEY THINK THEY ARE GOING OR SEEING OR HEARING UPWARDS. FOR THE LORD DWELLS ON HIGH AND IN HIS SANCTUARY (ISAIAH 33:5; 57:15). THIS MEANS THAT ONE MUST FIRST KNOW THE LORD AS THE INHABITANT OF THE HEIGHTS AND RECEIVE PERMISSION AND EQUIPMENT FROM HIM IF ONE WISHES TO COMPREHEND THE HEIGHTS. HIS GLORY IS SEEN AT THE GREAT HEIGHT (SIRACH 43:1). SPACE AND TIME ARE INTERCONNECTED AS FUNCTIONS. ELOHIM IS THE (CREATOR) GOD OF SPACE, JEHOVAH THE (REDEEMER) GOD OF TIME, WHO REVEALS HIMSELF IN THE COURSE OF (TIME) HISTORY. TIME MUST CHANGE WITH THE EXPERIENCE OF SPACE AND VICE VERSA! WHOEVER WISHES TO ASCEND OR DESCEND MUST NECESSARILY LEAVE OUR EARTHLY SPACE-TIME PERCEPTION. FOR THE HIGHER ONE GOES, THAT IS, THE CLOSER TO THE CENTER, THE LESS SPACE THERE IS, OR: THE MORE SPACE IS COMPRESSED IN TERMS OF EXISTENTIAL CONDITIONS. CONVERSELY, THE FURTHER ONE IS FROM THE CENTER, THE GREATER THE ROLE THAT SPACE AND TIME (MATTER AND ENERGY) PLAY. A POINT IS IMMENSELY CONCENTRATED ENERGY, A VOID IS CREATIVELY APPLIED, EXTENDED ENERGY. (LET THERE BE!) THE FORMULA IS: TIME EQUALS LENGTH AND WIDTH (OR AREA), SPACE EQUALS DEPTH AND HEIGHT. THE PERSON OF OUR AGE, WITH THEIR FERVENT TECHNICAL RELIGION OF SELF-REDEMPTION, KNOWS OR AT LEAST SUSPECTS THAT OVERCOMING SPACE AND TIME MUST HAVE SOMETHING TO DO WITH HEIGHT AND THUS WITH CLOSENESS TO GOD AND DIVINITY. HENCE THE INTOXICATED JOY IN THE RACING OF CARS, IN THE SPEED RECORDS OF AIRPLANES. THE MODERN, THAT IS, UNREDEEMED PERSON STRIVES FOR AS MUCH SPACE (GOD) AS POSSIBLE.

TO BE ABLE TO ACCOMPLISH IN AS LITTLE TIME AS POSSIBLE (CHRIST). (REV. 12:12: THE DEVIL KNOWS THAT HE HAS LITTLE TIME!) WHAT IF THE RIGHT WAY WENT THE OTHER WAY AROUND: AS MUCH TIME AS POSSIBLE FOR AS LITTLE SPACE AS POSSIBLE? WHAT WE CALL PATIENCE! WHERE THE HIGHEST SPEED AND GREATEST CALM MEET, THERE IS SPACELESSNESS OR THE CENTER, AND THERE WILL 'NATURALLY' BE NO TIME ANYMORE! (REV. 10:6.) THE IMMENSE AND UNIQUE ASPECT OF GOD'S BECOMING HUMAN IS THE FACT THAT A MOVEMENT IN THE UNIVERSE HAS TAKEN PLACE FROM ABOVE TO BELOW (OR OUTWARD) AND FROM BELOW TO ABOVE (OR INWARD), A MOVEMENT RADIALLY FROM THE CENTER OUTWARD AND BACK AGAIN! THIS IS THE ONLY WAY THAT LEADS TO THE TRUTH OF LIFE FROM ABOVE AND WITHIN (WHICH IS ALWAYS THE SAME!). WHEN THE LORD CHRIST ASCENDED, HE PASSED THROUGH THE VARIOUS WORLDS ARRANGED CONCENTRICALLY AROUND THE CENTER, STRIPPING OFF THE PRINCIPALITIES AND POWERS OF THIS WORLD, PUBLICLY DISPLAYING THEM (COL. 2:15). THIS WAS AN ENORMOUS UPHEAVAL IN EACH OF THE HOLLOW-SPHERE WORLDS WHERE HE APPEARED DURING HIS ASCENT UPWARD AND INWARD. UNTIL THE LORD ARRIVED AT THE CENTER, IN THE CONCENTRATED SPACELESSNESS AND TIMELESSNESS, AND SAT DOWN AT THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD'S POWER. THE MOVEMENTS IN LENGTH AND BREADTH AND IN HEIGHT AND DEPTH ARE ALWAYS RELATED TO A COMMON CENTER. FROM THESE FOUR DIRECTIONS OF MOVEMENT, THE SPACE OF A SPHERE OR AN EGG IS ALWAYS FORMED AROUND A CENTER. HEIGHT WOULD ALWAYS MEAN FOR US THE SAME AS THE RADIUS OF A CIRCLE OR A SPHERE AND THEREFORE WOULD MEAN DIRECTION INWARD! AND DEPTH WOULD ONLY BE POSSIBLE IN RELATION TO A CENTER AND WOULD MEAN 'OUTWARD' OR 'TO THE OUTSIDE'. IT IS HIGHLY SIGNIFICANT THAT IN THE SCIENTIFIC WORLDVIEW, PEOPLE HAVE THE CENTER BENEATH THEM, UNDER THEIR FEET, WHILE THE DEPTH IS ABOVE THEM. THAT IS THEIR UPSIDE-DOWN WORLD. THERE ARE TWO TYPES OF KNOWLEDGE OF CHRIST ACCORDING TO SCRIPTURE: THE CHRIST ACCORDING TO THE FLESH AND THE ONE NOT ACCORDING TO THE FLESH (2 COR. 5:16). THE CHRIST ACCORDING TO THE FLESH IS THE JESUS WHO WALKED ON EARTH FROM BETHLEHEM TO GOLGOTHA, I.E., UNTIL HIS EXALTATION. THE CHRIST NOT ACCORDING TO THE FLESH IS THE ONE WHO DESCENDED AND ASCENDED. THEREFORE, WHOEVER CAN COMPREHEND HEIGHT AND DEPTH HAS MORE THAN THE CHRIST ACCORDING TO THE FLESH, THE CHRIST OF THE GOSPELS. THE UNDERSTANDING AND GRASPING OF HEIGHT AND DEPTH GOES SO FAR THAT WE ARE CRUCIFIED WITH HIM, BURIED WITH HIM, RAISED WITH HIM, AND WITH HIM INTO THE HEAVENLY...

THERE ARE BELIEVERS WHO UNDERSTAND CHRIST IN A LIMITED WAY, RECOGNIZING HIS CRUCIFIXION, WHICH REPRESENTS THE BREADTH AND LENGTH OF HIS SACRIFICE. THEN, THERE ARE THOSE WHO ALSO GRASP HIS RESURRECTION, MEANING HIS RETURN TO THIS EARTH, WHICH SIGNIFIES THE DEPTH OF HIS EXPERIENCE BETWEEN DEATH AND RESURRECTION. FINALLY, SOME COMPREHEND THE GLORIFIED CHRIST AS HE APPEARED TO THE APOSTLE PAUL, REPRESENTING THE HEIGHT, OR THE FOURTH DIMENSION OF FAITH. EACH PERSON RECEIVES THIS UNDERSTANDING AS IT IS GIVEN TO THEM FROM ABOVE. THE APOSTLE PAUL WISHES FOR THE 'SAINTS AND FAITHFUL IN CHRIST JESUS' IN EPHESUS TO BE FILLED WITH THE FULLNESS OF GOD, ENABLING THEM TO FULLY GRASP THE BREADTH, LENGTH, DEPTH, AND HEIGHT OF GOD'S LOVE AND THE UNIVERSE. THIS IS A GOAL FOR SPIRITUAL GROWTH IN CHRIST JESUS!

THE UPPER FLOOR

GOD'S WORD ABOUT HEAVEN AND THE HEAVENS

WE BEGIN WITH A SELECTION OF BIBLE VERSES ABOUT HEAVEN; IT IS NEITHER POSSIBLE NOR NECESSARY TO INCLUDE THEM ALL HERE. GOD REFERRED TO THE EXPANSE (THE FIRMAMENT) AS HEAVEN (IN PLURAL). GENESIS 1:8. AND THE WINDOWS OF HEAVEN WERE OPENED. GENESIS 7:11. A LADDER WAS SET ON THE EARTH, AND ITS TOP REACHED TO HEAVEN. GENESIS 28:12. FROM ONE END OF HEAVEN TO THE OTHER END OF HEAVEN. DEUTERONOMY 4:32. BEHOLD, TO JEHOVAH YOUR GOD BELONG THE HEAVENS AND THE HEAVEN OF HEAVENS, THE EARTH AND ALL THAT IS IN IT. DEUTERONOMY 10:14. THE FOUNDATIONS OF HEAVEN TREMBLED AND SHOOK BECAUSE HE WAS ANGRY. 2 SAMUEL 22:8. THE HEAVENS AND THE HEAVEN OF HEAVENS CANNOT CONTAIN YOU... 1 KINGS 8:27. THE FIRE OF GOD FELL FROM HEAVEN... JOB 1:16. BEHOLD, HE PUTS NO TRUST IN HIS SAINTS, AND THE HEAVENS ARE NOT CLEAN IN HIS SIGHT... JOB 15:15.

GOD TRAVERSES THE CIRCLE OF THE HEAVENS. JOB 22:14. THE PILLARS OF HEAVEN SHAKE AND ARE TERRIFIED AT HIS REBUKE. JOB 26:11. DO YOU KNOW THE LAWS OF THE HEAVENS OR CAN YOU DETERMINE THEIR RULE OVER THE EARTH? JOB 38:33. WHEN I LOOK AT YOUR HEAVENS, THE WORK OF YOUR FINGERS... PSALM 8:3. THE HEAVENS DECLARE THE GLORY OF GOD, AND THE FIRMAMENT PROCLAIMS THE WORK OF HIS HANDS... PSALM 19:1. FROM THE END OF THE HEAVENS COMES THE RISING OF THE SUN, AND ITS CIRCUIT TO ITS ENDS... PSALM 19:6. FOR AS HIGH AS THE HEAVENS ARE ABOVE THE EARTH, SO GREAT IS HIS GOODNESS TOWARD THOSE WHO FEAR HIM... PSALM 103:11. HE STRETCHES OUT THE HEAVENS LIKE A TENT. PSALM 104:2. PRAISE HIM, O HEAVENS OF HEAVENS, AND YOU WATERS THAT ARE ABOVE THE HEAVENS... PSALM 148:4. AND ALL THE HOST OF HEAVEN MELTS AWAY, AND THE HEAVENS WILL BE ROLLED UP LIKE A SCROLL, AND ALL THEIR HOST WILL FALL DOWN, LIKE LEAVES FROM THE VINE AND LIKE WITHERED FIGS FROM THE FIG TREE... ISAIAH 34:4. THUS SAYS THE LORD: THE HEAVENS ARE MY THRONE... ISAIAH 66:1. THEREFORE THE HEAVENS ABOVE WILL GROW DARK, BECAUSE I HAVE SPOKEN, I HAVE PURPOSED, AND I WILL NOT RELENT NOR TURN BACK... JEREMIAH 4:28. AND WHEN I EXTINGUISH YOU, I WILL COVER THE HEAVENS AND DARKEN THEIR STARS... EZEKIEL 32:7. HE WHO BUILDS HIS UPPER CHAMBERS IN THE HEAVENS AND FOUNDS HIS VAULT OVER THE EARTH... AMOS 9:6. AND THEN HE WILL SEND OUT HIS ANGELS AND GATHER HIS ELECT FROM THE FOUR WINDS, FROM THE ENDS OF THE EARTH TO THE ENDS OF HEAVEN... MARK 13:27. ONE WHO WAS CAUGHT UP TO THE THIRD HEAVEN... 2 CORINTHIANS 12:2. BECAUSE OF THE HOPE RESERVED FOR YOU IN THE HEAVENS. COLOSSIANS 1:5. AND TO WAIT FOR HIS SON FROM THE HEAVENS... 1 THESSALONIANS 1:10. SINCE WE HAVE A GREAT HIGH PRIEST WHO HAS PASSED THROUGH THE HEAVENS, JESUS, THE SON OF GOD... HEBREWS 4:14.

AND THE SKY VANISHED LIKE A SCROLL BEING ROLLED UP...

REVELATION 6:14. AND THERE AROSE A BATTLE IN HEAVEN... REVELATION 12:7. AND IT OPENED ITS MOUTH TO BLASPHEME AGAINST GOD, TO SLANDER HIS NAME AND HIS DWELLING, AND THOSE WHO DWELL IN HEAVEN... REVELATION 13:6.

WATER ABOVE AND BELOW THE FIRMAMENT. IN THE BEGINNING, GOD (OR: DEITIES) CREATED THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH. THUS BEGINS THE BIBLE. IT CONTINUES THAT THE EARTH WAS 'FORMLESS AND EMPTY.' MANY INTERPRETERS HAVE RIGHTLY POINTED OUT THAT SOMETHING MONUMENTAL MUST HAVE HAPPENED BETWEEN THE FIRST AND SECOND VERSES, A REBELLION AND FALL OF MIGHTY POWERS AGAINST GOD, A HEAVENLY STORM THAT THE LEGENDS OF NATIONS STILL SPEAK OF. MYSTICS BELIEVED IT WAS THE FALL AND REBELLION OF SATAN. IN ANY CASE, ISAIAH 45:18 CONFIRMS THAT GOD DID NOT CREATE THE EARTH TO BE EMPTY. IT MUST HAVE BECOME DESOLATE DUE TO SOME SEVERE INCIDENT, A BATTLE, BURIED UNDER A DEEP, DARK, ROARING MASS OF WATER, THE PRIMEVAL SEA (LITERALLY). OVER IT HOVERED THE SPIRIT OF GOD OR THE BREATH OF AIR, AS BOTH ARE REFERRED TO IN HEBREW AS 'RUACH.' THIS MEANS THAT BESIDES THE WATERS, THERE WAS STILL PLENTY OF AIR OR GAS IN THE UNIVERSE. AND NOW GOD BEGINS THE WORK OF RE-CREATION. FIRST, THE LIGHT, THEN THE SEPARATION BETWEEN LIGHT AND DARKNESS (STILL WITHOUT THE SUN), AND THEN THE FIRMAMENT OR EXPANSE IN THE MIDST OF THE WATERS, WHICH WAS THEN CALLED HEAVEN. IN VERSE 2, WE ARE INFORMED THAT ONLY THE EARTH WAS 'FORMLESS AND EMPTY.' NOTHING IS SAID ABOUT HEAVEN. HOWEVER, THE HEAVENS BETWEEN THE WATERS THAT FILL THE EARTH ARE BEING RENEWED. ONE CAN CONCLUDE THAT THE FIRST HEAVENS HAD PERISHED. THIS IS ALSO CONFIRMED BY 2 PETER 3:5 WITH THE FOLLOWING WORDS: 'FOR THEY DELIBERATELY OVERLOOK THIS FACT, THAT THE HEAVENS EXISTED LONG AGO AND THE EARTH WAS FORMED OUT OF WATER AND THROUGH WATER BY THE WORD OF GOD, BY WHICH MEANS THE WORLD THAT THEN EXISTED WAS DELUGED WITH WATER AND PERISHED.' THIS WAS THEREFORE BETWEEN GENESIS 1:1 AND GENESIS 1:2. THE RESULT WAS A WHOLE WORLD SUBMERGED IN WATER, WHICH CONSISTED OF HEAVENS AND EARTH. PERHAPS THE VAST AMOUNTS OF WATER THAT ARE NOW GATHERED IN THE SEAS ARE THE REMNANTS OF THOSE FIRST GREAT HEAVENS.

DOES IT REPRESENT A CATASTROPHE? IN THE WATER, TWO PARTS HYDROGEN ARE CONNECTED WITH ONE PART OXYGEN. WHAT DOES THIS CONNECTION MEAN IN A SPIRITUAL SENSE? PERHAPS A TRANSFORMATION OF INVISIBLE HEAVENLY SUBSTANCES INTO VISIBLE, HEAVY EARTHLY MATERIALS? HEAVEN AND EARTH OF THE ORIGINAL CREATION SOMEHOW EMERGED FROM WATER AND THROUGH WATER, BUT EVIDENTLY THE WATERS HAVE TAKEN OVER TO SUCH AN EXTENT THAT THEY FLOODED BOTH. IS THIS RELATED TO THE FALL, THE CATABOLE (LUTHER: FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD)? WE KNOW LITTLE ABOUT THAT IMMENSE PRIMORDIAL EVENT, THAT STRUGGLE BETWEEN GODS, AS ALSO CONVEYED BY FOLKLORE AND HINTED AT IN THE BIBLE. BUT THE SEAS AND JAGGED MOUNTAINS ARE WITNESSES TO THE GIGANTIC UPHEAVALS THAT MUST HAVE RAGED THROUGH HEAVEN AND EARTH UNTIL THE ROARING WATERS OF THE DEEP CALMED DOWN, ALLOWING THE SPIRIT OF GOD TO BROOD OVER THEM AND BEGIN HIS WORK OF NEW CREATION. ONE MUST NOT CONFUSE THE PASSAGE IN 2 PETER 3:5 WITH THE FLOOD DURING NOAH'S TIME, WHICH IS MENTIONED IN 2 PETER 2:5. AT THAT TIME, ONLY THE GATES OF HEAVEN WERE OPENED, ALLOWING THE NECESSARY WATERS TO DESCEND, ALONG WITH THE SPRINGS OF THE DEEP. THE HEAVENS THEMSELVES REMAINED, ONLY THE EARTH WAS FLOODED TO DESTROY THE CORRUPT HUMANITY. DID THE WATERS 'ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT,' MEANING THE WATERS OF THE PACIFIC OCEAN, PENETRATE THROUGH THE HEAVENLY SPHERES OF THE HOLLOW EARTH TO RAIN DOWN ON THE LAND PART OF THE HOLLOW EARTH DURING THE FLOOD? FOR SCIENCE, THE BIBLICAL ACCOUNT OF CREATION IS NOT DEBATABLE AT ALL. IT CANNOT MAKE SENSE OF THESE 'PRIMITIVE IDEAS.' IN ITS ENDLESS SPACE, STAR NEBULAE HAVE BEEN ROTATING FOR MILLIONS OF YEARS. STARS ARE BORN AND THEN THEY PERISH. ON OUR 'SMALL STAR EARTH,' THE CONDITIONS HAVE BEEN 'COINCIDENTALLY' SO FAVORABLE THAT LIFE COULD EMERGE AND PERSIST TO THIS DAY. WE WILL NOT FURTHER ENGAGE WITH THIS NONSENSE AND DISBELIEF HERE. HOWEVER, THERE IS A DIRECTION OF BELIEVING SCIENTISTS WHO ATTEMPT TO RECONCILE THE BIBLICAL CREATION ACCOUNT WITH SCIENTIFIC FINDINGS. BUT THIS ALWAYS REQUIRES BENDING THE BIBLE, AS THE SCIENTIFIC FINDINGS ARE, AT LEAST FOR THE MOMENT, UNTOUCHABLE AND INDISPUTABLE. PARTICULARLY CHALLENGING IN THESE RECONCILIATION ATTEMPTS IS FITTING THE BIBLICAL MENTION OF THE WATERS ABOVE AND BELOW THE FIRMAMENT, AS WELL AS THE CONCEPT OF HEAVEN AS A FIRMAMENT, INTO THE COPERNICAN UNIVERSE.

DR. PAUL MÜLLER PRESENTS IN HIS BOOKLET "BIBLE AND NATURAL SCIENCE" WHILE ADHERING TO THE COPERNICAN WORLDVIEW, THE FOLLOWING: "THE SEER, BEFORE WHOSE MIND'S EYE GOD LATER ALLOWED THE CREATION STORY TO UNFOLD, SAW, WHEN THE SECOND DAY OF CREATION WAS AT HAND, THE FIRMAMENT, THE COSMOS, THE BLUE SKY. RECENT PHYSICS HAS FOUND THAT THE SUN AND STARS ARE COMPOSED OF 97% HYDROGEN AND HELIUM, WITH HYDROGEN BEING FIVE TO SIX TIMES MORE ABUNDANT THAN HELIUM. THE 'WATER ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT' SHOWN TO THE HOLY SEER WAS LIKELY THE PRIMORDIAL SUBSTANCE FROM WHICH THE STAR WORLD WAS ABOUT TO FORM, NAMELY THE ELEMENT WE NOW CALL HYDROGEN. IN TERMS OF SPACE, HYDROGEN IS THE MAIN COMPONENT OF WATER. HYDROGEN IS THE FUNDAMENTAL ELEMENT UPON WHICH ALL OTHERS ARE BUILT, WITH ALL ATOMIC WEIGHTS EXPRESSED AS MULTIPLES OF HYDROGEN, MAKING IT THE WEIGHT UNIT OF EVERY ATOM, JUST AS THE CENTIMETER IS THE UNIT OF MEASUREMENT FOR THE UNIVERSE. THE ATOMIC WEIGHT INDICATES HOW MANY TIMES HEAVIER THE RESPECTIVE ATOM IS COMPARED TO A HYDROGEN ATOM. FOR EXAMPLE, THE OXYGEN ATOM IS 16 TIMES HEAVIER THAN THE HYDROGEN ATOM; THUS, OXYGEN HAS AN ATOMIC WEIGHT OF 16. HYDROGEN IS THE LIGHTEST GAS, WHILE HELIUM IS THE SECOND LIGHTEST. BOTH CAN BE USED TO FILL BALLOONS. HOWEVER, HYDROGEN IS FLAMMABLE, WHEREAS HELIUM IS NOT... THE WATER ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT FORMS CLOUDS, RAIN, RIVERS, AND SEAS AT TODAY'S PREVAILING TEMPERATURES. THERE WAS, HOWEVER, A TIME WHEN THE HEAT WAS SO GREAT THAT THE ELEMENTS HAD NOT YET COMBINED INTO COMPOUNDS. WHILE HYDROGEN PLAYS THE MAIN ROLE AMONG THE STARS, OXYGEN IS BY FAR THE MOST ABUNDANT ELEMENT IN OUR EARTH'S CRUST." THUS, FOR DR. MÜLLER, THE WATER ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT IS OUR WATER = H2O, TWO PARTS HYDROGEN AND ONE PART OXYGEN. THE FIRMAMENT WOULD THEN BE THE SKY, AND ABOVE IT, THE MASSES OF HYDROGEN IN SPACE, "FROM WHICH THE STARS ARE FORMED," WOULD BE THE WATERS ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT. WITH THIS EXPLANATION, ONE CAN UNDOUBTEDLY SALVAGE THE COPERNICAN WORLDVIEW TO SOME EXTENT AT THIS POINT. HOWEVER, IT DOES NOT SATISFY ME AT ALL. AIR IS, FIRST AND FOREMOST, NOT A FIRMAMENT, BUT RATHER A BUFFER BETWEEN THE FIRMAMENT OF HEAVEN AND THE EARTH. AND HYDROGEN IS NOT WATER, BUT A GAS. JUST AS THE SOUL IS NOT THE SPIRIT, AND THE SPIRIT IS NOT THE SOUL. BUT EVEN IF WE WERE TO ACKNOWLEDGE THE HYDROGEN DEPOSITS ABOVE THE AIR BELT AS 'WATER ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT,' THE NECESSITY FOR SEPARATION WOULD BE DIFFICULT TO COMPREHEND, AS THERE IS ALSO WATER...

HYDROGEN EXISTS IN VARIOUS FORMS ON EARTH, BOTH AS A GAS AND A LIQUID. HOWEVER, THE TRUTH IN THIS INTERPRETATION LIKELY LIES IN THE FACT THAT HYDROGEN PLAYS A SIGNIFICANT ROLE ABOVE OUR BREATHABLE ATMOSPHERE. STARS, ON THE OTHER HAND, ARE SOLID, METALLIC BODIES, NOT JUST GLOWING MASSES OF GAS. THIS IS EVIDENT IN METEORS, WHICH ARE ESSENTIALLY EXTINGUISHED STARS FALLING TO EARTH. THERE MAY ALSO BE HYDROGEN GAS, REFERRED TO AS 'WATER', ABOVE THE ATMOSPHERIC RING IN THE HOLLOW WORLD OR EARTH WORLD SURROUNDING THE SOLID CELESTIAL SPHERE. THERE ARE INDEED VARIOUS INTERPRETATIONS OF A BIBLICAL PASSAGE. INTERESTINGLY, DR. MÜLLER EMPHASIZES IN HIS BOOK THE REJECTION OF THE INFINITY OF THE UNIVERSE IN MODERN PHYSICS AND ASTRONOMY, EXPLAINING HOW THE CREATION OF THE VISIBLE WORLD PRECEDED THE CREATION OF THE INVISIBLE WORLD. HE SUGGESTS THAT EDEN AND PARADISE CAN ALSO BE FOUND IN THE INVISIBLE WORLD WE CANNOT SEE TODAY, THAT IS, IN AND ABOVE THE ATMOSPHERIC HEAVENS. DR. MÜLLER EVEN GOES SO FAR AS TO INTERPRET THE TWO CREATION ACCOUNTS AT THE BEGINNING OF THE BIBLE AS DEPICTING THE FIRST ACCOUNT AS THE ORDERING OF CHAOTIC VISIBILITY AND THE SECOND AS THE CREATION OF THE INVISIBLE WORLD AND HUMANITY WITHIN IT. A. E. KNOCH FROM THE USA, WHO HOLDS A MUCH LOWER OPINION OF SCIENCE, YET UNCONSCIOUSLY BASES HIS THINKING AND SCRIPTURAL INTERPRETATION ON THE OUTDATED COPERNICAN VIEW, ALSO COMMENTS ON THE SEPARATION OF THE WATERS BELOW THE FIRMAMENT FROM THE WATERS ABOVE IT, SUGGESTING THAT THIS FIRMAMENT IS AN EXTENSION OF EARTH'S ATMOSPHERE. THE WATERS IN THE SEA ARE THUS THE WATERS 'UNDER THE FIRMAMENT', WHILE THE WATER VAPOR AND LIGHTER ACCUMULATIONS OF HYDROGEN ABOVE THE ATMOSPHERE ARE THE 'WATERS ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT'. THEY WERE, IN A SENSE, POURED DOWN THROUGH AIR GAPS DURING THE FLOOD. IN DETAIL, BROTHER KNOCH WROTE ABOUT THIS:

THE ATMOSPHERE AND THE WATERS. THE 'FIRMAMENT' (LUTHER) OR THE 'SOLID VAULT' (MENGE) OF THE BIBLE HAS BECOME A SUBJECT OF RIDICULE AMONG SCHOLARS. IT WAS TAKEN AS EVIDENCE THAT THIS BOOK IS FULL OF UNBELIEVABLE FABLES. WE ARE TOLD THAT THE ANCIENT HEBREWS BELIEVED THE SKY WAS A HARD, HOLLOW SHELL TO WHICH THE STARS WERE ATTACHED. IT IS TRUE THAT THE GREEK TRANSLATION, THE SEPTUAGINT, USES A WORD (STEREOMA) THAT MEANS SOMETHING SOLID. THE LATIN VULGATE TRANSLATED IT AS FIRMAMENTUM, WHICH HAS ALSO FOUND ITS WAY INTO MODERN LANGUAGES AS THE FOREIGN WORD 'FIRMAMENT'. HOWEVER, THESE TERMS ADAPT TO THE MYTHOLOGIES OF THE GREEKS AND ROMANS.

IT IS NOT CONFIRMED IN ANY WAY BY THE INSPIRED HEBREW. IN CONTRAST TO THESE, WE HAVE IN SCRIPTURE THE DIVINE PERSPECTIVE, NOT THAT OF HUMANS. THE LATTER HAVE VIEWED THE SO-CALLED HEAVENS FROM THE SURFACE OF THE EARTH. GOD, WHO FILLS THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE, OVERSEES ALL THE REALMS OF EXISTENCE. TODAY, IT IS KNOWN THAT THE ATMOSPHERE CONSISTS OF AN OCEAN OF AIR. OPINIONS DIFFER ABOUT ITS DEPTH. WHAT IS CERTAIN IS THAT THERE IS A SIGNIFICANT DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THIS SEA OF GAS AND ONE OF WATER. WATER ALWAYS HAS THE SAME DENSITY, WHILE AIR BECOMES THINNER THE FURTHER IT IS FROM THE EARTH. IT IS COMPRESSED FROM ABOVE BY THE WEIGHT OF THE HIGHER LAYERS. ANYONE WHO CLIMBS A MOUNTAIN KNOWS HOW THE AIR PRESSURE DECREASES THE HIGHER THEY GO. THE WEIGHT OF THE SURROUNDING GASES AT SEA LEVEL IS ABOUT FOURTEEN POUNDS PER SQUARE INCH, BUT IT RARELY BURDENS US BECAUSE WE AND OTHER CREATURES ARE ADAPTED TO IT, WHILE WE CANNOT EXIST AT GREAT HEIGHTS. HOWEVER, AIR RESEMBLES WATER IN AN IMPORTANT ASPECT THAT DISTINGUISHES IT FROM SOLIDS: IT FLOWS. BOTH GASES AND LIQUIDS FLOOD OVER THE SURFACES OF THE EARTH AND FILL EVERY DEPRESSION. IF ANY DEPRESSION HAS NOT BECOME A SEA, LAKE, POND, OR RIVERBED, THE AIR HAS PRESSED INTO IT, EVEN IF IT RISES MUCH HIGHER THAN EVAPORATED WATER. THESE PROPERTIES OF THE ATMOSPHERE ARE VIVIDLY ILLUSTRATED IN THE RICHLY METAPHORICAL HEBREW LANGUAGE. FOR IT COMPARES THE AIR TO THE THIN METAL LAYER OF GOLD, SILVER, OR COPPER THAT HAS BEEN FLATTENED TO COVER THE WOODEN PARTS OF THE TABERNACLE AND ALSO THE CARVED IDOLS. THIS HEBREW ROOT RQO, TO STAMP, IS USED AS A NOUN, RQIO, FOR THE LAYER OF AIR THAT SURROUNDS THE ENTIRE EARTH, JUST AS THE HOLY WALLS AND VESSELS OF THE HOUSE OF GOD WERE COVERED WITH A PRECIOUS LAYER THAT WAS HAMMERED ONTO THEM. IN THE SAME WAY, THE ATMOSPHERE IS AN INCREDIBLY VALUABLE COVERING OF THE EARTH'S SURFACE, WRAPPING AROUND IT SO TIGHTLY, FILLING EVERY SMALL DEPRESSION AS IF IT HAD BEEN STAMPED ONTO IT. NEXT TO LIGHT, IT IS THE MOST IMPORTANT FACTOR THAT TRANSFORMED THE DESOLATE AND EMPTY WRECK INTO A FERTILE AND USEFUL DWELLING FOR LIVING BEINGS. THE SCOFFERS OF THE LAST DAYS HAVE FALSELY CLAIMED THAT EVERYTHING CONTINUES AS IT WAS AT THE BEGINNING OF CREATION (2 PETER 3:4), EVEN THOUGH FAR TOO MANY DO NOT BELIEVE IN CREATION AT ALL.

THEY ALSO OVERLOOK THAT THERE HAVE BEEN HEAVENS FROM ANCIENT TIMES, AND AN EARTH CONSISTING OF WATER AND THROUGH WATER ... THROUGH WHICH THE WORLD OF THAT TIME PERISHED, BEING FLOODED WITH WATER. THE PRESENT HEAVENS AND EARTH ARE RESERVED FOR FIRE ON THE DAY OF JUDGMENT. THIS PROPHECY OF THE FUTURE CAN STRANGELY EASE OUR ACCEPTANCE OF THIS ACCOUNT OF THE PAST. WHAT WAS TRUE OF WATER THEN IS NOW TRUE CONCERNING FIRE. THAT THERE IS FIRE OR INTENSE HEAT BENEATH THE EARTH'S CRUST IS PROVEN BY SO MANY PIECES OF EVIDENCE THAT HARDLY ANYONE WILL DOUBT IT. NOT ONLY ARE THERE VOLCANOES THAT SPEW FLAMES AND MOLTEN MASSES, BUT THERE ARE ALSO REGIONS COVERED BY SOLIDIFIED LAVA, BEARING WITNESS TO PAST ACTIVITY OF NOW-EXTINCT CRATERS. ADDITIONALLY, MANY PLACES, OFTEN IN THE FAR NORTH, LIKE ICELAND, HAVE HOT SPRINGS THAT CAN HEAT ENTIRE TOWNS. EVEN THE MATERIALS THAT PROVIDE US WITH WARMTH TODAY, SUCH AS OIL AND COAL, COME FROM DEEP SHAFTS. BEFORE THE NEW EARTH IS CREATED ON THE DAY OF GOD, THE OLD ONE ALONG WITH ITS WORKS MUST PERISH IN FLAMES (2 PETER 3:12). BUT THAT THERE IS ALSO HEAT IN HEAVEN CANNOT BE DISPUTED, FOR OUR ASTRONOMERS REPORT SUCH INTENSE DEGREES OF HEAT THAT ARE UNIMAGINABLE ON EARTH. THE LIGHTNING, WHICH IS GENERATED BY ELECTRICAL FORCES IN THE ATMOSPHERE, IS ALSO HOT. UNDER THE FIRST TWO TRUMPET JUDGMENTS, ALMOST A THIRD OF EVERYTHING ON EARTH IS BURNED, AND A HUGE MOUNTAIN, BURNING WITH FIRE, IS THROWN INTO THE SEA. EVEN THE SUN BECOMES SCORCHING HOT (REVELATION 16:8). GOG AND MAGOG, WHEN THEY COME WITH THEIR ARMIES AGAINST THE BELOVED CITY, WILL BE CONSUMED BY FIRE FROM HEAVEN. BUT ALL THIS IS SMALL COMPARED TO THE FINAL GREAT CONFLAGRATION, AS PREPARATION FOR THE NEW HEAVENS. THEN THE VERY ELEMENTS WILL PERISH IN FLAMES. NOT ALL THINGS HAVE CONTINUED AS THEY WERE AT THE BEGINNING. THIS ALSO APPLIES TO THE WATERS OF THE EARTH. THEY STILL CHANGE THEIR LOCATIONS. I MYSELF SAW THE FORMATION OF A LAKE THAT LATER DISAPPEARED. ANOTHER SUCH BODY OF WATER IN SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA SEEMS TO HAVE ONCE EXTENDED TO THE SURROUNDING MOUNTAINS, WITH A DEPTH OF ALMOST 250 FEET BELOW SEA LEVEL. HOWEVER, WHEN I WAS THERE FOR THE FIRST TIME, IT WAS COMPLETELY DRIED UP. THEN ONE DAY SOMETHING AMAZING HAPPENED. WATER THAT CAME FROM THE DISTANT COLORADO RIVER SUDDENLY BROKE THROUGH.

THE FLOODWATERS CAME FROM THE DEPTHS OF THE EARTH AND FROM THE HEAVENS, AS DESCRIBED IN THE BIBLICAL ACCOUNT WHERE GOD TOLD NOAH IT WOULD RAIN FOR FORTY DAYS AND NIGHTS. THE EARTH WAS ENTIRELY COVERED IN WATER, WITH NO DRY LAND VISIBLE UNTIL THE WATERS RECEDED. THE TEXT DISCUSSES THE NATURE OF THESE WATERS AND THE MISCONCEPTIONS ABOUT THEIR SOURCE, SUGGESTING THAT THEY FELL GRADUALLY LIKE RAIN THROUGH OPENINGS IN THE ATMOSPHERE RATHER THAN POURING DOWN FROM WINDOWS OF HEAVEN.

THE TEXT DISCUSSES THE CONCEPT OF THE HEAVENS IN HEBREW, EXPLAINING THAT THERE ARE TWO HEAVENS, ONE IN THE NORTH AND ONE IN THE SOUTH, WHICH IS WHY IT IS ALWAYS REFERRED TO IN THE PLURAL. IT DESCRIBES HOW THESE HEAVENS BROKE APART DURING THE FLOOD AND POURED DOWN ONTO THE EARTH. HOWEVER, THIS EXPLANATION HAS ITS WEAKNESSES, AS IT IS UNLIKELY THAT SUCH AN EVENT COULD CAUSE PROLONGED AND UNIFORM RAIN. ANOTHER THEORY SUGGESTS THAT VAST AMOUNTS OF STEAM ACCUMULATED NOT ABOVE BUT WITHIN THE HIGHER LAYERS OF THE ATMOSPHERE, PROVIDING A MILD AND CONSISTENT CLIMATE FOR PRE-FLOOD HUMANS, ALLOWING THEM TO LIVE MUCH LONGER THAN THEIR DESCENDANTS. EVENTUALLY, THIS VAPOR CANOPY COOLED DOWN, TURNING INTO WATER DROPLETS THAT FELL TO THE GROUND. THE MAIN FLAW IN THIS EXPLANATION IS THE IDEA THAT THE STEAM WAS WITHIN, NOT ABOVE THE ATMOSPHERE. YET, FAITH DOES NOT REQUIRE SUCH INTERPRETATIONS. THE PURPOSE OF REITERATING THESE THEORIES IS NOT TO STRENGTHEN TRUST IN THE BIBLE BUT TO ILLUSTRATE HOW FOOLISH IT IS NOT TO BELIEVE WHEN EVEN IGNORANT PEOPLE CAN COME UP WITH SUCH PLAUSIBLE EXPLANATIONS. A NOTABLE ASPECT OF THE ACCOUNT OF THE EARTH'S RESTORATION IS THE SEVEN OCCURRENCES OF THE WORD 'SEPARATE.' GOD SEPARATED LIGHT FROM DARKNESS (VERSE 4). THE ATMOSPHERE SEPARATED THE UPPER WATERS FROM THE LOWER (VERSES 6, 7). THEN, THE DRY LAND WAS SEPARATED FROM THE SEAS, ALTHOUGH THE WORD IS NOT USED HERE. ON THE FOURTH DAY, THE CELESTIAL BODIES SEPARATE DAY FROM NIGHT AND LIGHT FROM DARKNESS (VERSES 14, 18). IT IS IMPORTANT TO NOTE THAT DAY AND LIGHT REMAIN, WHILE NIGHT AND DARKNESS WILL CEASE (REVELATION 21:25; 22:5). THE SAME APPLIES TO THE WATERS. IN THE NEW EARTH, THERE IS NO SEA, BUT THERE IS THE RIVER OF LIFE, WHEREAS THOSE ABOVE THE EARTH HAD BECOME A FLOOD OF DEATH. WHILE THIS INTERPRETATION IS EXTENSIVE AND ENLIGHTENING, IT DOES NOT FULLY RESPECT THE WORDING OF THE CREATION ACCOUNT, PRIMARILY BECAUSE IT IS BASED ON THE FUNDAMENTALLY FLAWED COPERNICAN VIEW OF THE UNIVERSE. THE HEBREW WORD 'RAKIA' INITIALLY MEANS 'THE EXPANSE' FROM 'RAKA,' TO SPREAD OUT, AND THEN REFERS TO THE FIRMAMENT OR HEAVENS. THE GERMAN WORD 'AUSDEHNUNG' IS ALSO USED BY TRANSLATORS. THIS RAKIA, WHICH GOD CREATED IN THE MIDST OF THE PRIMORDIAL WATERS, WAS CALLED BY GOD THE HEAVENS (GENESIS 1:8). THE VERB 'RAKA' FUNDAMENTALLY MEANS TO PUSH, STRIKE, STAMP, OR SPREAD OUT. IT SIGNIFIES THE SPREADING ONLY OF SOLID BODIES, SUCH AS THE EARTH, WHICH GOD SPREADS OUT (PSALM 136:6).

IN ISAIAH 42:5, THE TERM 'RAKA' REFERS TO HAMMERING, WHICH IS ALSO THE ROOT FOR THE WORD FOR METAL, SPECIFICALLY HAMMERED IRON. ULTIMATELY, IT MEANS TO COVER SOMETHING WITH A THIN SHEET OF METAL (ISAIAH 40:19). THEREFORE, IF THE WORDS 'RAKA' AND 'RAKIA' ARE ONLY USED FOR SOLID BODIES, ESPECIALLY METALS, THEY CANNOT REFER TO THE SKY AS KNOCH SUGGESTS, EVEN IF THE AIR CONFORMS TO THE EARTH'S UNEVENNESS LIKE THE HAMMERED GOLD SHEET OF THE TEMPLE CONFORMS TO THE WALLS. I BELIEVE THAT THE HEAVEN GOD CREATED IN THE WATERS WAS A METALLIC SPHERE, SOMEWHAT HAMMERED, 'THE WORK OF HIS FINGERS' (PSALM 8:4). THIS 'FIRMAMENT,' AS TRANSLATED BY MENGE, INCLUDED A GAS OR AIR BELT THAT EXPANDED OR STRETCHED ('LET THERE BE!'), PUSHING THE WATERS APART IN AN EGG OR HOLLOW SPHERE SHAPE. THIS RESULTS IN THE 'WATERS ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT' AND THE WATERS 'BELOW THE FIRMAMENT.' THE WATERS ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT ARE THUS THE SEAS THAT ARCH OVER THE FLOATING CELESTIAL SPHERE FROM THE PERSPECTIVE OF THE LOWER HALF OF THE HOLLOW EARTH. FROM EUROPE, THESE WOULD BE THE WATER MASSES OF THE SOUTH POLE REGION, THE SOUTHERN PACIFIC, AND THE ATLANTIC. THESE ARCH OVER THE DRY LAND 'ABOVE THE HEAVENLY FIRMAMENT,' WHICH FLOATS IN THE MIDDLE. THESE WATER MASSES ARE HELD IN PLACE BY THE SAME PRESSURE THAT KEEPS US HUMANS PRESSED TO THE EARTH. IN THE ABSENCE OF A BETTER EXPLANATION, WE CALL THIS FORCE GRAVITY. THE LAYPERSON MIGHT THINK THAT PROFESSORS CAN IMAGINE WHAT THIS MEANS, BUT THAT IS NOT THE CASE. INSTEAD, A STRONG INVISIBLE RADIATION PRESSURE EMANATES OUTWARD FROM THE CENTER OF THE HEAVENS, PART OF WHICH HAS BEEN DISCOVERED IN 'COSMIC RAYS.' THIS RADIATION PRESSURE, ALONGSIDE AIR PRESSURE, FORCEFULLY KEEPS THE WATER AND ALL BEINGS ON EARTH IN THEIR PLACE. THE WORD OF GOD CLEARLY STATES THAT THE WATERS ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT AND THE WATERS BELOW THE FIRMAMENT WERE SEPARATED BY THE EXPANSION OF THE HEAVENS. THIS DESCRIBES THE FORMATION OF THE HOLLOW WORLD OR EARTH WORLD. IT IS NOT CLEAR WHY THE SCRIPTURE WOULD REFER TO THE WATERS ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT AS OTHER, FINER, OR LIGHTER WATERS, SUCH AS ONLY HYDROGEN GASES, AS SOME INTERPRETERS SUGGEST. WATER IS WATER; WHAT IS NOT WATER IS STEAM, CLOUD, OR AIR. ALL THESE TERMS ARE ALSO KNOWN IN SCRIPTURE. BUT HERE IT SAYS: WATER ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT (NOT: UPPER WATERS!). SINCE AT THE TIME OF THE CREATION OF THE HEAVENS NO DRY LAND WAS VISIBLE, IT ACTED...

IT IS MERELY A BULGING OF THE WATER MASSES. ONE COULD HARDLY DESCRIBE THE HOLLOW WORLD MORE APTLY IN JUST A FEW WORDS THAN WITH THESE: AND GOD MADE THE EXPANSE OF HEAVEN AND SEPARATED THE WATERS BELOW THE EXPANSE FROM THE WATERS ABOVE THE EXPANSE. IMAGINE A BALLOON BEING INFLATED IN A CONTAINER OF WATER. THIS BALLOON THEN SEPARATES THE WATERS ABOVE IT FROM THE WATERS BELOW IT. AS LONG AS THE PRESSURE IN THE BALLOON HOLDS, THESE BULGING WATERS REMAIN SEPARATED. THERE IS NO OTHER EXPLANATION THAT DOES JUSTICE TO THE WORDING AND MEANING OF THE CREATION ACCOUNT. THE HEAVENS CONSIST NOT ONLY OF THE AIR SKY CLOSE TO THE EARTH, BUT BEHIND THIS, OTHER HEAVENLY SPHERES ARE HIDDEN, OF WHICH THE SCRIPTURE SPEAKS. WE KNOW THAT SCRIPTURE OFTEN MENTIONS THE HEAVENS IN THE PLURAL AND THAT PAUL WAS CAUGHT UP TO THE THIRD HEAVEN. IT IS THEREFORE A TEACHING OF THE WORD OF GOD THAT THERE ARE MULTIPLE HEAVENS, PERHAPS MANY. IN CONTRAST, THERE IS ONLY ONE EARTH, BUT MULTIPLE HEAVENS. WHERE WOULD THESE BE FOUND IN THE ENDLESS SPACE OF THE COPERNICANS, AND HOW WOULD THEY BE DELINEATED FROM ONE ANOTHER? THE HEAVENS ARE RATHER CONCENTRIC RINGS, SPHERES THAT ARE LAYERED WITHIN EACH OTHER AROUND A COMMON CENTER. THE EARTH IS ALSO SUCH A CONCENTRIC RING, A SPHERICAL SHELL LAYERED AROUND THE HEAVENLY CENTER, AND ON THE INNER SIDE OF THIS SHELL, WE HUMANS LIVE, ALWAYS POINTING OUR HEADS TOWARDS THE HEAVENLY CENTER ABOVE US DUE TO OUR UPRIGHT POSITION. HEAVEN AND EARTH DIFFER FROM EACH OTHER IN THAT THE HEAVENS BELONG TO THE INVISIBLE WORLD, WHILE THE EARTH BELONGS TO THE VISIBLE WORLD. WHAT IS VISIBLE IS TRANSIENT (2 CORINTHIANS 4:18). 'THE EARTH WAS WITHOUT FORM AND VOID' CAN VERY WELL ALSO BE TRANSLATED AS: 'THE EARTH WAS (OR BECAME) TRANSIENT AND HOLLOW!' ONLY SOMETHING HOLLOW, A VESSEL, CAN BE EMPTY! (ACCORDING TO GESENIUS, TOHU MEANS NOT ONLY WILDERNESS BUT ALSO VANITY, TRANSIENCE.) THE 'AIR SKY' ABOVE US IS NOT THE ACTUAL HEAVENLY WORLD, BUT MERELY AN INTERMEDIATE WORLD BETWEEN THE EARTH AND THE HEAVENS THAT BEGIN ABOVE THE ATMOSPHERE AND RISE UP. THE STARS ARE LIGHTS AND SIGNS THAT HAVE BECOME VISIBLE TO US FROM THE INVISIBLE HEAVENLY WORLD, TO REGULATE AND ORDER THE DIMENSION OF TIME FOR THE VISIBILITY OF THE EARTH (GENESIS 1:14). AT THE SAME TIME, THE STARS ARE A SIGN THAT THE ACTUAL HEAVENLY WORLDS CONSIST NOT ONLY OF GASES BUT ALSO OF SOLID METALLIC LUMINOUS SUBSTANCES.

THE CORE OF THE UNIVERSE IN THE HOLLOW EARTH IS A CORE OF PRECIOUS METAL, SERVING AS THE TRUE HEAVENLY FORTRESS OR 'FIRMAMENT' ABOVE US, WITH STREETS MADE OF 'PURE GOLD' (REV. 21:18-21). IT MAY INITIALLY SEEM CONTRADICTORY TO SPEAK OF INVISIBILITY AND METALS AT THE SAME TIME! IN OUR EARTHLY EXPERIENCE, INVISIBILITY IS ONLY A CHARACTERISTIC OF GASEOUS STATES OF MATTER. BUT WHY SHOULDN'T THERE BE INVISIBLE METALS, WOOD, TREES, WATER, FRUITS, ETC.? INDEED, WE CAN EVEN ASSERT, FOLLOWING THE LAW OF CORRESPONDENCE: ALL VISIBLE MATTER PRESUPPOSES INVISIBLE MATTER. THIS MEANS: VISIBLE METALS EXIST ONLY BECAUSE INVISIBLE METALS EXIST!

THE BIBLE CERTAINLY TEACHES THIS UNDERSTANDING, AS THE FOLLOWING PASSAGES SHOW: REV. 21:18-21; 22:2; JOHN 7:38; REV. 2:7; 21:21; 7:15; JOHN 14:2; 2 KINGS 6:17; GALATIANS 4:26; AND OTHERS.

FURTHERMORE, INVISIBILITY HAS DIFFERENT ORDERS AND 'NATURAL LAWS' THAN VISIBILITY. TRANSPARENT GOLD LIKE GLASS DOES NOT EXIST IN OUR VISIBLE WORLD, BUT IT DOES EXIST IN THE INVISIBLE WORLD. THE SAME APPLIES TO THE FRUIT TREES THERE, WHICH BEAR FRUIT TWELVE TIMES A YEAR. INVISIBILITY CONTAINS MORE DIMENSIONS THAN THE THREE-DIMENSIONAL VISIBLE WORLD. WHAT IS INVISIBLE CANNOT BE MEASURED WITH VISIBLE MASSES, EVEN IF THE INVISIBLE HEAVENS ARE CONTAINED WITHIN AN EARTHLY SHELL WITH A THEORETICAL VISIBLE DIAMETER OF ABOUT 12,000 KM. WHAT KIND OF EXTENSIONS, WHAT 'HABITAT', WHAT 'CONDITIONS FOR EXISTENCE' DOES GOD NEED, AND WHAT DO THE VARIOUS LEVELS OF THE HEAVENLY BEINGS REQUIRE? WE DO NOT KNOW AND CANNOT EVEN IMAGINE IT, UNLESS WE BASE IT ON GOD'S WORD, WHICH IS SPIRIT AND LIFE, AND ASSESS IT SPIRITUALLY, MEANING WE PERCEIVE THE INVISIBLE WORLD WITH THE EYES OF FAITH, WHICH BEGINS WITH FOUR DIMENSIONS BUT CAN CONTAIN MUCH MORE THAN FOUR DIMENSIONS! IT IS INTERESTING IN THIS CONTEXT THAT EVEN FAITHFUL INTERPRETERS HAVE ATTEMPTED TO EXPLAIN THE VARIOUS HEAVENLY REALMS, STRUCTURED IN LAYERS OR INTERWOVEN, WITH DIFFERENT DIMENSIONS. FOR EXAMPLE, A BOOKLET BY PASTOR PENKAZKI (TELOS POCKETBOOK) TITLED 'WHERE IS GOD? - THE DIMENSIONS OF GOD' DOES THIS AS FOLLOWS:

THE THIRD DIMENSION: OUR CURRENT (VISIBLE) WORLD. THE FIRST AND SECOND DIMENSIONS: LOST WORLDS. THE FOURTH DIMENSION (TIME BECOMES SPACE!): THE REALM OF THE DEAD AND HELL.

THE FIFTH DIMENSION: PARADISE. THE SIXTH AND SEVENTH DIMENSIONS: ETERNITIES. THIS IS AN INTERESTING ATTEMPT TO PENETRATE THE INVISIBLE IN AN ORDERLY AND UNDERSTANDING WAY. THE STILL INVISIBLE NEW INNER PERSON WITHIN US ALREADY POSSESSES THESE DIMENSIONS AND IS INCREASINGLY GROWING INTO THEM. FINALLY, THERE IS LIKELY ALSO DIMENSIONLESS SPACE. THIS IS WHAT THE KABBALAH (JEWISH MYSTICISM) SPEAKS OF. THE INVISIBILITY OF THE HEAVENS AND THE CENTER OF ALL IS THE RIGHT ANSWER TO ALL NAIVE QUESTIONS THAT ARE REPEATEDLY POSED FROM THE PERSPECTIVE OF VISIBILITY ABOUT THE 'UNIVERSE OF THE BIBLE', SUCH AS: 'IS THERE NOT TOO LITTLE SPACE FOR HEAVEN, ANGELS, AND GOD?', OR: 'THIS IS ALL FAR TOO SMALL!' WHAT IS BIG AND SMALL IN INVISIBILITY? HASN'T ATOMIC SCIENCE SHOWN US THAT IN A VISIBLE SPACE THE SIZE OF A PINHEAD, MANY VAST ATOMIC WORLDS ARE CONTAINED? WHAT WE CALL BIG HERE IS ONLY INFLATED BEFORE GOD AND IS ACTUALLY SMALL AND WEAK, AND VICE VERSA! IT IS INTERESTING HOW TODAY'S ASTRONOMY, WITH ITS TECHNICAL MEANS, INADVERTENTLY APPROACHES THIS TRUTH. INITIALLY, IT SPOKE OF DARK STAR ISLANDS THAT EMIT WAVES, ESPECIALLY SOUND WAVES, BUT NO LONGER LIGHT RAYS. AS THESE DARK SOLID ISLANDS IN SPACE WERE INCREASINGLY DISCOVERED, IT WAS SAID THAT THE SPACE BETWEEN THE SHINING STARS DOES NOT SEEM TO BE EMPTY AT ALL, BUT THAT MASSIVE DENSE STAR WALLS MUST FILL VAST STRETCHES OF THE UNIVERSE! THIS WAS DISCOVERED THROUGH A NEW BRANCH OF ASTRONOMY, RADIO ASTRONOMY, WHICH IS NO LONGER HINDERED BY MURKY VISION BECAUSE IT DEALS WITH INVISIBLE RAYS AND WAVES. THE 'DARK CLOUDS OF COSMIC DUST' THAT 'LURK IN THE UNIVERSE' CAPTURE THE RADIATION FROM THE CELESTIAL BODIES BEHIND THEM, IT IS SAID. IN CONTRAST, RADIO WAVES PENETRATE EARTHLY AND COSMIC CLOUDS UNDIMINISHED. WITH THE HELP OF ENORMOUS RADAR RECEIVING ANTENNAS, IT HAS NOW BEEN POSSIBLE TO ACCURATELY LOCATE THESE SOURCES OF RADIO WAVES IN THE UNIVERSE. THESE 'RADIO STARS' ARE NOT INDIVIDUAL STARS, BUT DENSE.

LARGE ATTENTION WAS DRAWN AT THE INTERNATIONAL ASTRONOMY CONFERENCE IN ROME IN SEPTEMBER 1952 BY PROFESSOR BAADE FROM MT. PALOMAR, USA, REGARDING TWO OVERLAPPING GALAXIES IN SPACE. THEY WERE PHOTOGRAPHED AT THE LOCATION OF A DISTINCT RADIO EMISSION.

THERE IS NO CONTRADICTION WITH THE BIBLE IN ASSUMING THAT THE SKY IS A SOLID METALLIC SPHERE, LIKELY MADE OF BLACKENED IRON ON THE OUTSIDE, WITH INCREASINGLY PRECIOUS METALS TOWARDS THE INSIDE, CULMINATING IN A GOLDEN COVERING THAT ADORNED THE INTERIOR OF THE TEMPLE.

THE CELESTIAL SPHERES AND THE EARTHLY REALM STRETCH FROM THE EARTH TO THE HEAVENS, FILLED WITH ETHEREAL, GASEOUS REALMS OF THE SPIRIT WORLD. THIS GASEOUS SKY LIKELY HAS VARIOUS LEVELS, ARRANGED BOTH ABOVE AND WITHIN ONE ANOTHER, AS THERE ARE GASES OF DIFFERENT DENSITIES!

*

DO YOU NOT KNOW?

DO YOU NOT HEAR? HAS IT NOT BEEN PROCLAIMED TO YOU FROM THE BEGINNING? DO YOU NOT UNDERSTAND THE FOUNDATION OF THE EARTH? I SIT ABOVE THE CIRCLE OF THE EARTH, AND ITS INHABITANTS ARE LIKE GRASSHOPPERS; I SPREAD OUT THE HEAVENS LIKE A CURTAIN AND STRETCH THEM OUT LIKE A TENT FOR ONE TO DWELL IN.

ISAIAH 40:21-22

*

THE HEAVENS AND THE HEAVEN. THOSE WHO WISH TO EXAMINE THE CONCEPT OF HEAVEN BIBLICALLY ENCOUNTER A CURIOUS FACT THAT IS OFTEN OVERLOOKED EVEN BY BIBLICAL SCHOLARS. THE SCRIPTURE REFERS TO TWO TYPES OF HEAVEN. ONE IS ALWAYS MENTIONED IN THE PLURAL AS 'THE HEAVENS,' WHILE THE OTHER IS REFERRED TO IN THE SINGULAR AS 'THE HEAVEN.' IN THE OLD TESTAMENT, WE MOSTLY DEAL WITH 'THE HEAVENS.' IN DEUTERONOMY 10:14, BOTH FORMS APPEAR, AND IN 1 KINGS 8:27, SOLOMON, UNDER STRONG SPIRITUAL INSPIRATION DURING THE TEMPLE DEDICATION, PRAYS, SAYING: 'BUT WILL GOD REALLY DWELL ON THE EARTH? BEHOLD, THE HEAVENS AND THE HEAVEN OF HEAVENS CANNOT CONTAIN YOU, HOW MUCH LESS THIS HOUSE THAT I HAVE BUILT.' THUS, EVEN IN THE OLD TESTAMENT, THERE ARE THE HEAVENS, MEANING MULTIPLE HEAVENS, AND THEN THERE IS A HEAVEN, WHICH IS THE HEAVEN OF THESE MANY HEAVENS.

THIS REVELATION INCORPORATES THE NEW TESTAMENT AND LOGICALLY CARRIES IT THROUGH. IF WE PAY ATTENTION, MUCH WILL BECOME CLEAR TO US. HOWEVER, WE MUST NOT HOLD ONTO THE DEMONICALLY INSPIRED COPERNICAN WORLDVIEW IN THE BACKGROUND OF OUR THINKING. THIS ENDLESS EMPTY THREE-DIMENSIONAL UNIVERSE OF SCHOLARS IS ONE OF THE STRONGEST OBSTACLES TO UNDERSTANDING BIBLICAL TEXTS. IT HAS PERMEATED ALMOST ALL THEOLOGY, SERMONS, AND BIBLE STUDIES WITH THE LEAVEN OF GREEK PHILOSOPHY TO THIS DAY. WHEN WE THINK UPWARD, WE MUST ALWAYS LEARN TO THINK INWARD. THERE IS NO THREE-DIMENSIONAL SPATIAL INFINITY OF TWO OR MORE BILLION LIGHT-YEARS DEEP; IF WE ALLOW THIS ERROR TO SETTLE IN OUR MINDS AND IMAGINATION, WE SIMULTANEOUSLY PUSH THE TRUE HEAVENS FURTHER AWAY FROM US, SO THAT WE CAN NEVER FIND THEM. WE THEN LACK THE KEY TO UNDERSTANDING! THUS, WE FIND IN THE NEW TESTAMENT 'THE HEAVENS' AT ONE POINT AND 'HEAVEN' AT ANOTHER. UPON CLOSER EXAMINATION OF THE RELEVANT PASSAGES, WE CAN EASILY RECOGNIZE THAT 'HEAVEN' IS THE ACTUAL THRONE OF GOD. THIS 'SINGULAR HEAVEN' IS, SO TO SPEAK, THE HEAVEN OF THE 'PLURAL HEAVENS.' IN LUTHER'S TRANSLATION, THIS IS NOT ACCURATELY NOTED, NOR IN OTHER TRANSLATIONS, BUT IN THE CONCORDANT TRANSLATION BY KNOCHS, THIS IMPORTANT DISTINCTION IS RELIABLY CONVEYED. IN THE SINGULAR HEAVEN, WE FIND THE STAR-DECORATED CELESTIAL SPHERE, THE METALLIC HEAVEN, AT THE CENTER OF THE HOLLOW EARTH. IN THE PLURAL HEAVENS, WE FIND THE VARIOUS GAS-LIKE CELESTIAL SPHERES THAT DESCEND CONCENTRICALLY FROM THE HIGHEST HEAVEN TO THE EARTH AND ITS SEA OF AIR. THERE ARE DIFFERENT HEAVENLY LEVELS OR CELESTIAL WORLDS STACKED ON TOP OF EACH OTHER, EACH GOVERNED BY ONE OF THE PLANETS THAT ORBIT WITHIN THEM. THE ACTUAL HEAVEN ITSELF (SINGULAR HEAVEN) IS TODAY HIDDEN FROM OUR EYES. IT IS THE HEAVEN OF THE PLURAL HEAVENS OR HEAVENLY LEVELS. IN HEBREWS 9:23, WE FIND BOTH GROUPS OF HEAVENS CLEARLY PLACED SIDE BY SIDE. IT STATES: 'IT WAS NECESSARY THAT THE COPIES OF THE THINGS IN THE HEAVENS BE PURIFIED BY THESE SACRIFICES (BY THE SHEDDING OF BLOOD, SEE VERSE 22), BUT THE HEAVENLY THINGS THEMSELVES BY BETTER SACRIFICES THAN THESE. FOR CHRIST DID NOT ENTER A SANCTUARY MADE WITH HANDS, A MERE COPY OF THE TRUE ONE, BUT HE ENTERED INTO HEAVEN ITSELF, NOW TO APPEAR IN THE PRESENCE OF GOD ON OUR BEHALF...' THIS MEANS: IN THE HEAVENS, THERE ARE THINGS OR EXAMPLES OR MODELS OF THE EARTHLY TEMPLE AND ITS FURNISHINGS. THESE MODELS OR...

EXAMPLES IN THE HEAVENS CANNOT BE CLEANSED BY BLOODSHED AS EARTHLY REPLICAS CAN. THEREFORE, CHRIST ENTERED INTO HEAVEN ITSELF BEFORE THE FACE OF GOD AND HAS PERFECTED FOREVER THOSE WHO ARE SANCTIFIED THROUGH HIS ONE-TIME SACRIFICE. IN MATTHEW 3:16, A DOVE AND A VOICE COME FROM THE HEAVENS... MATTHEW 5:12: REJOICE AND BE GLAD, FOR YOUR REWARD IS GREAT IN HEAVEN. BECAUSE THE LEVELS OF HEAVEN AND THE REWARDS THAT ARE ATTAINED ARE DIFFERENT. IN CONTRAST, IN MATTHEW 6:26: LOOK AT THE BIRDS OF THE AIR... HERE, THE SKY DIRECTLY ABOVE THE EARTH IS MEANT, WHERE THE BIRDS FLY. SIMILARLY, IN MATTHEW 16:3... YOU KNOW HOW TO INTERPRET THE APPEARANCE OF THE SKY, MATTHEW 18:10: TAKE CARE THAT YOU DO NOT DESPISE ONE OF THESE LITTLE ONES, FOR I TELL YOU THAT THEIR ANGELS IN HEAVEN ALWAYS SEE THE FACE OF MY FATHER WHO IS IN HEAVEN. THIS FACE OF THE FATHER IS INDEED THE HEAVEN OF HEAVENS. MATTHEW 19:21: AND YOU WILL HAVE TREASURE IN HEAVEN. LIKEWISE, MATTHEW 6:20: BUT STORE UP FOR YOURSELVES TREASURES IN HEAVEN... FOR WHERE YOUR TREASURE IS, THERE YOUR HEART WILL BE ALSO. IN CONTRAST: THE BAPTISM OF JOHN, WHERE WAS IT FROM, FROM HEAVEN OR FROM MEN? (MATTHEW 21:25.) "AND WHOEVER SWEARS BY HEAVEN SWEARS BY THE THRONE OF GOD AND BY THE ONE WHO SITS ON IT (MATTHEW 23:22). FROM THIS PASSAGE, WE ALSO SEE THAT THIS SINGULAR HEAVEN, THE METALLIC CORE AND CENTRAL HEAVEN, IS THE THRONE OF GOD, NOT THE VARIOUS HEAVENLY SPHERES THAT EXTEND CONCENTRICALLY AROUND THE THRONE OF GOD TO THE EARTH'S CRUST. "BUT IMMEDIATELY AFTER THE DISTRESS OF THOSE DAYS, THE SUN WILL BE DARKENED, AND THE MOON WILL NOT GIVE ITS LIGHT, AND THE STARS WILL FALL FROM HEAVEN (FROM HEAVEN!), AND THE POWERS OF THE HEAVENS WILL BE SHAKEN (MATTHEW 24:29). THIS IS ONE OF THE PARTICULARLY ENLIGHTENING PASSAGES BECAUSE IT JUXTAPOSES HEAVEN AND THE HEAVENS. THE HEAVEN AS THE THRONE OF GOD IS ADORNED WITH STARS; IT IS THE METALLIC FIXED STAR SPHERE OF THE CORE HEAVEN, THEREFORE THE FIXED STARS CAN AND WILL FALL FROM THIS HEAVEN, INDEED THROUGH ALL THE HEAVENS DOWN TO THE EARTH'S CRUST. NOT THE PLANETS WILL FALL. THIS WILL SHAKE THE POWERS OF THESE HEAVENLY SPHERES. THE HEAVENLY WORLDS WILL TREMBLE. "AND THEN THE SIGN OF THE SON OF MAN WILL APPEAR IN HEAVEN..." (MATTHEW 24:29). WE HAVE SEEN AND CONTINUE TO SEE THAT THE INNERMOST HEAVEN, THE THRONE OF GOD WITH ITS STARS...

THE PASSAGE DESCRIBES THE CELESTIAL DOME WE SEE ABOVE US, REFLECTING HALF OF THE FIXED STAR SPHERE AS A VAULT IN THE SKY OVER THE EARTH. CURVED LIGHT RAYS IN THE EARTHLY REALM FACILITATE THIS REFLECTION. IT REFERENCES BIBLICAL VERSES ABOUT THE GATHERING OF THE CHOSEN ONES BY ANGELS AND THE ASCENSION OF THE LORD INTO HEAVEN, EMPHASIZING THE SIGNIFICANCE OF THIS EVENT. THE TEXT EXPLAINS THAT DURING HIS ASCENSION, JESUS PASSED THROUGH ALL THE HEAVENS, DEFEATING THE POWERS AND AUTHORITIES PRESENT THERE. IT ALSO DISCUSSES THE FALL OF SATAN FROM HEAVEN, INDICATING THAT WHILE HE HAS DOMINION OVER THE EARTH, HE HAS NOT YET REACHED IT, HAVING INSTEAD FALLEN INTO ONE OF THE HEAVENLY REALMS. THE NARRATIVE HIGHLIGHTS THE TIMELESS NATURE OF HEAVEN AND THE BEGINNING OF SATAN'S COUNTDOWN AFTER BEING CAST DOWN, NOTING THAT HE IS AWARE OF HIS LIMITED TIME.

IT IS POSSIBLE THAT SOMETHING HAS ALREADY OCCURRED IN HEAVEN FOR A LONG TIME ACCORDING TO OUR EARTHLY CONCEPTS OF TIME, WHICH HAS NOT YET MANIFESTED ON EARTH, AND VICE VERSA. THE FALL OF SATAN TO EARTH IS EQUIVALENT TO HIS INCARNATION IN THE ANTICHRIST, JUST AS THE DESCENT OF JESUS CHRIST TO EARTH WAS EQUIVALENT TO HIS INCARNATION ON EARTH. SATAN, UPON HIS FALL FROM THE CORE HEAVEN, WHERE HE ACCUSED THE BRETHREN, MUST HAVE FIERCELY DEFENDED HIMSELF IN EVERY HEAVENLY SPHERE, WHICH IS WHY THE BATTLE IN THE HEAVENS IS LIKELY STILL ONGOING. THE LORD WAITS AT THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD UNTIL ALL HIS ENEMIES ARE MADE A FOOTSTOOL FOR HIS FEET. THIS FOOTSTOOL IS THE EARTH (MATTHEW 5:35). MEASURED BY EARTHLY EXPERIENCE, THIS WAITING AND GRACE PERIOD HAS LASTED FOR TWO THOUSAND YEARS, BUT IT IS NOW DRAWING TO A CLOSE. THEREFORE, IT IS ALSO SAID IN REVELATION 12:12: 'THEREFORE REJOICE, YOU HEAVENS (PLURAL!) AND YOU WHO DWELL IN THEM (OR HAVE TENTS IN THEM).' FOR AS SOON AS THE DEVIL IS CAST OUT OF THE LAST HEAVENLY SPHERE, HE LANDS ON THE EARTH AND THE SEA AND UNLEASHES HIS FURY THERE. THE GREAT TRIBULATION BEGINS ON EARTH. ACCORDING TO JOHN 6:32 FF, THE LORD JESUS CAME DOWN AS THE BREAD OF GOD FROM THE CORE HEAVEN, THE THRONE HEAVEN OF GOD, MEANING HE WAS THERE BEFORE, FOR THE WORD WAS WITH GOD, AND GOD WAS THE WORD... FROM THIS THRONE HEAVEN OF GOD, GOD'S WRATH WILL ALSO BE REVEALED AGAINST ALL UNGODLINESS AND UNRIGHTEOUSNESS OF MEN (ROMANS 1:18)... FOR THERE IN THIS HEAVEN IS ALSO THE WORLD OF FIRE, FROM WHICH FIRE HAS ALWAYS FALLEN TO EARTH (LUKE 9:54; ACTS 2:3). THE HEBREW WORD FOR HEAVEN CAN BE TRANSLATED AS: FIRE WATER! IN 2 CORINTHIANS 5:1 IT SAYS: 'FOR WE KNOW THAT IF OUR EARTHLY TENT IS DESTROYED, WE HAVE A BUILDING FROM GOD, A HOUSE NOT MADE WITH HANDS, ETERNAL IN THE HEAVENS. FOR IN THIS WE INDEED GROAN, LONGING TO BE CLOTHED WITH OUR HABITATION WHICH IS FROM HEAVEN... THIS MEANS: A DWELLING AWAITS US THAT IS FROM HEAVEN, YES, FROM GOD HIMSELF, NOT MADE WITH HANDS (LIKE OUR EARTHLY BODY). THIS ETERNAL HOUSE IS NOW READY FOR US IN THE HEAVENS. THIS ALIGNS WITH THE WORD IN JOHN 14:2: 'IN MY FATHER'S HOUSE ARE MANY MANSIONS...' IN THE FATHER'S HOUSE, HEAVEN IS THE THRONE, AND THE HEAVENS ARE THE FLOORS WITH MANY MANSIONS... 'FOR DAVID DID NOT ASCEND INTO THE HEAVENS...' (ACTS 2:34). 'JESUS CHRIST, WHOM HEAVEN MUST RECEIVE UNTIL THE TIMES OF THE RESTORATION OF ALL THINGS...' (ACTS 3:21).

WHEN STEPHEN LOOKED STEADFASTLY UP TO HEAVEN, HE SAW THE HEAVENS OPENED AND THE SON OF MAN STANDING AT THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD (ACTS 7:56). THUS, STEPHEN SAW THROUGH ALL THE HEAVENLY REALMS UP TO THE HEAVENLY THRONE OF GOD, INTO WHICH THE LORD JESUS HAD ASCENDED. THIS PASSAGE CLEARLY CONFIRMS THAT IT IS POSSIBLE TO SEE THROUGH THE HEAVENLY REALMS TO THE HEAVENLY THRONE OF GOD FROM THE EARTH. PAUL WAS OVERSHADOWED BY THE HEAVENLY LIGHT FROM THE THRONE OF HEAVEN NEAR DAMASCUS, WHICH IS WHY HE BECAME BLIND. HERE, THE HEAVENLY REALMS WERE NOT INVOLVED, BUT ONLY HEAVEN AND ITS LORD. PETER ALSO SAW THE HEAVENS OPENED IN ACTS 10:11, ALONG WITH THE SHEET COMING DOWN WITH THE CREATURES AND THE VOICE... PAUL DESCRIBES IN 2 CORINTHIANS 12:2 HIS RAPTURES FIRST TO THE THIRD HEAVEN, MEANING THE THIRD OF THE HEAVENLY REALMS, AND LATER TO PARADISE, WHICH LIKELY REPRESENTS THE LOWEST OF THE HEAVENLY REALMS. SOME HAVE CONCLUDED FROM THIS PASSAGE THAT THERE ARE ONLY THREE HEAVENS AND PARADISE. HOWEVER, IT IS NOT STATED THAT PAUL WAS RAPTURED TO THE THRONE OF GOD, BUT ONLY TO THE THIRD OF THE PLURAL HEAVENS, WHERE HE HEARD UNSPEAKABLE WORDS. HE COULD HARDLY HAVE ENDURED ANYTHING HIGHER. FROM THE NUMBER OF PLANETS, I.E., THE SEVEN STARS IN THE RIGHT HAND OF THE LORD (REVELATION 1:16), IT CAN BE INFERRED THAT THERE ARE AT LEAST SEVEN SUCH HEAVENLY REALMS, WHICH THE LORD DIVIDES AMONG THE OVERCOMERS OF THE SEVEN TYPES OF CHURCHES IN THE SEVEN LETTERS AT THE BEGINNING OF REVELATION AFTER THEIR PURIFICATION FROM SATAN AND HIS ARMY (REVELATION 2:28). IN EPHESIANS 6:9 IT SAYS: AND YOU MASTERS, DO THE SAME TO THEM, AND GIVE UP THREATENING, KNOWING THAT BOTH THEIR MASTER AND YOURS IS IN HEAVEN, AND THERE IS NO PARTIALITY WITH HIM. ALTHOUGH CHRIST SITS AT THE RIGHT HAND OF THE FATHER IN THE THRONE HEAVEN OR UPPER HEAVEN, HE IS SIMULTANEOUSLY PRESENT AS LORD IN THE HEAVENS AND ALSO PRESENT ON EARTH WHEREVER TWO OR THREE ARE GATHERED IN HIS NAME. HEAVEN, THE HEAVENS, AND THE EARTH ARE PERVADED BY THE OMNIPRESENCE OF THE LORD JESUS, FOR THIS IS PART OF 'ALL AUTHORITY THAT HAS BEEN GIVEN TO HIM IN HEAVEN AND ON EARTH.' THIS ALIGNS WITH THE STATEMENT IN PHILIPPIANS 3:20: FOR OUR CITIZENSHIP IS IN THE HEAVENS... THIS MEANS THAT SOMEWHERE ON A HEAVENLY LEVEL, IN ONE OF THE HEAVENLY REALMS, OUR DWELLING PLACE WILL ONE DAY BE BEFORE THE THRONE OF GOD. THE SAME IS STATED IN COLOSSIANS 1:5 WITH THE WORDS: 'BECAUSE OF THE HOPE THAT IS LAID UP FOR YOU IN THE HEAVENS, OF WHICH YOU HEARD BEFORE IN THE WORD OF THE TRUTH OF THE GOSPEL...' AND 1 PETER 1:4: 'TO AN INCORRUPTIBLE...'

AND AN UNBLEMISHED AND UNFADING INHERITANCE, WHICH IS KEPT IN THE HEAVENS FOR YOU... THE THESSALONIANS, ON THE OTHER HAND, EXPECT THE ARRIVAL OF THE SON OF GOD FROM THE HEAVENS TO BE REVEALED ON EARTH (1 THESS. 1:10). ACCORDING TO 1 THESS. 4:16, THE LORD HIMSELF WILL DESCEND FROM HEAVEN INTO THE AIR, MEANING THROUGH THE HEAVENS DOWN TO THE AIR OF THE EARTH, WHERE THE BELIEVERS WILL THEN BE CAUGHT UP. BECAUSE IT NOTABLY SAYS: 'INTO THE AIR' (NOT: INTO THE HEAVENS!), THIS RAPTURE AND GATHERING WITH THE LORD ABOVE WILL LIKELY BE VISIBLE TO THOSE ON EARTH. ACCORDING TO HEB. 7:26 AND 8:1, THE LORD JESUS HAS BECOME A HEAVENLY HIGH PRIEST HIGHER THAN THE HEAVENS AND HAS SAT DOWN AT THE RIGHT HAND OF THE THRONE OF MAJESTY IN THE HEAVENS. IN HEB. 12:22, A HEAVENLY ASSEMBLY IS DESCRIBED IN THE HEAVENLY JERUSALEM, MENTIONING VARIOUS CIRCLES FROM THE HEAVENLY REALMS: MYRIADS OF ANGELS, THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, THE CHURCH OF THE FIRSTBORN, WHO ARE REGISTERED IN THE HEAVENS, AND SPIRITS OF THE PERFECTED RIGHTEOUS. IN LUKE 10:20, THE LORD SAYS TO THE DISCIPLES: 'BUT REJOICE THAT YOUR NAMES ARE WRITTEN IN THE HEAVENS.' HOWEVER, ONLY THE UNLEARNED RECOGNIZE THIS, NOT THE WISE AND LEARNED. THE HEAVENS AND THE HEAVENS WILL BE SHAKEN OR MOVED, NOT JUST THE EARTH ACCORDING TO HEB. 12:26. IN THIS CONTEXT, THE EXPRESSION FOUND SEVERAL TIMES IN THE OLD TESTAMENT IS NOTEWORTHY: 'GOD BOWED THE HEAVENS AND CAME DOWN!' (2 SAM. 22:8; PSALM 18:10; 144:5.) THIS WOULD IMPLY A SHIFTING OF THE CONCENTRIC HEAVENLY SPHERES WITHIN THE EARTH, JUST AS A BALL BEARING IS ROTATED WITHIN A SPHERICAL SHELL. ANOTHER PROOF OF THE HEAVENLY WORLD WITHIN THE EARTH'S SHELL, FOR WHAT COULD THE EXPRESSION 'HE BOWED THE HEAVENS' MEAN IN INFINITE SPACE? ACCORDING TO 2 PETER 3:12, ON THE DAY OF GOD, THE HEAVENS WILL CATCH FIRE, BE DISSOLVED, AND THE ELEMENTS WILL MELT IN THE BLAZE. THEN NEW HEAVENS (PLURAL) AND A NEW EARTH WILL COME, IN WHICH RIGHTEOUSNESS DWELLS. THUS, IT IS NOT THE HEAVEN AS GOD'S THRONE THAT WILL BURN, BUT THE HEAVENS SURROUNDING THE HEAVEN. MEANWHILE, THE INHABITANTS OF THE HEAVENLY REALMS WILL ALSO HAVE TO UNDERGO A PROCESS OF TRANSFORMATION BY FIRE, FOR WE WILL ALL BE CHANGED (1 COR. 15:51). HEAVENLY THINGS APPEAR PARTICULARLY FREQUENTLY IN REVELATION. THERE WE FIND IN REV. 4:1 FF. A DESCRIPTION OF THE THRONE-HEAVEN CENTER AND CONCENTRIC AROUND THIS CENTER HEAVENLY REALMS, THE 24 THRONES, AND FURTHER THE SEVEN SPIRITS OF GOD, AND FINALLY A SEA OF GLASS.

NOTHING, INTO THE EMPTY SPACE, BILLIONS OF LIGHT-YEARS. THIS REMINDS ME OF THE REMARK MADE BY THE SKEPTICAL DOCTOR VIRCHOW, WHO SAID HE HAD OPERATED ON AND EXAMINED SO MANY HUMAN BODIES BUT HAD NEVER FOUND A SOUL! WE SEE IN REVELATION 8:1 AND FOLLOWING HOW THE SEVEN PLANETS OR ANGELS BLOW THEIR TRUMPETS, ONE AFTER THE OTHER, STARTING FROM THE TOP DOWN TO THE SEVENTH. AS MOUNTAINS AND STARS FALL FROM THE SKY TO THE EARTH OR INTO THE SEA. THE TWO RESURRECTED WITNESSES ASCEND TO HEAVEN IN A CLOUD (REVELATION 11:12). THE TEMPLE OF GOD BECOMES VISIBLE IN HEAVEN (REVELATION 11:19). BETWEEN THE FOURTH AND FIFTH PLANETARY SPHERES, AN EAGLE FLIES THROUGH THE MIDDLE HEAVEN PROCLAIMING AN ETERNAL GOSPEL (REVELATION 14:6). FINALLY, THE HEAVENS OPEN IN REVELATION 19:11, ALLOWING THE DIVINE ARMY ON WHITE HORSES TO DESCEND TO EARTH. IN REVELATION 20:11, THE EARTH AND THE HEAVENS DISAPPEAR, AS THE HEAVENS HAD ALREADY BEEN CONSUMED AND DISSOLVED BY FIRE. IN THEIR PLACE, THE GREAT WHITE THRONE IS ESTABLISHED FOR THE FINAL JUDGMENT AND A LAKE OF FIRE, AND THEN IN REVELATION 21:1 AND FOLLOWING, A NEW HEAVEN AND A NEW EARTH, JUST AS IT WAS ANNOUNCED IN 2 PETER 3:13. THOSE WHO THINK: HOW SMALL EVERYTHING WILL BE WHEN IT APPROACHES THE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE, THE HEAVENLY THRONE OF GOD, ARE STILL THINKING IN EARTHLY THREE-DIMENSIONAL TERMS. WHAT WE CALL 'SMALL' HERE BECOMES, WITH THE ADDITION OF FURTHER DIMENSIONS, TRULY IMMENSE AND MAJESTICALLY LARGE. ONE MUST JUDGE SPIRITUALLY HERE, NOT JUST EMOTIONALLY, THAT IS, ONE MUST DISCERN.

WE HAVE RECOGNIZED THE FIERY WORLD AND ITS INHABITANTS, THE LOCALITY AND FORM OF HEAVEN. HEAVEN IS A CENTRAL POINT AROUND WHICH THE HEAVENS AND ULTIMATELY THE EARTH ARE ARRANGED AS CONCENTRIC SPHERES OR SPHERICAL WORLDS. AS LONG AS OUR CONCEPTION REMAINS MATERIALISTIC, WE WILL ENVISION A LARGE SPHERE OR AN EGG, BECAUSE OUR IMAGINATIVE HUMAN CAPACITY ONLY EXTENDS TO THE THIRD DIMENSION, THUS ENCLOSING EVERY IMAGE WITHIN ITSELF. HOWEVER, WHERE OUR IMAGINATIVE CAPACITY ENDS, FAITH CAN PENETRATE FURTHER AS THE EYE INTO THE INVISIBLE, GRASPING THE FURTHER CONNECTIONS OR DIMENSIONS IN BELIEF. THE FURTHER DIMENSION BEGINS WHERE OUR UNDERSTANDING STOPS, THAT IS, WHERE WE SAY: 'IT IS IMPOSSIBLE OR NONSENSICAL OR UNTHINKABLE THAT THE HEAVENLY WORLDS SHOULD EXIST IN AN EVER SMALLER SPACE THAN THE EARTHLY WORLD.'

ACCORDING TO THE WORD OF GOD, THE HEAVENS ARE FIERY WORLDS THAT ARE DENSELY POPULATED AND INHABITED. WE CAN CALL THE EARTH A WATER WORLD, BECAUSE ITS BASIC ELEMENT IS WATER. IT ALSO EXISTS IN WATER AND RESTS ON WATER (PS. 24:2 AND OTHERS), AND WITHOUT WATER NO LIFE IS POSSIBLE ON IT. WE CAN ALSO CALL THE HEAVENS FIRE WORLDS, BECAUSE THEIR ELEMENT IS FIRE. WE READ AGAIN AND AGAIN IN THE OLD TESTAMENT: THEN FIRE FELL FROM HEAVEN! THE HEBREW WORD FOR HEAVEN: "SCHAMA JIM" ALSO CONTAINS THE WORD FIRE, WHICH CAN BE TRANSLATED AS: FIERY WATER OR SEA OF FIRE! WE INITIALLY RECOGNIZED THE WATER ABOVE THE SOLID OR EXPANSE AS THE ROUNDING OR CURVATURE OF THE EARTH UPWARDS, WHICH MEANS THAT THERE IS ALWAYS WATER ABOVE THE SOLID FOR EVERY PERSON ON EARTH. BUT THIS WORD CAN ALSO BE UNDERSTOOD TO MEAN THAT TOWARDS THE INSIDE, IN THE HEAVENS, THERE IS WATER, GASEOUS OR FIERY, IN OTHER WORDS HEAVENLY WATER.

WATER.

WE HAVE ALREADY RECOGNIZED THE FOLLOWING AS A BASIC PRINCIPLE FOR ALL OBSERVATION OF THE BIBLICAL UNIVERSE: UPWARDS ALWAYS LEAD INWARDS, AND DOWNWARDS ALWAYS LEAD OUTWARDS AT THE SAME TIME. WE MUST HOLD ON TO THIS FUNDAMENTAL LAW, BECAUSE IT INCLUDES THE MOST PERFECT BODY SHAPE THERE IS: THE SPHERE. WHERE THE FORECOURT IS, IS OUTSIDE. WHERE THE HOLY OF HOLIES IS, IS INSIDE! FROM A SPHERICAL SHELL, THINGS CAN ONLY GO INWARDS UPWARDS, INTO THE HOLY OF HOLIES, NOT OUTWARDS, AWAY FROM THE CENTER OF THE SPHERE! SINCE EVERYTHING EARTHLY IS A METAPHOR, THE SALT IN THE EARTHLY SEA BECOMES FOR US AN IMAGE OF THE FIRE THAT IS PRESENT IN THE UPPER SEA. SALT HAS A SHARP, CONSUMING PURIFYING POWER; IT IS A GOOD IMAGE OF FIRE. WHAT WOULD BECOME OF THE HUGE MASS OF WATER IN THE SEA IF IT DID NOT HAVE SALT IN IT TO PROTECT IT FROM DECAY? THE CRYSTAL SEA ABOVE ALSO HAS FIRE IN IT TO REMAIN PURE. THE WATERS ABOVE THE SOLID ARE SO "LIGHT" BECAUSE THEY ARE IN A MORE GASEOUS STATE, BUT ABOVE ALL BECAUSE THEY ARE MIXED WITH FIRE. FIRE, HOWEVER, ALWAYS BURNS UPWARDS, HAS A HEIGHT WITHIN IT, AS WE HAVE SEEN. THE WATERS BELOW THE SOLID ARE HEAVY, THEY LACK FIRE, THE SALT IS ONLY AN EARTHLY SUBSTITUTE FOR FIRE, WHICH MAKES THE WATER EVEN HEAVIER. AND IT IS SIGNIFICANT THAT EVEN HEAVIER WATERS ARE NEEDED TO BREAK UP THE ATOM THAN THE NATURAL, EARTHLY WATERS. THESE "HEAVY WATERS" HAVE TO BE ARTIFICIALLY PRODUCED AT GREAT EXPENSE. IN CONTRAST TO THE LIGHT FIERY WATERS OF THE HEAVENS AND

IT IS SAID THAT THE NORMAL WATERS OF EARTH ARE PERHAPS CALLED DEVIL'S WATER... IN PSALM 148:4 WE READ: PRAISE HIM, YOU HEAVENS OF HEAVENS, AND YOU WATERS ABOVE THE HEAVENS (WHICH MEANS THAT THESE WATERS ARE ABOVE THE HEAVENS BUT BELOW THE HIGHEST HEAVEN, FOR THE HEAVEN AT THE CENTER IS THE HEAVEN OF HEAVENS! THE APOCRYPHA ALSO SPEAKS OF THE WATERS ABOVE, FOR EXAMPLE, IN THE 'SONG OF THE THREE MEN IN THE FIERY FURNACE,' VERSE 37 STATES: ALL OF YOU, PRAISE HIM FOREVER! WATERS ABOVE IN THE HEAVENS, PRAISE THE LORD, EXALT AND GLORIFY HIM. FROM THE CONTEMPLATION OF THESE TWO ELEMENTS, FIRE AND WATER, WE GAIN IMPORTANT INSIGHTS. WATER IS THE VISIBLE RESULT OR THE BIRTH FROM THE UNION OF TWO (INVISIBLE) GASES, THUS ESSENCE FROM THE INVISIBLE WORLD: HYDROGEN AND OXYGEN. THIS RESULT OF THE UNION OF HYDROGEN WITH OXYGEN, WHICH IS BORN INTO VISIBILITY, I.E., ON EARTH, POSSESSES AN INSATIABLE DESIRE AND STRIVING TO ALWAYS RUN TO THE LOWEST POINT, WHICH MEANS: TO ALWAYS SEEK THE GREATEST DISTANCE FROM GOD, AWAY FROM THE CENTER OF ALL THINGS, FOR WHAT STRIVES FROM THE HEIGHT AND THUS AWAY FROM THE CENTER TO THE DEPTH FLEES GOD, WHO DWELLS IN THE HEIGHT AND IN THE SANCTUARY. THIS TENDENCY OF FLEEING FROM THE CENTER OUTWARD OR DOWNWARD HAS BEEN WITH WATER SINCE IT WAS SEPARATED FROM FIRE. AND THIS SEPARATION IS UNNATURAL OR UNGODLY, MEANING IT CORRESPONDS TO THE FALL OF SIN IN THE ORIGINAL CREATION (GENESIS 1:2). FOR BEFORE AND IN PERFECTION, WATER AND FIRE WERE UNITED. FOR US FALLEN HUMANS, IT IS 'NATURAL' THAT WATER AND FIRE ARE MORTAL ENEMIES; IF ONE TRIES TO UNITE THEM, EITHER THE WATER DIES BY EVAPORATING OR THE FIRE DIES BY EXTINGUISHING. HOWEVER, WE MUST NEVER ACCEPT THE NATURAL STATES OF OUR FALLEN WORLD AS FACTS THAT ARE IN ORDER AND WHOSE CHANGE IS IMPOSSIBLE AND UNDESIRABLE. ON THE CONTRARY, WE MUST PLACE THE GREAT QUESTION MARKS OF THE FALL OF SIN BEHIND ALL NATURAL PHENOMENA. THAT WATER IS A HEAVENLY BIRTH IS EVIDENT IN ITS ABILITY TO STILL AWAKEN AND PROMOTE LIFE EVEN IN THE GOD-FORSAKEN EARTH, TO CLEANSE, AND ULTIMATELY, WITH THE HELP OF FIRE, TO RISE AGAIN TO WHERE IT CAME FROM. WATER TRULY REPRESENTS THE ONE WHO HAS COME TO SEEK WHAT IS LOST, WHO HAS DESCENDED TO THE LOWEST PLACES OF THE EARTH, BUT WHO THEN, THROUGH THE FIERY JUDGMENT OF THE CROSS, HAS ALSO ASCENDED AGAIN TO GOD'S THRONE, SO THAT HE MAY...

ALL FULFILLED. WATER IS LIKE THE PRODIGAL SON WHO RUNS AWAY FROM THE FATHER'S HOUSE, SINKING DEEPER AND DEEPER, ALWAYS SEEKING THE LOWEST POINT, WASTING HIS FORTUNE, HIS VITALITY, AND HIS ABILITY TO REFRESH OTHERS. WATER HAS A HIDDEN SENSE OF SACRIFICE, FOR AS IT FLOWS TO THE GREATEST DEPTH, IT ALWAYS MOVES TOWARDS DIVINE JUDGMENT, WHICH FINDS ALL DISTANCE FROM GOD AND ULTIMATELY TRANSFORMS IT INTO A RETURN TO GOD. WATER FLOWS DOWN TO THE ROOTS WHILE SIMULTANEOUSLY PUSHING THE PLANT UPWARDS. THIS IS WHY THE LORD JESUS BRINGS THE WATER OF LIFE: AND THIS IS WHY ONE MUST ALSO BE BAPTIZED WITH WATER FOR REPENTANCE, THAT IS, FOR A RETURN. THE HARLOT SITS BY MANY WATERS, YET SHE WILL BE BURNED! (REV. 17:15.) IN CONTRAST TO THE LIVING WATERS OR THE WATER OF LIFE, THERE IS ALSO THE WATER OF DEATH AND THE STREAMS OF BELIAL (PS. 18:5). THE SHADOWS (THE DEAD) TREMBLE BENEATH THE WATERS AND THEIR INHABITANTS, AS STATED IN JOB 26:5. LIFE ON EARTH, WHOSE ELEMENT IS WATER, IS THUS THE CARNAL LIFE THAT SEEKS TO ASSERT ITSELF IN DISTANCE FROM AND ENMITY TOWARDS GOD. BUT IT CANNOT DO SO WITH WATER ALONE; LIGHT IS ALSO NECESSARY. LIGHT IS THE MEANS OF REVEALING TRUTH. 'SEND YOUR LIGHT AND YOUR TRUTH!' (PS. 43:3.) THE FIRST THING THE SPIRIT OF GOD BROODED OVER THE ROARING WATERS OF THE DEEP WAS THE SENDING OF LIGHT: 'LET THERE BE LIGHT!' WATER AND LIGHT TOGETHER AWAKEN LIFE ON EARTH. WE HAVE FOUND THAT WATER IS A SEPARATION FROM FIRE, FROM FIERY WATER, THUS ON ITS WAY TO THE DEPTHS IT CARRIES DIVINE, HEAVENLY GIFTS AND POWERS. LIGHT IS NOW ANOTHER SEPARATION FROM HEAVENLY FIRELIGHT; IT IS THE GLOW AND REFLECTION OF HEAVENLY FIRE AND ALSO CARRIES DIVINE, HEAVENLY GIFTS AND POWERS. BOTH, LIGHT AND WATER, COMPLEMENT EACH OTHER; IN BOTH, THERE ALSO REST DESTRUCTIVE FORCES FOR CARNAL LIFE ON EARTH. THERE IS A STRIKING KINSHIP BETWEEN LIGHT AND WATER. WE SPEAK OF LIGHT STREAMS AND LIGHT FLOODS, OF LIGHT WAVES AND LIGHT SOURCES AND THE SEA OF LIGHT. DOES LIGHT SOMEHOW ORIGINATE FROM THE WATERS ABOVE THE FIRMAMENT? WHEN THE PLANT HAS WATER, IT ONLY NEEDS LIGHT TO THRIVE. LIGHT BECOMES DAY AND WATER BECOMES THE SEA. WHEN LIGHT DISAPPEARS, IT BECOMES NIGHT, IN WHICH INDIVIDUAL LIGHTS SHINE. WHEN THE SEA CEASES, IT BECOMES DRY LAND, IN WHICH INDIVIDUAL SPRINGS AND STREAMS FLOW. LIGHT IS ALSO NECESSARY FOR CLEANSING LIKE WATER; LIGHT CAN PENETRATE TO THE GREATEST DEPTHS, CONTAINING ALL COLOR SALTS! WHEN THE SPIRIT OF GOD BROODED OVER THE WATERS...

FIRST, HE CREATED THE LIGHT. FROM WATER AND SPIRIT COMES THE BIRTH OF LIGHT! LIGHT IS A CONNECTING MEDIUM, A DIVINE MESSENGER BETWEEN WATER AND SPIRIT, BETWEEN HEAVEN AND EARTH, BETWEEN THE VISIBLE AND INVISIBLE WORLDS. BECAUSE LIGHT IS SEPARATE FROM FIRE, AND CAN PENETRATE INTO THE DEPTHS LIKE WATER, IT ACTS AS A LIFE-GIVING AND SUSTAINING FORCE. FIRE ITSELF WOULD DESTROY EARTHLY LIFE IN ITS INFANCY. THE LIFE THAT ARISES AND GROWS FAR FROM FIRE, THAT IS, FROM THE CENTER AND THUS FROM GOD, IS LIFE ON EARTH, IN THE FLESH, SUSTAINED BY THE DIVINE MESSENGERS AND POWERS OF WATER AND LIGHT, WITH THE GOAL OF EVENTUALLY BECOMING VIABLE AS A SPIRITUAL BEING FOR THE WORLD OF FIRE ITSELF. LIFE IS ALWAYS FIRE, ALWAYS FLAME, BUT THIS FLAME ON EARTH IS STILL WEAK, UNAWARE OF ITSELF, AND SMOLDERS HIDDEN BEHIND A VEIL OF FLESH AND BLOOD. 'THE SPIRIT OF MAN IS THE LAMP OF JEHOVAH, PENETRATING ALL THE CHAMBERS OF THE BODY' (PROVERBS 20:27). THIS FLAME OF FIRE GIVEN BY GOD, THE SPIRIT OF THE SOUL WITHIN US, SHOULD BECOME AWARE OF ITS DIVINITY THROUGH SPIRITUAL GENERATION AND BECOME VIABLE FOR THE HEAVENLY WORLD OF FIRE THROUGH SPIRITUAL GROWTH. OF ALL THE EXPLANATIONS FOR THE CONCEPT OF 'LIFE', THE EXPLANATION WITH 'FIRE' IS THE MOST ACCURATE, AS IT EXPRESSES THE ORIGIN OF LIFE OR FIRE FROM THE HEAVENLY REALMS AND THUS FROM GOD. BECAUSE OF THIS, THE LIFE, THE FIRE SPIRIT ORIGINATING FROM GOD, WILL NEVER REST IN MAN UNTIL IT IS NOURISHED AND SATISFIED BY FIRE NOURISHMENT, THAT IS, BY SPIRIT ITSELF. LIGHT AND WATER ARE MERELY TEMPORARY INITIAL NOURISHMENT, CORRESPONDING TO THE MILK OF INFANCY. FIRE, IN CONTRAST TO WATER, HAS THE CHARACTERISTIC OF ALWAYS STRIVING FOR HEIGHT, BURNING AWAY FROM THE DEPTHS UPWARDS. WHOEVER 'RECOGNIZES' WATER RECOGNIZES THE DEPTHS; WHOEVER 'RECOGNIZES' FIRE RECOGNIZES THE HEIGHTS (EPHESIANS 3:18). THEREFORE, IF FIRE LIGHT IS THE ELEMENT OF THE HEAVENLY LIGHT-FIRE WORLDS, THEN THE CHARACTERISTIC OF ALL THAT IS HEAVENLY IS TO ALWAYS STRIVE UPWARDS, TO BURN TOWARDS THE CENTER, TOWARDS GOD. IN FIRE WATER OR WATERY FIRE, THAT IS, IN THE UNION OF THESE TWO DIVINE CREATIONS OF HEIGHT AND DEPTH, THE SPIRITUAL CAPABILITY WOULD THUS BE CONTAINED, ABLE TO MOVE UPWARDS AND DOWNWARDS, INTO HEIGHTS AND INTO EVERY DEPTH. ONLY SPIRITUAL BEINGS CAN FILL THE UNIVERSE WITH ALL ITS DIMENSIONS. HOWEVER, IN SEPARATION, WATER LIFE OR ANIMAL LIFE IN THE FLESH CAN ONLY STRIVE DOWNWARDS OR DEVELOP, WHILE THE FIRE LIFE OF THE HEAVENLY CAN ONLY STRIVE UPWARDS.

HOWEVER, LIFE UNITES BOTH FORMS OF EXISTENCE AND WILL THEREFORE HAVE AUTHORITY IN HEAVEN AND ON EARTH. TO ACHIEVE THIS, IT MUST FIRST PASS THROUGH THE WATER AS WELL AS THROUGH THE FIRE OF LIFE AND EXPERIENCE. FOR EVERYONE WILL BE SALTED WITH FIRE! (MARK 9:49.) SINCE WE ORIGINATE FROM THE HEAVENLY REALMS - FOR WE ARE OF DIVINE LINEAGE - WE CARRY WITHIN US THE EVER-BURNING DIVINE FIRE OF ETERNAL LONGING, AND BECAUSE WE ARE ALSO IN THE FLESH, WE HAVE THE OPPORTUNITY TO EXPERIENCE AND ENDURE THE DEPTHS, WHICH ULTIMATELY MAKES US SUPERIOR TO ALL HEAVENLY BEINGS WHO HAVE NOT YET GONE THROUGH THE LIFE AT THE DEPTHS OF THE EARTH, MEANING THEY HAVE NOT YET SUFFERED THROUGH IT. WOULD IT BE THE WAY OF ALL HEAVENLY BEINGS, THAT IS, THE BEINGS OF THE FIRE WORLD, TO DIVEST THEMSELVES AND GO THROUGH THE WATERS OF EARTHLY LIFE AND EXISTENCE IN THE FLESH ONCE OR SEVERAL TIMES? THIS WOULD CERTAINLY EXPLAIN WHY THERE ARE SO MANY EARTHLY BIRTHS, WHY 'THE STARS FALL TO EARTH,' AND WHERE THE MANY SOULS THAT ARE BORN ON EARTH COME FROM. IT WOULD THEN BE A GREAT EXCHANGE OR A CYCLE FROM THE HEAVENLY PLACES DOWN TO THE EARTH AND EVEN DEEPER OR FURTHER OUT THAN THE EARTH AND BACK UP AGAIN, A CYCLE OF BIRTHS, WHOSE ULTIMATE GOAL IS THE SPIRITUAL EMBODIMENT, THAT IS, THE ESSENTIAL UNION OF THE SEEKING, OUTWARDLY PURIFYING, LOVING DEEP FORCES OF WATER WITH THE EVEN MORE LOVING, ZEALOUS, WORSHIPPING, INWARDLY PURIFYING, CONSUMING HIGH FORCES OF FIRE IN A SPHERE OF CONSCIOUSNESS OR PERSONALITY. FROM WATER AND SPIRIT! THIS WOULD DESCRIBE THE EMERGENCE OF NEW GODS OR SONS OF GOD! THE HEAVENS WOULD THEN BE INHABITED BY SUCH BEINGS WHO HAVE ALREADY COMPLETED THE SUFFERING JOURNEY THROUGH THE EARTHLY WATER WORLD AND BY OTHER FIRE BEINGS WHO STILL HAVE THIS JOURNEY AHEAD OF THEM, WHOSE ELEMENTS ARE THE LAWS OF FIRE AND THE FIRE WORLDS, YET THEY LONG TO GAZE INTO THE TRANSFORMATIVE MYSTERY OF SPIRITUAL EMBODIMENT, WHICH OCCURS THROUGH SINFUL HUMAN BIRTH AND THE POSSIBLE REBIRTH FROM WATER AND SPIRIT WITHIN IT. THIS ALSO ALIGNS WITH ALL THE STATEMENTS OF SCRIPTURE. THEY SAY THAT THERE ARE HEAVENLY INHABITANTS, ANGELS, ARCHANGELS, CHERUBIM, SERAPHIM, SPIRITS, STARS, HEAVENLY HOSTS, BUT THEY ALSO SAY THAT THE SPIRIT SOULS OF DECEASED HUMANS ARE UP THERE (WITH THE LORD), WHETHER AS SLEEPERS OR WATCHERS. AMONG THE FIRE BEINGS CREATED FOR THE HEAVENLY WORLDS, THERE HAS ALSO BEEN A FALL FROM GOD, RESULTING IN DARK FIRE BEINGS, WHO NEVERTHELESS PERSIST UNTIL THE END.

THE CELESTIAL REALMS HAVE SEATING AND LIVING OPPORTUNITIES. 'WANDERING STARS, FOR WHOM THE DARKNESS OF THE ABYSS IS RESERVED FOR AN AGE... SOULS THAT HAVE NO SPIRIT!' (JUD. 13:19). IN FACT, ASTRONOMERS HAVE LONG DISCOVERED 'DARK STARS' IN LARGE NUMBERS. BY THE WAY, THE GREEK WORD FOR 'PLANET' CAN BE TRANSLATED AS WANDERING OR ERRANT STAR. THERE ARE DARK PLANETS, MEANING NON-LUMINOUS, NON-RADIANT ONES! HOW DID JUDAS KNOW THIS BACK THEN? ONLY IN THE END TIMES WILL SATAN AND HIS ANGELS AND STARS BE CAST DOWN FROM THE HEAVENS TO THE EARTH AFTER A BATTLE, AND THE BELIEVERS WILL BE TRANSFORMED AND TAKEN UP. THE SPIRIT OF GOD IS THE SLOW, GENTLE MEANS OF GOD'S SELF-COMMUNICATION, WHICH IS A CONSUMING FIRE, MEANING A FIRE THAT CONSUMES OR DESIRES FLESH-SOULS AS A SACRIFICE. THE SPIRIT CAN SLOWLY GROW WITHIN THE FLESHLY PERSON, WHILE THE FLESH OR OUTER MAN SLOWLY DIES OR DECAYS, EVENTUALLY ATTRACTING SPIRITUAL MATURITY AND A SPIRITUAL FIERY BEING. THE SPIRIT IS AN EMANATION OF GOD'S AUTHORITY. ONCE THE SPIRIT OF GOD CEASES TO ACT AS THE TOOL OF SELF-COMMUNICATION OF THE DIVINE FIERY BEING, THEN GOD'S FIERY ESSENCE, WITHOUT THE HIGH PRIESTLY MEDIATING WORK OF THE SPIRIT, WILL DIRECTLY STRIKE AND JUDGE THE EARTH AND ITS FLESHLY LIFE WITH CONSUMING DESTRUCTION ON THE DAY OF THE LORD. THE ONE WHO CURRENTLY HOLDS THIS BACK IS THE SPIRIT OF GOD, WHO CONVICTS THE WORLD AS LONG AS THE DAY OF SALVATION LASTS! THE LORD IS THE SPIRIT.

'THE STARS WILL FALL FROM THE SKY.' THE STARS, ALONG WITH THE SUN AND MOON, ARE PARTICULARLY IMPORTANT FOR OUR CONTEMPLATION OF THE BIBLICAL UNIVERSE BECAUSE THEY ARE THE ONLY VISIBLE SIGNS FOR US FROM THE UPPER LEVELS OF THE CELESTIAL REALMS. ACCORDING TO GENESIS 1:14-15, THEY ARE SET AS SIGNS IN THE EXPANSE OF HEAVEN, MEANING AS ANNOUNCEMENTS AND COMMUNICATIONS OF WHAT IS TO COME, AND AS TIMEKEEPERS. THE WORD 'STAR' LITERALLY TRANSLATES TO: RADIATING, SHIMMERING, SHINING. THEY ARE BEINGS WITH CLEARLY DEFINED TASKS FOR THE EARTH, FORMING THE HOST OF HEAVEN. SEVEN STARS ARE IN THE RIGHT HAND OF THE LORD AT THE BEGINNING OF THE DAY OF THE LORD (REV. 1:16). AND THE GREAT RED DRAGON CASTS A THIRD OF THE STARS OF HEAVEN TO THE EARTH (REV. 12:4). THE STARS OF HEAVEN WILL FALL TO THE EARTH (MATT. 24:29; MARK 13:25; REV. 6:13). FROM THESE FORMULATIONS, ONE CAN INFER THAT ALL STARS WILL EVENTUALLY FALL TO THE EARTH, FOR WHEN A STRONG WIND...

WHEN THEY HURT, ALL THE SHRIVELED FIGS FALL FROM THE TREE. ACCORDING TO ISAIAH 34:4, ON THE LORD'S DAY OF JUDGMENT, ALL THE HOST OF HEAVEN WILL MELT AWAY... ALL THEIR HOST WILL FALL DOWN. IN DANIEL 8:10, WE FIND A NOTABLE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN STARS AND THE HEAVENLY HOST. THE LITTLE HORN GROWS 'AND BECOMES GREAT, EVEN TO THE HOST OF HEAVEN, AND IT CAST DOWN SOME OF THE HOST AND SOME OF THE STARS TO THE GROUND AND TRAMPLED THEM.' THUS, THE HOST OF HEAVEN EXCEEDS THE NUMBER OF VISIBLE STARS. ACCORDING TO DANIEL 12:3, IN THE MILLENNIAL KINGDOM AFTER THE RESURRECTION, THE WISE WILL SHINE LIKE THE BRIGHTNESS OF THE HEAVENS, AND THOSE WHO LEAD MANY TO RIGHTEOUSNESS, LIKE THE STARS, FOREVER AND EVER. FOR THE ANCIENT FALLEN STARS, THERE WILL BE NEW STARS WITH NEW STAR BRILLIANCE, INDICATING A CHANGE OR EXCHANGE OF STARS. THIS ALREADY SUGGESTS TO US THAT STARS ARE LIVING BEINGS; THEIR SHINING IS THEIR PRAISE OF GOD, WHOSE VOICE OR MUSIC WE CAN NO LONGER HEAR WITH OUR FALLEN EARS. THEIR FALL TO THE EARTH SIGNIFIES THEIR APOSTASY, THEIR DEATH, THEIR DEPARTURE FROM GOD INTO DISTANCE FROM HIM. FROM REVELATION 1:20, 'THE SEVEN STARS ARE ANGELS OF THE SEVEN CHURCHES,' WE CAN INFER THAT THE STARS, AS WE SEE THEM, ARE THE SPARKLING, SHIMMERING BODIES OR HOMES OF ANGELS AND SPIRITUAL BEINGS. AND FROM THE FALL OF THE STARS TO THE EARTH, WHICH WE CONFIRM IN EVERY 'SHOOTING STAR,' WE CAN RECOGNIZE THAT THERE MUST ALSO BE A FALLING AWAY FROM GOD AMONG THE STARS, AND THUS A DEATH, JUST AS THERE IS FOR US HUMANS. DEATH ALWAYS MEANS: JUDGMENT OR SEPARATION, DISSOLUTION INTO INDIVIDUAL COMPONENTS. THE HUMAN PERSONALITY DISSOLVES AT DEATH INTO THE COMPONENTS OF SOUL OR SPIRIT-SOUL AND BODY. JUST AS DEATH SIGNIFIES THE DISSOLUTION OF PARTS, LIFE OR RESURRECTION SIGNIFIES THE UNION OF THE (THEN PURIFIED) PARTS. IN THE FALL OR APOSTASY TO THE EARTH, THE STAR BEINGS ALSO UNDERGO THEIR DEATH THROUGH THE SEPARATION OF SPIRIT AND BODY; THE STAR SPIRIT LOSES ITS STAR BODY, WHICH FALLS TO THE EARTH OR INTO THE SEA AS A 'METEOR,' AS A GLOWING MASS OF METAL, WHILE THE SPIRIT CONTINUES ITS EXISTENCE AS A SATANIC ANGEL OR DEMON IN HEAVENLY AND AERIAL REALMS. FOR THERE ARE INDEED STARS OF MANY SIZES AND BRIGHTNESS DIFFERENCES. IF THERE WERE STAR DEATHS, THEN THERE WOULD ALSO HAVE TO BE STAR BIRTHS. ASTRONOMERS DO INDEED SPEAK OF STAR BIRTHS OR FORMATIONS; THEY REFER TO THE TREMENDOUS FLARE-UP OF AN EXPLOSION, A BURST OF LIGHT IN SOME CONSTELLATION AS A 'NOVA,' AND THEY MEAN SUCH A NOVA (WHICH IS BRIGHTER...

THE LIGHT SHINES LIKE THE SUN!) ARISES FROM THE UNION OF PREVIOUSLY SEPARATED STARS OR STAR NEBULAE. IN ANY CASE, IT MUST BE A POWERFUL CHEMICAL PROCESS THAT OCCURS WITH INTENSE LIGHT DEVELOPMENT. THE ANCIENT GERMANS, LIKE OTHER OLD NATURE PEOPLES, TAUGHT THAT EVERY TIME A SMALL CHILD IS BORN ON EARTH, A LITTLE STAR IS CREATED IN THE SKY. WHAT IS PARTICULARLY INTERESTING IS THE RELATIONSHIP ESTABLISHED BETWEEN THE WORLD OF STARS AND THE WORLD OF HUMANS. THERE IS MORE TRUTH IN THE SO-CALLED MYTHOLOGICAL WORLD OF THE ANCIENTS THAN IN ALL OF MODERN SCIENCE AND ITS MONSTROSITY CALLED TECHNOLOGY. WE ALSO RECOGNIZE A SPECIAL CONNECTION BETWEEN STARS AND HUMANS IN THAT, ACCORDING TO THE CREATION ACCOUNT, THE STARS HAVE THE TASK OF DIVIDING TIME, DAYS, AND YEARS FOR HUMANS; THEY ARE THUS ALSO RELATED TO THE TIME PERIODS OF BIRTH AND DEATH OF HUMANS, WHICH ASTROLOGERS HAVE ALWAYS ACKNOWLEDGED BY STUDYING THE STARS AND THEIR POSITIONS AT THE BIRTH OF A PERSON. ASTROLOGY STILL CONTAINS THE MEMORY TODAY THAT THERE ARE CLOSE RELATIONSHIPS AND MYSTERIOUS CONNECTIONS BETWEEN STARS AND HUMANS. THE BIBLE CONFIRMS THIS IN CERTAIN PLACES. ONCE, IN DEUTERONOMY 4:19, THE CELESTIAL BODIES ARE GIVEN TO THE GENTILES OR NATIONS, WHILE ISRAEL RECEIVED HIGHER REVELATIONS, NAMELY THE LAW WRITTEN ON STONE, WHICH IS HIGHER THAN THE STAR WRITING IN THE HEAVENS. GOD WILL GREATLY MULTIPLY ABRAHAM LIKE THE STARS OF HEAVEN (GENESIS 22:17). THUS, THE STARS MULTIPLY, JUST AS HUMANS DO! BALAAM MUST PROPHESY IN NUMBERS 24:17 THAT A STAR WILL RISE OUT OF JACOB, LITERALLY: A STAR COMES FORTH FROM JACOB. THIS HAS ALWAYS BEEN UNDERSTOOD AS 'FIGURATIVE' OR POETIC, AS WE DO WITH THINGS WE CANNOT COMPREHEND OTHERWISE. BUT THERE IS MUCH HIDDEN IN THE EXPRESSION 'STAR OUT OF JACOB.' GOD COULD HAVE ALSO HAD BALAAM SAY: A SHOOT OR SEED FROM JACOB. THE KEY HERE IS ALSO TO TAKE THE PASSAGE LITERALLY. THE STAR IS IDENTICAL WITH THE LORD JESUS OR WITH HIS STAR, WHICH THE WISE MEN FROM THE EAST SAW AND USED AS A GUIDE TO BETHLEHEM TO WORSHIP THE CHILD. A STAR COMING FORTH FROM JACOB MEANS: A PERSON WILL BE BORN FROM THE LINE OF JACOB, AND THE EMERGENCE OF A STAR WILL PRECEDE THIS BIRTH. WHEN A CHILD IS CONCEIVED AND BORN ON EARTH, MOVEMENTS ARE SIMULTANEOUSLY TAKING PLACE IN THE STAR WORLD! ON EARTH, A CHILD COMES OUT OF THE MOTHER OR, EVEN EARLIER, THE SEED FROM THE FATHER, AND ABOVE, A STAR EMERGES, WHICH IS CAUSATIVE.

THE CONNECTION BETWEEN LIFE AND BIRTH ON EARTH. IF THIS WAS THE CASE AT THE BIRTH OF JESUS, THEN IT MUST ALSO BE TRUE FOR THE BIRTHS OF ALL PEOPLE, THOUGH THERE ARE SMALLER, LESS SIGNIFICANT STARS THAT EMERGE. 'AND BEHOLD,' SAYS MOSES IN DEUTERONOMY 1:10, 'THE LORD YOUR GOD HAS MULTIPLIED YOU GREATLY, AND BEHOLD, YOU ARE TODAY AS NUMEROUS AS THE STARS IN THE SKY.' THE WAY THE STARS ARE INVOLVED IN EARTHLY EVENTS IS PARTICULARLY EVIDENT IN JUDGES 5:20: 'THE STARS FOUGHT IN THEIR COURSES AGAINST SISERA.' HOW DID THEY DO THAT? DID THEY SHOOT DOWN RAYS? DID THEY INFLUENCE OR GUIDE THE STARS OF DEBORAH, BARAK, AND JAEL? WHAT A PASSAGE FOR ASTROLOGERS! IN ANY CASE, STARS CAN INTERVENE IN EARTHLY MATTERS. SINCE IT MENTIONS 'FROM THEIR COURSES,' IT PRIMARILY REFERS TO THE PLANETS, BUT THE FIXED STARS ALSO HAVE THEIR PATHS. GOD COUNTS THE STARS AND NAMES THEM ACCORDING TO PSALM 147:4, AND IN PSALM 148:3, ALL SHINING STARS ARE CALLED TO PRAISE GOD. THIS ONLY MAKES SENSE FOR HIGH, LIVING BEINGS, JUST AS THE VERSE IN JOB 25:5 STATES THAT THE STARS ARE NOT PURE IN GOD'S EYES, JUST AS HUMANS ARE NOT. IN 1 CORINTHIANS 15:41, THE APOSTLE PAUL CONFIRMS THE CLOSE CONNECTION BETWEEN STARS AND HUMANS WITH THE WORDS: FOR ONE STAR DIFFERS FROM ANOTHER IN GLORY. THUS, THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD (HUMANS) ... SUCH A STAR BODY IS THEREFORE A SPIRITUAL BODY, THE BODY OF THE HEAVENLY (1 CORINTHIANS 15:48). CONSEQUENTLY, THROUGH THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD, STARS OF VARYING BRIGHTNESS OR GLORY ARISE, AS ALSO CONFIRMED IN DANIEL 12:3. HERE WE HAVE CLEAR SCRIPTURAL EVIDENCE THAT FROM HUMANS, STARS, THAT IS, HEAVENLY BEINGS WITH THE GLORIOUS LIGHT OF STARS, EMERGE, CAPABLE OF SHINING CONTINUOUSLY IN THE NIGHT OF GODLESSNESS AND DISTANCE FROM GOD. THEY ARE REFERRED TO AS PRECIOUS STONES IN 1 CORINTHIANS 3:12, AND IN EZEKIEL 28:14 AS FIERY STONES. JUST AS THE SEVEN CHURCHES IN ASIA HAVE SEVEN STARS CORRESPONDING TO THEM IN HEAVEN, WHICH ARE THE DWELLING PLACES OF THEIR ANGELS, SO EACH PERSON AND EACH NATION LIKELY HAS A COUNTERPART IN THE STARRY WORLD. WILL IT BE PRIMARILY THE STARS OF THE UNGODLY THAT WILL FALL FROM HEAVEN TO EARTH? HOW MANY STAR BODIES LIE SHATTERED ON THE EARTH AND IN THE DEPTHS OF THE SEAS AS METEORS, WHERE THEY WEATHER JUST LIKE THE BODIES OF HUMANS DECAY IN THE GRAVE? YET THE WEATHERING PROCESS OF THESE STAR BODIES TAKES EONS! WHO IS DIRECTING THIS ONGOING STAR FALL?

WHY IS IT THAT NO METEOR FALLS ON CITIES OR VILLAGES, BUT THEY ALL ONLY FALL INTO THE SEA OR THE LONELY DESERT? THE BIBLICAL TREATMENT OF THE TOPIC OF 'STARS' PROVIDES THE STRONGEST EVIDENCE AGAINST THE CURRENT SCIENTIFIC VIEW OF THE UNIVERSE. FOR THE BIBLE STATES THAT THE STARS WILL FALL FROM THE SKY TO THE EARTH. THIS CONTAINS TWO TRUTHS: 1. THE STARS ARE NOT WORLDS THAT ARE AS LARGE OR LARGER THAN THE EARTH, BUT RATHER THEY ARE ALL MUCH SMALLER, SO THEY CAN FALL TO THE EARTH WITHOUT CAUSING MUCH HARM. 2. IF THE STARS CAN FALL, THEY CAN ONLY FALL TO THE EARTH, PRECISELY BECAUSE THE EARTH SURROUNDS THE ENTIRE STAR WORLD. WITH THIS ONE DIVINE PROPHETIC TRUTH THAT THE STARS WILL FALL FROM HEAVEN TO EARTH, THE LORD JESUS DISMISSES ALL SCIENTIFIC SPECULATION, OBSERVATION, AND CALCULATIONS OF THE UNBELIEVING WORLD. ASTRONOMERS EXPLAIN THAT METEORS ARE STAR DEBRIS FROM SOME COSMIC CATASTROPHES IN THEIR INFINITE UNIVERSE. THEREFORE, THEY ARE NOT STARS, BUT STAR FRAGMENTS THAT FLOAT AND ORBIT AS DEBRIS IN SPACE. AS SOON AS THE 'EARTH GLOBE' RACES THROUGH SUCH A COSMIC DEBRIS FIELD IN ITS ROTATING PATH IN SPACE, THESE DEBRIS PIECES, MOVED BY THE SO-CALLED EARTH'S GRAVITY, CRASH TO THE EARTH. THE UNIVERSE, AT LEAST OUR SO-CALLED SOLAR SYSTEM IN THIS UNIVERSE, MUST THEREFORE BE FULL OF SUCH DEBRIS; IT MUST RESEMBLE A DUMPING GROUND, BECAUSE ACCORDING TO THE SETUPS, OBSERVATIONS, AND CALCULATIONS OF ASTRONOMERS, OUR EARTH IS 'DAY AND NIGHT UNDER A CONTINUOUS BOMBARDMENT OF LARGE AND SMALL PROJECTILES FROM THE DEPTHS OF THE UNIVERSE.' IT IS ESTIMATED THAT AROUND TEN MILLION 'SHOOTING STARS' CRASH TO EARTH WITHIN 24 HOURS. ALL SIZES ARE REPRESENTED, FROM THE SIZE OF A GRAIN OF SAND TO A GIANT BLOCK ONE AND A HALF KILOMETERS IN DIAMETER. THE ANNUAL MASS INCREASE OF THE EARTH DUE TO THIS ONGOING METEOR SHOWER IS ABOUT 500 TONS. (1 TON EQUALS 20 QUINTALS!) HOW MUCH LONGER CAN THE POOR EARTH GLOBE WITHSTAND THIS? WE BELIEVE AND KNOW THAT THESE METEOR FALLS ARE ALWAYS STARS. BECAUSE THERE ARE MANY SIZE DIFFERENCES AMONG THE STARS, THERE ARE ALSO MANY SIZE DIFFERENCES AMONG THE STARS FALLING TO EARTH. IT MAY WELL BE WHAT ASTRONOMERS CLAIM, THAT MOST METEORS DISSOLVE HIGH UP IN THE EARTH'S ATMOSPHERE INTO 'COSMIC FINE DUST,' WHICH IN TURN INFLUENCES WEATHER FORMATION.

THE EARTH IS INFLUENCED. IT MAY WELL BE THAT MOST METEORS THAT REACH THE EARTH FALL INTO THE SEAS AND THEREFORE CANNOT HARM ANYONE. THE REST THAT FALL TO THE EARTH STRANGELY ALMOST ALWAYS LAND IN UNINHABITED, DESERTED AREAS, SUCH AS DESERTS, SWAMPS, RAINFORESTS, AND ICE FIELDS. REPORTS OF PEOPLE OR ANIMALS BEING HIT ARE VERY SPARSE. IT STRONGLY SUGGESTS THAT THE FALL OF THESE STARS IS SOMEHOW CONTROLLED. AMONG THE HISTORICAL ACCOUNTS OF SIGNIFICANT METEOR FALLS, THE CRASH OF THE GIANT METEOR IN THE SIBERIAN RAINFOREST, 300 KILOMETERS NORTH OF YENISEISK ON JUNE 30, 1908, IS PARTICULARLY WELL-KNOWN. ALL THE SEISMIC STATIONS AROUND THE WORLD REPORTED THE SHOCK WAVES THAT CIRCLED THE ENTIRE EARTH AT THAT TIME. IT WASN'T UNTIL NINETEEN YEARS LATER THAT AN EXPEDITION DISCOVERED THE ISOLATED CRASH SITE. THE FOREST WAS DESTROYED AND BURNED WITHIN A TEN-KILOMETER RADIUS. THE FIRE AT THE CRASH SITE WAS SEEN FROM PLACES 700 KILOMETERS AWAY. WHAT KIND OF ANGELIC PRINCE FELL TO EARTH AT THAT TIME? WHERE DOES THE SPIRIT GO THAT IS RELEASED FROM SUCH A HEAVY, PREVIOUSLY GLOWING STONE AND METAL BODY? WHAT DOES IT CAUSE? THE KAABA IN MECCA, THE GREAT SANCTUARY OF MUSLIMS, IS A BLACK GIANT METEOR THAT ONCE FELL INTO THE ARABIAN DESERT. THIS BLACK STONE, CONTAINING IRON AND COPPER, IS NOW WORSHIPPED AND KISSED BY MILLIONS OF DEVOUT, FANATICAL MUSLIMS. WAS IT THE BODY OF THE FALLEN ANGEL WHO BROUGHT AND IGNITED THE RELIGION OF THE MUSLIMS, THE FALSE PROPHET? JUST AS THE GIANT ANGEL, WHOSE BODY FELL INTO THE SIBERIAN RAINFOREST, MIGHT HAVE BROUGHT THE RELIGION OF BOLSHEVISM? IN REVELATION 8:10, IT IS.REPORTED THAT A GREAT STAR FELL FROM HEAVEN, BURNING LIKE A TORCH. ITS NAME IS WORMWOOD, AND IT HAS THE ABILITY AND TASK TO MAKE THE WATERS ON EARTH BITTER. IN REVELATION 9:1, ANOTHER GREAT STAR FALLS FROM HEAVEN TO EARTH, HOLDING THE KEY TO THE ABYSS. THE HEAVY METAL AND STONE BODY OF THESE FALLEN STARS MUST BE LYING SOMEWHERE ON EARTH, BUT THE SPIRIT OF THE STONE THEN ACTS FREELY FROM THE BODY. WHEN IT SAYS 'A GREAT STAR' HERE, IT IMPLIES THAT THERE ARE ALSO SMALL STARS. ONE SHOULD COMPARE THE NUMBER OF NEW BIRTHS ON EARTH WITH THE NUMBER OF METEOR FALLS TO EARTH IN THE SAME PERIOD! THIS WOULD BRING US CLOSER TO UNDERSTANDING THE CYCLE BETWEEN THE HEAVENLY HOST AND THE EARTHLY HOST, BETWEEN STARS AND HUMANS. PAUL WRITES IN 1 CORINTHIANS 3 ABOUT GOLD, SILVER, PRECIOUS...

THE STONES THAT WILL BE REVEALED AT THE UNVEILING OF THE BELIEVERS ABOVE. THESE ARE THE NEW RADIANT BODIES OF THE RESURRECTED BELIEVERS, DESIGNATED FOR THE STARS THAT HAVE FALLEN TO EARTH! NOT ONLY ARE THE STARS MADE AS SIGNS, BUT ALSO AS TIMES. THIS REFERS TO PERIODS OR CYCLES OF TIME. THE TERM MEANS: APPOINTED TIMES, SEE GENESIS 17:21, 18:14, AND 21:2. THUS, THE SUN, MOON, AND STARS ARE SET AS 'SIGNS' (OF THINGS TO COME) AND AS 'TIMES' (APPOINTED PERIODS). THEY 'RULE BY DAY AND BY NIGHT.' THERE ARE NO LESS THAN TEN SUCH TIME CYCLES OR PERIODS THAT DIFFER FROM ONE ANOTHER. THEY ARE NOT CONCENTRIC, BUT THEY ALL BEGIN WITH CREATION, MEANING THEY ALL CONVERGE AT A SINGLE POINT AT CREATION, NEVER TO MEET AGAIN. IT'S SOMEWHAT LIKE THE NUMBER OF RINGS OF DIFFERENT SIZES HANGING ON A NAIL, SHOWING THAT THEY ALL HAD THE SAME STARTING POINT ONCE. 1. THE CYCLE OF 24 HOURS IN A DAY, AN EVENING AND A MORNING. 2. THE MOON'S ROTATION AROUND THE EARTH OR THE HEAVENS, WHICH IS ULTIMATELY THE SAME. 3. THE LUNAR CYCLE, WHICH BEGAN SIMULTANEOUSLY WITH THE SOLAR CYCLE.

4. THE DAILY CYCLE OF THE SUN, WHICH LEADS IT OVER THE SAME LONGITUDE AT NOON EVERY DAY. 5. THE SOLAR CYCLE, WHICH COINCIDES WITH THE FIRST OF THE SEVEN YEARS OF LUNAR MOVEMENT. IT REPEATS EVERY 365 DAYS. 6. THE BEGINNING OF A WEEK OF SEVEN DAYS ON THE FIRST DAY OF THE WEEK IN THE FIRST MONTH OF THE FIRST YEAR OF THE FIRST SOLAR CYCLE. 7. THE FIRST SOLAR ECLIPSE IN A CYCLE OF 18 YEARS AND ELEVEN DAYS, WHICH THE ANCIENT ASTRONOMERS NAMED SAROS. EACH SAROS CONTAINS AN AVERAGE OF SEVENTY SOLAR ECLIPSES, DIVIDED INTO TWO PARTS OF 594 YEARS AND 666 YEARS, TOTALING 1260 YEARS. 8. IN ADDITION TO THESE, THERE IS THE PERIOD OF THE SPIRAL RISING SHIFTS OF SIRIUS IN CYCLES OF 162 YEARS. 9. THE TRANSITS OF VENUS. 10. AND THE GREAT CYCLE KNOWN AS THE PRECESSION OF THE EQUINOXES, A CYCLE OF ABOUT 26,000 YEARS! (ACCORDING TO BULLINGER, COMP. BIBLE.)

THE INTERPLAY OF THESE TIME CYCLES ALSO SHOWS THAT CREATION DOES NOT DATE BACK HUNDREDS OF THOUSANDS OR EVEN MILLIONS OF YEARS, BUT ONLY A FEW THOUSAND YEARS, AS CORRESPONDS WITH BIBLICAL ACCOUNTS. THE RESURGENCE OF INTEREST IN THE OBSERVATION OF THE STARRY WORLD AND ITS INFLUENCE ON HUMANITY AND THEIR DESTINIES BY ASTROLOGERS TODAY IS ROOTED IN THE FACT THAT WE ARE APPROACHING THE END TIMES. IT WILL FIRST COME ALIVE IN THE HEAVENS, AND THE FORCES OF THE HEAVENS WILL BE SHAKEN. PEOPLE HAVE RECOGNIZED THE FOLLY OF MATERIALISM AND ARE TURNING BACK TO THE INVISIBLE THINGS. NATURALLY, THE CELESTIAL BODIES ARE CLOSEST TO THEM, AS THEY HAVE BEEN GIVEN TO THOSE WHO DO NOT KNOW GOD FOR WORSHIP. JUST AS IMPORTANT AND COMPELLING AS THE CONNECTIONS BETWEEN STARS AND HUMANS ARE THE SYMBOLS THAT THE STARS REPRESENT IN THEIR GROUPING AND ORDER. THROUGHOUT HISTORY, PEOPLE HAVE FOUND AND NAMED CONSTELLATIONS IN THE NIGHT SKY THAT HAVE BEEN PASSED DOWN TO THIS DAY. ALTHOUGH THESE CONSTELLATIONS HAVE BECOME QUITE BLURRED AND INDISTINCT, NO ONE WOULD TODAY RECOGNIZE THE IMAGES OF THE BEAR, THE LION, THE VIRGIN, THE SCALES, ETC., FROM THE CURRENT CHAOTIC ARRANGEMENT OF STARS IN THE SKY. IT MUST HAVE BEEN DIFFERENT THOUSANDS OF YEARS AGO WHEN GOD WROTE THE STAR SCRIPT IN THE FIRMAMENT AND COMMUNICATED THE ENTIRE PLAN OF SALVATION TO HUMANITY AT THAT TIME, WHEN THEY HAD NO WRITTEN LETTERS. LATER, THE STARS WERE SEALED (JOB 9:7), LEAVING ONLY THE NAMES OF THE OLD CONSTELLATIONS BEHIND; THE IMAGES THEMSELVES ARE NO LONGER RECOGNIZABLE. IN THE MEANTIME, TOO MANY STARS FROM THESE CONSTELLATIONS HAVE LIKELY FALLEN TO EARTH: D. BULLINGER, PERHAPS THE MOST INSIGHTFUL BIBLICAL INTERPRETER OF THE PAST CENTURY, WRITES IN THE ENGLISH COMPANION BIBLE ABOUT THIS STAR SCRIPT FROM THE BEGINNING OF CREATION AS FOLLOWS:

"AND ALSO THE STARS" "IN THE FIRST MENTION OF THESE HEAVENLY BODIES, THE STARS OR SHINERS, THE PURPOSE OF THE CREATOR IS ALREADY PRECISELY DESCRIBED. GENESIS 1:14-19 REVEALS THE FACT THAT THE STARS WERE CREATED NOT ONLY TO DISTINGUISH BETWEEN DAY AND NIGHT AND TO GIVE LIGHT TO THE EARTH, BUT THEY WERE 'SET TO GIVE SIGNS, SEASONS, DAYS, AND YEARS.'

THESE WELL-KNOWN FIGURES APPEAR IN THE BIBLE, BUT THEIR TRANSLATION IS UNCERTAIN. FOR EXAMPLE, IN JOB 9:9, ARCTURUS OR THE BEAR, AND ORION, THE PLEIADES. IN JOB 38:31-32, THE TWELVE SIGNS OF THE ZODIAC. IN 2 KINGS 23:5, ARCTURUS WITH HIS SONS (THE ZODIAC AND THE WHOLE HOST OF HEAVEN). FURTHERMORE, ISAIAH 13:10 AND AMOS 5:8. THE TWELVE CONSTELLATIONS OF THE ZODIAC AND THEIR NAMES TRACE BACK TO THE CREATION OF THE WORLD. JEWISH TRADITION ASSURES US, AS THE WRITER JOSEPHUS REPORTS, THAT THIS BIBLICAL ASTRONOMY WAS INVENTED AND PASSED DOWN BY ADAM, SETH, AND ENOCH.



"AND GOD SAID: LET THERE BE A FIRMAMENT IN THE MIDST OF THE WATERS..." GENESIS 1:6. "YOUR PATH WAS THROUGH THE GREAT WATERS" PSALM 77:20.

WE FIND THIS CONFIRMED IN GENESIS 11:4 REGARDING THE TOWER OF BABEL. THIS TOWER WAS SUPPOSED TO REACH "TO THE HEAVENS" ACCORDING TO LUTHER. LITERALLY, THIS PASSAGE REFERS TO THE TWELVE CONSTELLATIONS OF THE ZODIAC, WHICH WERE TO BE DEPICTED AT THE TOP OF THE TOWER, AS WAS ALSO DONE IN THE ANCIENT TEMPLES OF DENDERAH.

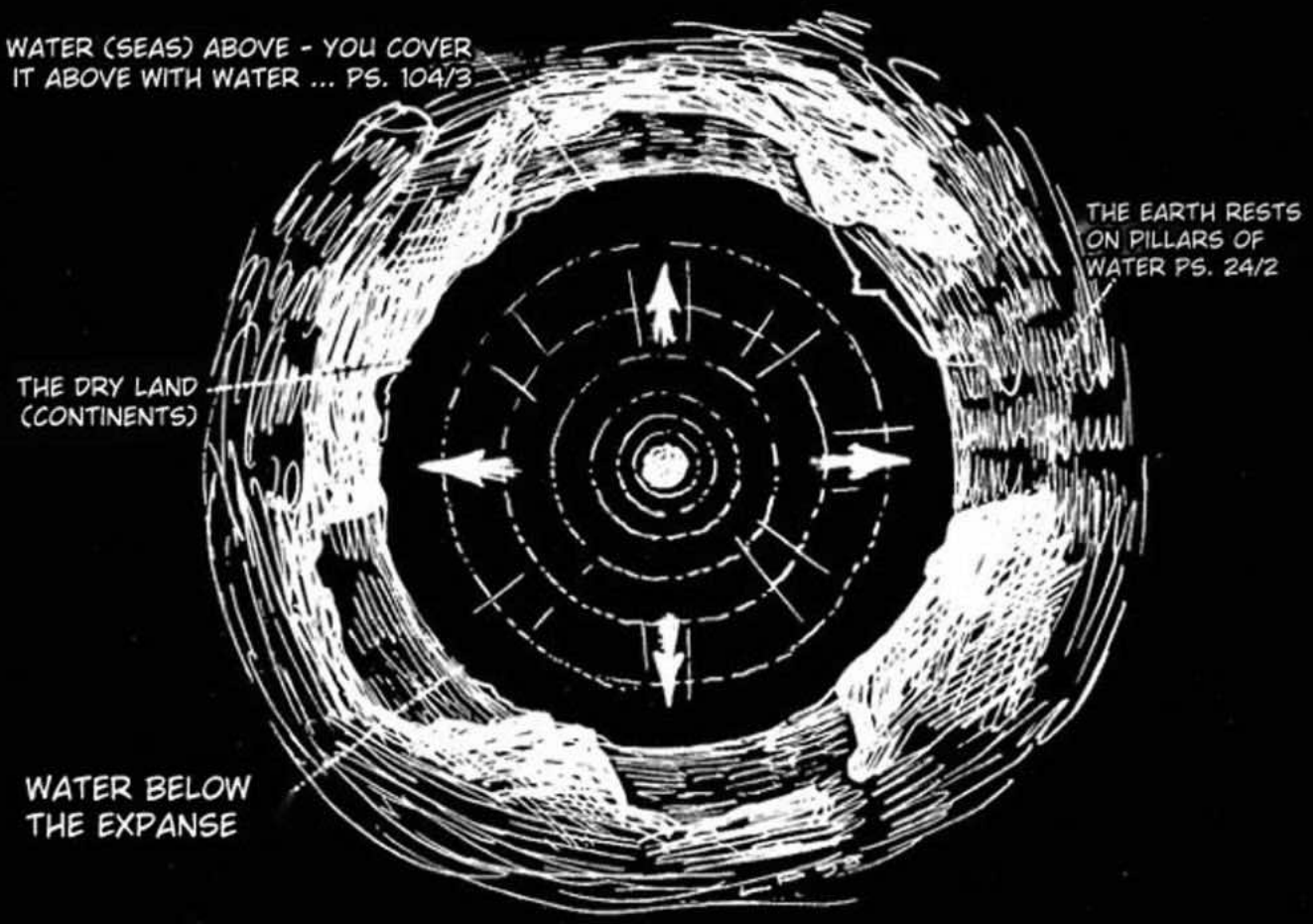
THIS IS THE CASE IN EGYPT. THE PASSAGE LITERALLY STATES: 'AT ITS PEAK, THE HEAVENS!' THE HUMANITY OF THAT TIME WANTED TO PRESERVE AND PASS ON THEIR KNOWLEDGE ABOUT THE CELESTIAL HOSTS AND THE SIGNIFICANCE OF THE SIGNS IN THE SKY, WHICH MUST HAVE BEEN VERY VAST, TO MAKE A NAME FOR THEMSELVES.



'AND LET THERE BE A SEPARATION BETWEEN THE WATERS AND THE WATERS' - GENESIS 1:6.

WITH THE SCATTERING OF PEOPLE AND THE CESSATION OF THE TOWER BUILDING, MUCH OF THIS STAR KNOWLEDGE HAS BEEN LOST, WHICH WAS ENTIRELY IN LINE WITH GOD'S INTENTION, FOR HE BEGAN TO SPEAK DIRECTLY TO HUMANITY IN HISTORY THROUGH WORD AND SCRIPTURE. WE MUST NOT FORGET THAT OUR TRADITIONAL WRITINGS BEGIN WITH MOSES, AROUND 1490 BC. UNTIL THEN, FOR ABOUT 2500 YEARS, THE PROMISE THAT GOD GAVE IN GENESIS 3:15 WAS RECORDED IN THE STAR IMAGERY IN THE SKY. THE GROUPING OF STARS INTO SIGNS TODAY IS COMPLETELY ARBITRARY. TODAY, ONE CAN NO LONGER RECOGNIZE THE NAMES IN THEIR...

THE ORIGINAL OUTLINES OF THE STARS CAN NO LONGER BE RECOGNIZED IN ANY CASE. ONCE, THE SIGNS AND THEIR CORRESPONDING DRAWINGS OR IMAGES WERE CLEARLY FIXED IN THE SKY, UNTOUCHED BY HUMAN HANDS. LATER, WHEN ISRAEL CAME INTO POSSESSION OF THE WRITTEN WORDS OF TRUTH, THE OLD STAR SCRIPT IN THE SKY WAS NO LONGER NEEDED. THUS, THIS CELESTIAL WRITING GRADUALLY BECAME BLURRED OR 'SEALED.' THE MEAGER REMNANTS THAT STILL LIVED ON THROUGH TRADITION WERE DISTORTEDLY PRESERVED AND PASSED DOWN IN THE MYTHS AND DEITIES OF THE PEOPLES. THE TWO REVELATIONS TO HUMANITY, NAMELY THE STARS AND THE WRITTEN LAW, ARE STRIKINGLY LINKED IN PSALM 19.



'AND GOD MADE THE EXPANSE AND SEPARATED THE WATERS BELOW THE EXPANSE FROM THE WATERS ABOVE THE EXPANSE ...' GENESIS 1:7.

STARTLED AND EMBARRASSED. THE TEACHING IS PRESERVED IN THE STRUCTURE OF THIS PSALM. IN IT WE HAVE: VERSES 1 - 4 THE HEAVENS VERSES 4 - 6 IN THEM THE SUN VERSES 7 - 10 THE LAW OF THE LORD VERSES 11 - 14 IN IT YOUR SERVANT. IN THIS STRUCTURE, EVERY LINE CAREFULLY OUTLINES THE OVERALL PICTURE. IN THE FIRST PART, ALL EXPRESSIONS ARE LITERARY (TO TELL, TO PROCLAIM, TO SAY, LANGUAGE, SPEECH), WHILE IN THE SECOND HALF, ALL EXPRESSIONS ARE ASTRONOMICAL (PERFECT = ROUND, REFRESHED, CLEARER, TO ILLUMINATE, GOLD). THIS INTERTWINES THESE TWO PARTS INTO A HARMONIOUS WHOLE. THE FIRST PART OF THE PSALM DOES NOT REFER TO THE WONDERS OF CREATION, BUT TO THE ELOQUENCE OF ITS TEACHING AND REVELATION. WHAT DO THE HEAVENS, THE FIRMAMENT, AND THE SUN SAY, PROCLAIM, AND TELL DAY AND NIGHT? THE ANSWER IS FOUND IN GENESIS 3:15. THE ONE GREAT CENTRAL TRUTH OF ALL PROPHECY IS THE COMING OF THE ONE WHO, ALTHOUGH HIS HEEL WILL BE CRUSHED (BECAUSE HIS FEET STAND ON THE MOUNT OF OLIVES!), AND HE MUST SUFFER, WILL ULTIMATELY CRUSH THE HEAD OF THE OLD SERPENT. THIS IS WHAT THE HEAVENS ABOVE TELL, THIS IS WHAT ONE NIGHT SAYS TO ANOTHER AND ONE DAY TO ANOTHER, BUT WE CANNOT HEAR THIS MURMUR OF VOICES IN THE HEAVENLY SPHERES BECAUSE OUR FALLEN EARS CAN NO LONGER GRASP THESE SOUND WAVES. BUT WHERE DOES THIS BOOK BEGIN? WHERE MUST WE START READING IN THE CIRCLE OF CONSTELLATIONS? THE SUN BEGINS ITS COURSE IN A DIFFERENT CONSTELLATION APPROXIMATELY EVERY TWO THOUSAND YEARS. THIS IS DIVINE ORDER. IT IS ALSO DIVINE ORDER THAT LATER GENERATIONS NO LONGER KNEW WHEN AND WHERE, THAT IS, IN WHICH CONSTELLATION THE SUN ONCE BEGAN ITS COURSE, WHERE THE FIRST PAGE OF THE HEAVENLY STAR BOOK BEGINS. THEREFORE, THE SPHINX WAS INVENTED AS A MONUMENT, IN A SENSE AS A STONE BOOKMARK. IT HAS THE HEAD OF A WOMAN, THE BODY AND TAIL OF A LION, TO TELL US THAT THE BOOK WRITTEN IN THE HEAVENS MUST BEGIN WITH THE SIGN OF VIRGO AND WILL END WITH THE SIGN OF LEO. THE WORD SPHINX COMES FROM THE GREEK SPHINGO, TO JOIN TOGETHER, BECAUSE IT CONNECTS THE TWO ENDS OF THE HEAVENLY AND STAR BOOK. THERE ARE TWELVE CONSTELLATIONS, WHICH IS THE NUMBER OF PERFECT GOVERNANCE OR DOMINION. IN GENESIS 1:18, IT STATES THAT THE CELESTIAL BODIES...

THE TASK OF RULING BY DAY AND NIGHT. THEY ARE DIVIDED INTO THREE BOOKS, EACH CONTAINING FOUR CHAPTERS OR CONSTELLATIONS, AS TWELVE IS THE PRODUCT OF THREE TIMES FOUR, REPRESENTING DIVINE TRUTH AS IT OPERATES IN HEAVEN AND ON EARTH.

FIRST BOOK:

	THE REDEEMER (FIRST COMING)
	THE PROMISE OF THE WOMAN'S
VIRGO	SEED THE REDEEMER'S WORK
LIBRA	(GRACE) THE REDEEMER'S
SCORPIO	STRUGGLE THE PROMISE
SAGITTARIUS	FULFILLED

SECOND BOOK: THE REDEEMED (HIS WORK AND ITS RESULTS) CAPRICORN THE PROMISE OF LIBERATION AQUARIUS RESULTS OF THE TRANSFERRED WORK PISCES ENJOYING THE FRUITS OF LABOR ARIES THE PROMISED LIBERATION FULFILLED

THIRD BOOK: THE REDEEMER (HIS SECOND COMING) THE PROPHECY OF THE COMING JUDGMENT THE REDEEMER'S REIGN IN GLORY THE REDEEMER'S POSSESSION SECURED THE PROPHECY OF TRIUMPH FULFILLED. EACH OF THESE FOUR CHAPTERS IN EACH OF THE THREE BOOKS CONSISTS OF THREE SECTIONS. EACH SECTION IS REPRESENTED BY A CONSTELLATION OR A STAR GROUP OR A SINGLE BRIGHT STAR, FOR EXAMPLE:

TAURUS GEMINI
CANCER LEO

FIRST BOOK: THE REDEEMER 'THE SUFFERINGS OF CHRIST' I. VIRGO. THE PROPHECY OF THE PROMISED SEED 1. COMA (THE DESIRED ONE). WOMAN AND CHILD, THE DESIRE OF ALL NATIONS.

CENTAUR (A HYBRID OF HUMAN AND HORSE, MEANING: TWO NATURES). THE DESPISED SIN OFFERING 2. BOÖTES. THE BREAKING, COMING BRANCH II. LIBRA. THE REDEEMER'S WORK OF RECONCILIATION 1. CROSS. THE CROSS ENDURES 2. WOLF. THE SACRIFICE STRUCK DOWN 3. CROWN. THE CROWN AWARDED III. SCORPIUS. THE REDEEMER'S STRUGGLE 1. SERPENT. ATTACKS ON HUMANITY'S HEEL 2. OPHIUCHUS. HUMANITY SEIZES THE SERPENT 3. HERCULES. THE MIGHTY MAN VICTORIOUS IV. SAGITTARIUS. THE REDEEMER'S TRIUMPH 1. LYRE. PRIZE PREPARED FOR THE CONQUEROR 2. ALTAR. FIRE PREPARED FOR HIS ENEMIES 3. DRAGON. THE DRAGON CAST DOWN

SECOND BOOK: THE REDEEMED I. CAPRICORN. THE OUTCOME OF THE REDEEMER'S SUFFERING 1. ARROW. THE ARROW OF GOD SHOT 2. EAGLE. THE STRUCK ONE FALLS 3. DOLPHIN. THE DEAD RISES AGAIN II. AQUARIUS. THE BLESSINGS SECURED 1. SOUTHERN FISH. THE BLESSINGS SCATTERED 2. PEGASUS. THE BLESSINGS COME SWIFTLY 3. SWAN. THE BLESSING RETURNS SAFELY III. PISCES. THE BLESSINGS WITHOUT RECIPIENTS 1. THE CHAIN. THE GREAT ENEMY 'CETUS' (SEA MONSTER) 2. ANDROMEDA. THE REDEEMED IN CHAINS 3. CEPHEUS. THE LIBERATOR COMES TO SET FREE IV. ARIES. THE BLESSINGS COMPLETED 1. CASSIOPEIA. THE CAPTIVE FREED 2. CETUS. THE GREAT ENEMY BOUND 3. PERSEUS. THE 'BREAKER' SETS FREE.

THE THIRD BOOK: THE REDEEMER. THE GLORY THAT IS TO FOLLOW. I. TAURUS. THE MESSIAH COMES TO REIGN. 1. ORION. THE REDEEMER BREAKS THROUGH AS LIGHT. 2. ERIDANUS. WRATH BREAKS THROUGH AS A FLOOD. 3. AURIGA. SAFETY FOR HIS REDEEMED ON THE DAY OF WRATH. II. GEMINI. THE MESSIAH AS PRINCE OF KINGS. 1. LEPUS. THE ENEMY TRAMPLED UNDERFOOT. 2. CANIS MAJOR. THE COMING GLORIOUS PRINCE. 3. CANIS MINOR. THE EXALTED REDEEMER. III. CANCER. THE MESSIAH'S REDEEMED POSSESSIONS. 1. URSA MINOR. THE SMALLER FLOCK. 2. URSA MAJOR. THE FLOCK AND THE HERD. 3. ARGO. THE PILGRIM'S ARRIVAL HOME. IV. LEO. THE MESSIAH'S COMPLETED TRIUMPH. 1. HYDRA. THE OLD SERPENT CRUSHED. 2. CRATER. THE CUP OF WRATH EMPTIED. 3. CORVUS. THE VULTURES DEVOUR. SOME OF THE STAR NAMES ARE NEW, GIVEN BY PEOPLE WHO HAD NO IDEA OF THE ORIGINAL MEANING OF THE TWELVE ZODIAC SIGNS AND THE THIRTY-SIX CONSTELLATIONS. BUT THE TRADITIONAL ARABIC AND HEBREW NAMES OF THE MOST IMPORTANT STARS ARE FULL OF TRUTH AND SPEAK A CLEAR LANGUAGE. FOR EXAMPLE: VIRGO. HERE WE HAVE THE STAR AL ZIMACH, HEBREW ZEMACH, THE BRANCH OR SPROUT. ISAIAH 4:2; JEREMIAH 23:5, 6; ZECHARIAH 3:8; 6:12. ALL THE OTHER STARS IN THIS CONSTELLATION OF VIRGO HAVE RELATED MEANINGS: COMA. THE DESIRED ONE (HAGGAI 2:7); NUMBERS 24:17 (EGYPTIAN SHES-NU: THE DESIRED SON). CENTAURUS, AL BEZE, THE DESPISED ONE (ISAIAH 53:3). BOOTES, HEBREW BO, TO COME (PSALM 96:13); HEBREW ARCTURUS (JOB 9:9 = HE COMES); EGYPTIAN SMAT = ONE WHO RULES. LIBRA WAS ONCE THE ALTAR. THESE TWO BRIGHT STARS ARE NOW CALLED IN ARABIC ZUBEN AL GENUBI = THE PRICE THAT IS SUFFICIENT, AND ZUBEN AL CHEMALI = THE PRICE THAT COVERS. CRUX (CROSS) HEBREW KARATH = CUT OFF (DANIEL 9:26); LUPUS, GREEK NAME THERA.

A PRIMAL BEING, HEBREW ZABAH, STRUCK DOWN. IN THE ZODIAC OF DENDERA, THERE IS A LAMB. THESE SAMPLES FROM A BRILLIANT SCHOLAR SHOW THAT WE CAN TODAY READ THE ANCIENT STAR SCRIPT IN THE LIGHT OF GOD'S WORD AND SPIRIT. THE CLERGYMAN EXPLORES ALL THINGS, INCLUDING THE STAR SCRIPT, WHICH THOUSANDS OF YEARS AGO WAS STILL CLEARLY DEPICTED IN THE SKY. TODAY, WE DO NOT BELONG TO THE PART OF ABRAHAM'S SEED THAT WILL BE AS NUMEROUS AS THE SAND BY THE SEA, BUT TO THE PART THAT WILL BE LIKE THE STARS IN THE SKY. THE HEAVENLY CALLING OF THE CHURCH ALLOWS US TO VIEW THE STARS DIFFERENTLY THAN IGNORANT PEOPLE DO, FOR WE KNOW: THE MYSTERY OF THE STARS IS CONTAINED IN THE MYSTERY OF THE CHURCH, WHICH IS HIS BODY. AND THE INDIVIDUAL MEMBERS OF THE BODY OF CHRIST WILL ONE DAY SURPASS ONE ANOTHER JUST AS ONE STAR ALREADY SURPASSES ANOTHER IN BRIGHTNESS! THEREFORE, THE SCRIPTURE STATES: 'THE STARS WILL FALL FROM HEAVEN TO THE EARTH,' COMPLEMENTED BY THE OTHER: 'WE WILL BE CAUGHT UP IN THE CLOUDS TO MEET THE LORD IN THE AIR.' AND: 'THE DAY WILL MAKE IT CLEAR, BECAUSE IT WILL BE REVEALED IN FIRE, AND THE QUALITY OF EACH PERSON'S WORK WILL BE TESTED BY FIRE' (1 COR. 3:13). AND: 'BUT I PRESS ON TO TAKE HOLD OF THAT FOR WHICH CHRIST JESUS TOOK HOLD OF ME' (PHIL. 3:12). THE FORMATION OF THE NEW STAR HOSTS IS DILIGENTLY UNDERWAY ON EARTH, FOR THEN THE NEW STARS WILL BE READY TO ASCEND FROM THE EARTH INTO THE HEAVENS OR INTO THE AIR!



THE WORD IN EPH. 3:15 SHOWS US GOD AS THE FATHER OF EVERY FAMILY IN HEAVEN AND ON EARTH. THE WORD FAMILY IS NOT A HAPPY TRANSLATION OF THE GREEK WORD PATRIA OR FATHERHOOD, FATHER'S HOUSE. IT COMES FROM THE LATIN WORD FAMULUS, SERVANT OR SLAVE. ITS MEMBERS WERE CALLED FAMILY, MEANING THE PEOPLE BELONGING TO THE SERVANT. HOWEVER, THE WORD PATRIA CONTAINS THE BIBLICAL IDEA OF A GROUP OF PEOPLE WHO BELONG TOGETHER BECAUSE THEY ALL DESCEND FROM ONE FATHER. THUS, JOSEPH, THE HUSBAND OF MARY, WAS FROM THE HOUSE AND LINEAGE (PATRIA) OF DAVID (LUKE 2:4). THE FATHER'S HOUSE OR FATHERHOOD EXTENDS TO MORE PEOPLE THAN JUST A MAN'S DIRECT SONS. ALL GRANDCHILDREN AND GREAT-GRANDCHILDREN AND THEIR FAMILIES ARE INCLUDED, INDEED THE ENTIRE TRIBE THAT IS STILL AWARE OF A COMMON ANCESTOR.

NOW GOD HAS MANY SUCH 'FAMILIES' OR FATHERHOODS IN THE HEAVENS AND ON EARTH, BOTH IN THIS AGE AND IN THE AGES TO COME. WE TEND TO FOCUS ONLY ON THE SPIRITUAL FAMILY OR FATHERHOOD OF THE CHURCH WE BELONG TO. WE OFTEN FORGET THAT THE BIBLE SPEAKS OF OTHER FATHERHOODS OR FAMILIES AS WELL. THESE FATHERHOODS OF GOD ARE REFERRED TO IN THE NEW TESTAMENT IN THE HEAVENS AS PRINCIPALITIES, POWERS, MIGHTS, DOMINIONS, THRONES, ANGELS, AND ARCHANGELS. THE FATHERHOODS ON EARTH INCLUDE ISRAEL, THE ISRAEL OF GOD, AND THE CHURCH OF GOD. ACCORDING TO EPHESIANS 3:10, GOD REVEALS HIS MANIFOLD WISDOM TO THE PRINCIPALITIES AND POWERS IN HEAVENLY PLACES THROUGH HIS CHURCH, WHICH IS HIS BODY. OTHER HEAVENLY FATHERHOODS ARE MENTIONED IN COLOSSIANS 1:16 AND 1 PETER 3:22. WE DO NOT KNOW THE SPECIFICS OF THESE HEAVENLY FATHERHOODS, THEIR ROLES, OR THEIR RELATIONSHIP TO GOD. THEY BELONG TO THE INVISIBLE CREATION, OF WHICH WE ONLY KNOW WHAT GOD'S SPIRIT REVEALS TO US IN HIS WORD. HOWEVER, GENESIS 6 SHOWS US THAT THERE MUST BE MIGHTY FATHERHOODS IN THE HEAVENS, AS IT REPORTS THAT THE SONS OF GOD (ELOHIM) DESCEND TO EARTH AND INTERMINGLE WITH THE FALLEN CREATION OF GOD ON EARTH.

'THE AERIAL HEAVEN' THE AIR ABOVE THE EARTH, TRAVERSED BY BIRDS AND AIRCRAFT, IS FUNDAMENTALLY DIFFERENT FROM THE HEAVENS. THE AIR BELONGS TO THE EARTH; WITHOUT AIR, HUMANS AND ALL LIFE ON EARTH CANNOT EXIST, JUST AS THEY CANNOT WITHOUT WATER, WHICH EXISTS IN VAPOR FORM IN THE AIR. THIS AIR BELT EXTENDS, BECOMING THINNER, UP TO THE FIRE WALL THAT SEPARATES THE LOWEST HEAVENLY REALM OR PARADISE FROM THE EARTHLY ATMOSPHERE. THE MOON MAY STILL BELONG TO THIS AIR WORLD, BUT ALL OTHER CELESTIAL BODIES, ESPECIALLY THE SUN, MOVE BEYOND THIS HEAVENLY WALL OR BOUNDARY (THE 'ENDS OF THE HEAVENS'), WHICH CONSISTS OF A SHELL OF HIGHLY CHARGED ELECTRICITY. THIS BARRIER WAS ESTABLISHED AFTER THE EXPULSION OF THE FIRST HUMANS FROM PARADISE, WHICH IS NOW SOUGHT ABOVE THE AIR REGION, AND IS REFERRED TO IN THE CREATION ACCOUNT AS 'THE FLAMING SWORD OF THE CHERUBIM.' THIS CIRCUIT HAS SINCE SEPARATED HEAVEN AND EARTH, AND TO PASS THROUGH IT, ONE MUST HAVE 'POWER OVER FIRE' LIKE THE ANGELS WHEN THEY COME TO EARTH AS MESSENGERS OF GOD.

ONE MUST EITHER BE SPIRITUALLY RESURRECTED LIKE THE LORD JESUS WHEN HE ASCENDED FROM THE EARTH TO HEAVEN. HUMANS IN FLESH AND BLOOD CANNOT PASS THROUGH THIS HIGHLY CHARGED ELECTRIC FIREWALL OF MANY MILLIONS OF VOLTS. THIS WILL BECOME EVIDENT WHEN THE ANTICHRISTIAN PEOPLE OF THE END TIMES, INTOXICATED BY THEIR TECHNICAL SUCCESSES, ATTEMPT TO TRAVEL INTO SPACE WITH ROCKETS AND REACH THE STARS. NO ONE WILL RETURN ALIVE; NOT EVEN THEIR METAL ROCKETS WILL COME BACK ONCE THEY EXCEED A CERTAIN ALTITUDE. FOR ABOVE THE AIRSPACE BEGINS A COMPLETELY DIFFERENT CREATION OF SPACE-TIME, WHICH CAN ONLY BE ENTERED BY BEINGS TRANSFORMED INTO THE CORRESPONDING CONDITIONS. WE USED TO SAY THAT ONE MUST 'RECOGNIZE' THE HEIGHT BEFORE ONE CAN REACH IT. AND TO DO THAT, ONE MUST FIRST BE RECOGNIZED BY IT! WITH TECHNOLOGY, THE FALLEN MAN, EXPELLED FROM THE PARADISE OF HEIGHT, UNCONSCIOUSLY TRIES TO DEFEAT THE CHERUBIM AND PUSH BACK INTO PARADISE. IT WILL BE SHOWN THAT THE CHERUBIM ARE STRONGER, AND THE LORD OF HOSTS WHO REIGNS OVER THEM IS EVEN MORE SO. THE AIR REALM IS A SEA OF GAS THAT BECOMES DENSER AS IT DESCENDS TOWARDS THE EARTH, AS GASES CAN BE COMPRESSED BY THE PRESSURE OF HEAVY WEIGHTS. THIS SEA OF GAS ALSO SURROUNDS THE OUTERMOST HEAVENLY WORLDS LIKE A SHELL AND SERVES AS A BUFFER BETWEEN HEAVEN AND EARTH. IN IT DWELL NOT ONLY VISIBLE BIRDS AND CLOUDS BUT ALSO A MULTITUDE OF INVISIBLE, BODILESS BEINGS, SPIRITS, DEMONS, AND WINDS. ABOVE ALL, IN THE 'REALM OF AUTHORITY OF THE AIR,' THERE REIGNS A PRINCE, NAMELY THE SPIRIT WHO NOW WORKS IN THE SONS OF DISOBEDIENCE ACCORDING TO EPHESIANS 2:2. WHETHER IT IS SATAN HIMSELF WHO IS MEANT OR WHETHER IT IS A SUBORDINATE PRINCE OF HIS, SINCE SATAN HIMSELF HAS ACCESS TO HEAVEN UNTIL THE END (REVELATION 12:7-8), WE DO NOT KNOW FOR SURE. PAUL COULD HAVE WRITTEN IN EPHESIANS 2:2 THAT SATAN IS THE PRINCE OF THE AIR, BUT HE DID NOT. WHAT IS IMPORTANT FOR OUR TOPIC IS THAT THE AIR REALM IS ALSO A DOMAIN OF AUTHORITY THAT IS UNDER THE CONTROL OF A SPIRIT PRINCE WHO CAN INFLUENCE HUMANS. AIR AND HEAVEN ARE OFTEN CONFUSED BY US WHEN READING THE BIBLE. WE LOOK UP INTO THE VAST SEA OF AIR THAT SURROUNDS THE WHOLE EARTH AND LIKE TO CALL IT HEAVEN, BECAUSE THE HEAVENS ARE ALSO ABOVE. SOMETIMES BOTH ARE COMBINED, AND PEOPLE SPEAK OF THE 'AIR HEAVEN.' HOWEVER, THIS IS NOT CORRECT BECAUSE THE AIR REALM IS NOT HEAVEN ACCORDING TO SCRIPTURE. IT ALWAYS SPEAKS ONLY OF THE AIR OR OF THE HEAVENS. NEVER...

THE BIBLE GIVES REASON TO EQUATE THE AIR ABOVE US WITH THE HEAVENS OR EVEN WITH HEAVEN ITSELF. THE AIRSPACE STILL BELONGS TO THE EARTH ALONG WITH THE WEATHER PHENOMENA WITHIN IT. IT IS INDEED VISIBLE AND TANGIBLE IN CLOUDS AND WIND. THE WINDS AND STORMS ARE STRONG MOVEMENTS IN THE SPIRITUAL REALM OF THE AIR, AS THE GERMANS RIGHTLY RECOGNIZED WHEN THEY SPOKE OF THE STORM OF WOTAN'S WILD HOST. GOD ALSO MAKES HIS SERVANTS INTO WINDS. ALONGSIDE THE ELEMENTS OR REVELATIONS OF GOD: FIRE, EARTH, AND WATER, AIR IS ESSENTIAL FOR LIFE ON EARTH. AIR, OR MORE BROADLY GAS, IS A FORM OF MATTER THAT IS THE HIGHEST, AND THUS STANDS ABOVE VISIBLE LIGHT. THE THREE FORMS OR STATES OF MATTER ARE: SOLID, LIQUID, AND GASEOUS. THEY CORRESPOND TO: BODY, SOUL, AND SPIRIT. THE SPIRIT CORRESPONDS TO THE INNERMOST OR HIGHEST; IT IS INVISIBLE BUT CAN BE RECOGNIZED AND HEARD THROUGH ITS EFFECTS, THROUGH ITS 'WHISPERING'; IT COMMUNICATES WITH THE SOUL OR THE LIQUID THROUGH A MYSTERIOUS EXCHANGE PROCESS THAT WE CALL BREATH OR PRAYER. SPIRIT PERMEATES EVERYTHING LIKE AIR OR GAS, DEPENDING ON PERMEABILITY, EVEN THE LIQUID AND SOLID FORMS. THE MORE IT CAN PENETRATE, THE MORE SPIRITUAL THEY BECOME; THE LESS IT CAN PENETRATE, THE MORE SOULLESS AND THUS HEAVIER AND MORE DECAYED THEY ARE. HUMANS PARTAKE IN ALL THREE STATES OF EXISTENCE: SOLID THROUGH THE BODY, LIQUID THROUGH THE SOUL, AND GASEOUS THROUGH THE SPIRIT. THE SPIRITUALIZATION OR GASIFICATION OF SOLID AND LIQUID SUBSTANCES OCCURS THROUGH HEAT AND FIRE (BAPTISM OF FIRE!); CONVERSELY, THROUGH COLD OR COOLING, GASEOUS AND LIQUID FORMS CAN BECOME SOLID. FIRE AND WARMTH OR TRIBULATION THUS PROMOTE THE LOOSENING OF THE SOLID AND LIQUID, THEIR GASIFICATION OR SPIRITUALIZATION, WHILE COLD, THAT IS, LACK OF FIRE AND WARMTH, CAUSES THE DESCENT OF HIGH, GOD-NEAR STATES OF MATTER INTO LOWER, COARSE, AND GOD-FAR FORMS. HUMANS BREATHE AIR; THEY ALSO EAT AND DRINK SOLID AND LIQUID SUBSTANCES, WHICH ALSO CONTAIN AIR, BUT THEIR NEED FOR AIR IS SO STRONG THAT IT MUST NEVER BE INTERRUPTED, UNLIKE EATING AND DRINKING, WHICH CAN BE PAUSED. ALTHOUGH ANIMALS AND PLANTS ALSO BREATHE, THEY DO SO DIFFERENTLY. THE BREATH OF THE ANIMAL 'GOES DOWNWARD' (ECCLESIASTES 3:21). YET, THEY WILL ALL ONE DAY BE SPIRITUALIZED OR TRANSFIGURED! (ROMANS 8:21 AND MANY OTHERS) BECAUSE BREATHING, SPEAKING, PRAYING, PRAISING, AND CURSING ARE INTERCONNECTED, AND WITHOUT THE GAS OF AIR, THE COMBUSTION PROCESS OF OUR...

THE FLAME OF LIFE CANNOT BE EXTINGUISHED, WHICH IS WHY THE PRINCE, WHO STILL REIGNS IN THE AIR TODAY, WANTS TO POISON IT, DISTORT IT, AND HAVE CLOUDS OF INCENSE IN HIS HONOR, RISING FROM THE MOUTHS OF PEOPLE. INSTEAD OF THE CONSCIOUS PRAISE OF LIPS, THE DEVIL FIRST DESIRES THE TOXIC AIR, THE UNCONSCIOUS SMOKE OFFERING OF TOBACCO! THUS, THE AIRSPACE IS NEITHER HEAVEN NOR PARADISE, BUT A REALM OF SPIRITS THAT BELONGS TO THE FALLEN EARTH AND ITS HUMANITY, TO THE VISIBLE COSMOS, PRIMARILY COMPOSED OF A 'SOUR' SUBSTANCE, OXYGEN. THERE IS MUCH SIGNIFICANCE IN THESE COMPOSITIONS: SOURDOUGH, OXYGEN, SOUR WINE, SOUR FACES, SOURING...! THE HEAVENS BEGIN ONLY ABOVE THIS AIRSPACE OR THE OXYGEN SPHERE AND ARE UNDOUBTEDLY EFFECTIVELY SEPARATED FROM IT, FOR IT IS NOT POSSIBLE TO REACH THE HEAVENS FROM THE EARTH WITHOUT PASSING THROUGH THE AIRSPACE. TO THIS DAY, WE KNOW VERY LITTLE ABOUT THIS AIRSPACE. WHAT HAS BEEN EXPLORED IS A THIN SHELL ABOUT 300 KM HIGH ABOVE THE EARTH. IT IS DIVIDED INTO THREE SPHERES: 1. THE TROPOSPHERE. THIS IS THE LOWEST LAYER OF AIR FROM THE EARTH UP TO ABOUT 11 KM HIGH, UP TO 14 KM AT THE EQUATOR, AND UP TO 7 KM AT THE POLES. IN THIS DENSE AIR AT THE BOTTOM OF THE AIR SEA, WE MOVE ON THE EARTH, AND EVEN THE HIGHEST MOUNTAINS DO NOT RISE ABOVE IT. STRONG AIR MOVEMENTS OCCUR IN THE TROPOSPHERE, 'AIR BATTLES' OF THIS REALM OF SPIRITS, MANIFESTING IN THE FORMATION OF HIGH AND LOW-PRESSURE AREAS, IN CLOUDS, FOG, STORMS, AND SIGNIFICANT TEMPERATURE FLUCTUATIONS. THE TEMPERATURE DECREASES STEADILY FROM AN AVERAGE OF EIGHT DEGREES ABOVE ZERO AT GROUND LEVEL AS ONE ASCENDS IN THE TROPOSPHERE UNTIL IT REACHES ABOUT 50 DEGREES BELOW ZERO AT AN AVERAGE HEIGHT OF 11 KM AT THE BOUNDARY OF THE STRATOSPHERE. AT THE SAME TIME, THE AIR PRESSURE DROPS TO ABOUT A QUARTER. 2. ABOVE THIS TROPOSPHERE BEGINS THE STRATOSPHERE, WHICH EXTENDS TO ABOUT 100 KM ABOVE THE EARTH. IT IS DIVIDED INTO TWO LAYERS. AT ABOUT 40 KM HIGH, THERE IS A ROUGHLY 16 KM THICK OZONE LAYER, WHICH ABSORBS SUNLIGHT SIGNIFICANTLY BUT IS ALSO MEANT TO PROVIDE EFFECTIVE RADIATION PROTECTION FOR LIFE ON EARTH. ALREADY IN THE LOWER PART OF THE STRATOSPHERE, THERE ARE NO MORE AIR CURRENTS, ALL WEATHER PHENOMENA CEASE. THE AIR PRESSURE DROPS DRAMATICALLY, AND THE AIR BECOMES SO THIN THAT HUMAN LIFE AND BREATHING ARE NO LONGER POSSIBLE. THE HIGHEST BALLOON HAS REACHED 22.5 KM SO FAR. JET-PROPELLED ROCKETS HAVE GONE OVER 200 KM HIGH. BUT WHAT IS...

WHAT HAPPENS WHEN THE HEIGHT IS IN THE THOUSANDS OF KILOMETERS? · THE UPPER, SECOND LAYER OF THE STRATOSPHERE IS CALLED THE D LAYER. IT IS LOCATED AT ABOUT 70 KM IN HEIGHT. IN THIS LAYER, LUMINOUS NOCTILUCENT CLOUDS ARE OBSERVED, WHICH ARE THOUGHT TO ORIGINATE FROM FINE VOLCANIC DUST OR SHATTERED METEORS. AT NIGHT, THIS LAYER SIGNIFICANTLY ALTERS ITS BEHAVIOR TOWARDS RADIO WAVES. 3. ABOVE THE STRATOSPHERE LIES THE IONOSPHERE. IT EXTENDS FROM 100 TO 300 KM IN HEIGHT. IT ALSO CONSISTS OF TWO LAYERS. THE LOWER ONE IS THE E LAYER (HEAVISIDE LAYER) BETWEEN 100 AND 150 KM. IT IS HIGHLY IONIZED AND ELECTRIFIED. AIR PRESSURE HAS DECREASED FURTHER. THE PHENOMENON OF THE NORTHERN LIGHTS APPEARS HERE, WHICH IS GENERATED IN THE HIGHER LAYER, THE F LAYER. THIS UPPER LAYER OF THE IONOSPHERE EXTENDS BETWEEN 150 AND 300 KM IN HEIGHT. IT CONSISTS OF TWO PARTS WITH DIFFERENT LEVELS OF IONIZATION, ONE CONTAINING ATOMIC OXYGEN AND ITS DECAY, AND THE OTHER PART CONTAINING MOLECULAR NITROGEN. IONS ARE ELECTRICALLY CHARGED ATOMS THAT ARISE FROM THE SPLITTING OF GAS MOLECULES IN AQUEOUS SOLUTION. THE POSITIVELY CHARGED ONES ARE CALLED CATIONS, WHILE THE NEGATIVELY CHARGED ONES ARE ANIONS. IONIZED GAS IS ULTIMATELY NOTHING MORE THAN HIGHLY CHARGED, TENSE GAS. THIS IS WHAT SCIENCE KNOWS OR BELIEVES TO KNOW ABOUT THE ATMOSPHERIC REGION TO THIS DAY. IT IS SCANT AND OFFERS LITTLE FOR OUR TOPIC. IT SHOULD BE NOTED THAT IT BECOMES INCREASINGLY 'ELECTRICAL' AS ONE ASCENDS. BALLOONISTS REPORT THAT THE OPTICAL HORIZON RISES IN A PECULIAR WAY. THE SKY LOSES ITS BLUE COLOR AND GRADUALLY TURNS BLACK. BEYOND THE IONOSPHERE, IF ONE IS TO BELIEVE THE LOUD NEWSPAPER REPORTS, RUSSIAN AND AMERICAN ROCKETS HAVE BEEN LAUNCHED, WHICH ARE NOW EITHER ORBITING THE EARTH AT HIGH ALTITUDES OR SURROUNDING THE SUN AND THE MOON AS ARTIFICIAL SATELLITES. YES, SOME HAVE EVEN PENETRATED SEVERAL MILLION KILOMETERS FURTHER. THERE IS NO EVIDENCE FOR THIS, BUT THERE IS PLENTY OF NOISY PROPAGANDA FOR THE ACHIEVEMENTS OF ROCKET TECHNOLOGY. THE HEIGHTS REPORTED IN THE NEWSPAPERS ARE ALL CALCULATED ONLY ON THE PAPER OF SCHOLARS, AND THIS PAPER IS AS PATIENT AS THE LARGER NEWSPAPER PAPER. ONE CAN OBSERVE HOW PHYSICS AND TECHNOLOGY IN PRACTICE HAVE ALREADY DIVERGED FROM THE OFFICIALLY RECOGNIZED SCIENTIFIC UNDERSTANDING.

THE WORLDVIEW HAS BEEN RESOLVED AND THEIR ATTEMPTS TO ESTABLISH THE EARTHLY REALM, AS AVIATION ALREADY DOES, TO AVOID COLLIDING WITH MOUNTAIN PEAKS THAT SHOULD HAVE LONG SINCE SUNK DOWN DUE TO THE CURVATURE OF THE GLOBE, YET INEXPLICABLY REMAIN SO HIGH THAT ONE KEEPS BUMPING INTO THEM. HOWEVER, THE BIBLE CONTAINS AN IMPORTANT WORD ABOUT THE AIR, FROM WHICH FAR-REACHING CONCLUSIONS CAN BE DRAWN. THE APOSTLE PAUL WRITES IN 1 THESSALONIANS 4:17: 'THEN WE WHO ARE ALIVE, WHO REMAIN, WILL BE CAUGHT UP TOGETHER WITH THEM IN THE CLOUDS TO MEET THE LORD IN THE AIR.' THEREFORE, THE RAPTURE, WHICH WILL CONCLUDE THE HISTORY OF GOD'S PEOPLE BEFORE THE DAY OF THE LORD, DOES NOT OCCUR UP INTO THE HEAVENS, LET ALONE INTO HEAVEN, BUT 'IN THE AIR.' FOR THIS, THE LORD DESCENDS FROM HEAVEN INTO THE REALM OF THE AIR. SINCE IT ALSO SAYS 'IN CLOUDS,' IT REFERS TO THE TROPOSPHERIC AIRSPACE, WHICH IS CLOSEST TO THE EARTH. HERE, IN THIS AIRSPACE ABOVE THE EARTH, AND THUS LIKELY VISIBLE TO PEOPLE ON EARTH, IS THE GATHERING AND PRESERVATION PLACE OF BELIEVERS FROM ALL TIMES BEFORE THE OUTPOURING OF THE LORD'S WRATH ON EARTH. IT IS ALREADY EVIDENT THAT THE RAPTURE CANNOT PERTAIN TO THE CHURCH OF THE BODY OF CHRIST, THAT IS, THE PAULINE MYSTERY, BECAUSE IT ALREADY EXISTS AND ACTS AMONG THE HEAVENLY BEINGS AND POSSESSES CITIZENSHIP IN THE HEAVENS ALONG WITH A DWELLING THERE (PHILIPPIANS 3:20; 2 CORINTHIANS 5:1). THE CHURCH OF THE BODY OF CHRIST BELONGS TO THE HEAVENS AND TO HEAVEN. THE EARTH AND ITS AIRSPACE ARE FOREIGN TO IT, NOT HOME (HEBREWS 11:16). QUITE DIFFERENTLY, THE BELIEVING PEOPLE OF GOD OR SPIRITUAL ISRAEL OF ALL TIMES HAS A DISTINCTLY EARTHLY CALLING AND MENTION. AT THE END, IT WILL BE TEMPORARILY TAKEN FROM THE EARTH AND THUS AWAY FROM GOD'S WRATH INTO THE AIR, WHICH HAS BEEN PURIFIED BY THE PRINCE WHO PREVIOUSLY RULED IN THE AIR. IN THIS AIRSPACE DIRECTLY ABOVE THE EARTH, THE RAPTURED PEOPLE OF GOD WILL BE INSTRUCTED, FORMED (1 CORINTHIANS 3:12-15; 2 CORINTHIANS 5:10), AND PREPARED FOR THE DESCENT BACK TO EARTH TOGETHER WITH THE LORD AND HIS CHURCH. IT HAS GENERALLY BEEN ASSUMED IN THIS RAPTURE PASSAGE IN 1 THESSALONIANS 4 THAT THE RAPTURE OCCURS INTO THE HEAVENS AS ONCE THE ASCENSION DID, WHILE COMPLETELY OVERLOOKING THAT PAUL, UNDER THE INFLUENCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT, HAD TO WRITE: 'IN THE AIR.'

BECAUSE THE UNIVERSE OF THE BIBLE WAS NO LONGER RECOGNIZED, BUT WAS SUBJECTED TO THE CONSTRAINTS OF WORLDLY SCIENCE, AIR WAS EQUATED WITH HEIGHT AND THUS WITH HEAVEN. WE CAN RATHER SAY: TAKEN UP IN CLOUDS TO MEET THE LORD IN THE AIR, BUT NOT HIGHER! FOR THE AIR EVENTUALLY ENDS, AND ABOVE IT THE HEAVENS BEGIN. HERE WE HAVE A PRACTICAL EXAMPLE OF HOW THE DETACHMENT FROM BIBLICAL STATEMENTS ABOUT THE UNIVERSE HAS OBSCURED THE BELIEVERS' VIEW OF THE PROPHETIC WORD. THIS IS STILL THE CASE IN MANY AREAS. THUS, THE WORDS FROM MATTHEW 24:31 SHOULD BE UNDERSTOOD: AND HE WILL SEND HIS ANGELS WITH A LOUD TRUMPET CALL, AND THEY WILL GATHER HIS ELECT FROM THE FOUR WINDS, FROM ONE END OF HEAVEN TO THE OTHER (LITERALLY: FROM THE ENDS OF HEAVEN TO THEIR ENDS. NOTE THE CURVATURE IMPLIED IN THIS FORMULATION!). THE ENDS OF HEAVEN REFER TO THE SPHERE THAT BORDERS THE AIR REGION AND THE LOWEST HEAVENLY SPHERE. ACCORDING TO 1 CORINTHIANS 15:40, THERE ARE HEAVENLY BODIES AND EARTHLY BODIES. THE BODIES OF THE BELIEVERS THAT THEY WILL RECEIVE THROUGH THEIR RESURRECTION AND TRANSFORMATION ARE NOT HEAVENLY, BUT RATHER GLORIFIED EARTHLY BODIES, BECAUSE THE AIR ALWAYS BELONGS TO THE EARTH. THE INHABITANTS OF THE EARTH IN THE MILLENNIUM, AT LEAST THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL AMONG THEM, WILL NO LONGER BE CONFINED TO THE EARTH AS FALLEN HUMANS ARE TODAY, BUT THEY WILL ALSO BE ABLE TO MOVE IN THE HEAVENLY AIR, WITHOUT AIRPLANES OR ROCKETS. THE AIR REGION OF THE EARTH WILL PLAY A SIGNIFICANT ROLE IN THE MILLENNIUM, AS IT WILL BE CLEANSED OF THE HOSTILE, DEMONIC SPIRITUAL FORCES THAT CURRENTLY DOMINATE THE AIR. THROUGH THIS PURIFIED AND RENEWED AIR REALM, THE TRAFFIC BETWEEN HEAVEN AND EARTH WILL FLOW, AND ALL HEAVENLY BLESSINGS WILL POUR OUT UPON THE EARTH. THE OVERLAPPING AND INTERWOVEN HEAVENLY SPHERES (THE GREEK WORD 'SPHAIRA' MEANS SPHERE!) ARE ALSO THE HEAVENLY RUNGS OR STEPS OF THE LADDER LEADING FROM THE EARTH TO THE HEAVENS ABOVE. THE METALS WE FIND IN OUR CURRENT STONE AND CLAY SOIL ARE HIGHLY VALUED BECAUSE THEY POSSESS EXTRAORDINARY 'SUPERNATURAL' PROPERTIES OF STRENGTH, FIRE RESISTANCE, SHAPE-SHIFTING ABILITY, BEAUTY, AND LUSTER. THEY ARE EXCEPTIONS IN THE CLAY SOIL, ORIGINATING FROM...

THEY ARE SOMEWHAT FROM ANOTHER WORLD AND ARE THEREFORE SO VALUABLE. COULD THESE METAL DEPOSITS OF THE EARTH HAVE PERHAPS FALLEN INTO THE DEPTHS OF THE EARTH DURING THE DOWNFALL OF THE EARTH (EPH. 1:4; HEB. 9:26; 1 PET. 1:20; JOHN 17:24) (LUTHER: FOUNDATION), DURING THE GREAT BATTLE THAT SHOOK THE UNIVERSE BETWEEN GENESIS 1:1 AND GENESIS 1:2, AT THE DOWNFALL OF THE THEN FIRST HEAVENS (2 PET. 3:5-6)? THEN TODAY'S TECHNOLOGY, WHICH IS UNIMAGINABLE WITHOUT METALS, WOULD THRIVE ON THE REMNANTS OF THE HEAVENLY CATASTROPHE THAT LIES BEHIND US. WITH THESE HEAVENLY FRAGMENTS, THE DEVIL, THE PRINCE OF THIS AGE, WOULD CONSTRUCT THE NEW BABYLONIAN TOWER OF TECHNOLOGY, WHICH IS AGAIN SUPPOSED TO REACH TO HEAVEN. BUT ONCE AGAIN, THE LORD OF HEAVEN WILL COME DOWN BEFOREHAND! AT THIS POINT, IT SHOULD ALSO BE NOTED THE WIDELY KNOWN LITTLE BOOK BY THE LATE PREACHER RIEDINGER, 'SEVEN HEAVENLY STAGES.' HERE, SEVEN HEAVENLY STAGES ARE DESCRIBED, REPRESENTING SEVEN HEAVENLY WORLDS ABOVE US. THE FIRST STAGE OR SPHERE, WHICH BORDERS THE EARTHLY ATMOSPHERE, IS CALLED 'THE LAND OF MERCY' IN THE BOOK. IT IS STILL SOMEWHAT EARTHLY THERE, THE EARTH IS STILL VERY CLOSE, AND SCHOOLS PLAY A SIGNIFICANT ROLE. THE LANDSCAPE IS MUCH MORE BEAUTIFUL THAN ON EARTH, BUT INCOMPARABLE TO THE GLORY OF THE HIGHER STAGES. HIGH MOUNTAIN RANGES SEPARATE FROM THE NEXT STAGE, WHICH CAN ONLY BE ENTERED BY THOSE WHO HAVE REACHED THE MATURITY FOR IT IN THEIR DEVELOPMENT. THE NEXT STAGE IS 'THE LAND OF JUSTICE,' AND AGAIN THERE ARE 'MANY MANSIONS IN THE FATHER'S HOUSE,' BUT CLEARER, BRIGHTER, HENCE THE PROCESSES OF SOUL INSTRUCTION ARE DEEPER. THE THIRD STAGE IS CALLED 'THE LAND OF PEACE,' THE FOURTH: 'THE LAND OF OBEDIENCE,' THE FIFTH: 'THE LAND OF LOVE,' THE SIXTH: 'THE LAND OF POWER,' AND THE SEVENTH STAGE: 'THE LAND OF GLORY.' IN THIS STAGE ARE THE MOUNTAINS OF PEARLS AND PRECIOUS STONES, WHICH ARE THE WALLS, GATES, AND FOUNDATIONS OF THE HEAVENLY JERUSALEM. THIS LITTLE BOOK MAKES A STRONG, EVIDENTLY INSPIRED IMPRESSION. HOWEVER, EVEN THOSE WHO DO NOT WISH TO ACCEPT THE EDIFYING AND FIGURATIVE DESCRIPTIONS AND APPLICATIONS MUST CONCEDE THAT THE ORGANIC, HIERARCHICAL GROWTH AND DEVELOPMENT PRINCIPLE HAS ALSO BEEN INCORPORATED INTO THE HEAVENS BY GOD. THE MERE FACT THAT THERE ARE MULTIPLE HEAVENS INDICATES THAT THESE HEAVENS ARE TIERED WORLDS TO THE THRONE OF GOD. AND THE AUTHOR'S STATEMENT CAN BE AFFIRMED: 'A HEAVEN OPENS TO THE EYES OF THE SOUL ONLY IN PROPORTION TO THE TRANSFORMATION INTO THE HEAVENLY BEING!'

AN IMPROVED TRANSLATION OF THE CREATION ACCOUNT, WHICH IS FULL OF DEEP MYSTERIES, IS COMPLETELY REINTERPRETED BY ERICH LIEBMANN IN JERUSALEM, A DEVOUT JEWISH CHRISTIAN AND AN EXCELLENT EXPERT IN HIS HEBREW LANGUAGE. HE USES INNOVATIVE WORDS FOR PREVIOUSLY KNOWN CONCEPTS, SHEDDING NEW LIGHT ON THE CREATION NARRATIVE. THIS IS MADE POSSIBLE BY THE FACT THAT HEBREW WORDS AND ROOTS HAVE A VAST VOLUME, ACCOMMODATING MANY SEEMINGLY CONTRADICTORY YET MYSTERIOUSLY RELATED CONCEPTS. THE VOCALIZATION FURTHER ENHANCES THE FLEXIBILITY OF THIS LANGUAGE. THIS NEW TRANSLATION SPANS FROM GENESIS 1 TO GENESIS 2:3, STARTING WITH: 1) IN THE BEGINNING, GOD CREATED THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH. 2) AND THE EARTH BECAME A CHAOTIC MESS. AND DARKNESS WAS OVER THE ABYSS, AND THE SPIRIT OF GOD HOVERED OVER THE FACE OF THE WATERS. 3) AND GOD SAID: LET THERE BE LIGHT. AND THERE WAS LIGHT. 4) AND GOD SAW THE LIGHT, THAT IT WAS GOOD. AND GOD SEPARATED THE LIGHT FROM THE DARKNESS; 5) AND GOD CALLED THE LIGHT DAY, AND THE DARKNESS HE CALLED NIGHT. AND THERE WAS EVENING AND THERE WAS MORNING: ONE LIGHT (DAY). 6) AND GOD SAID: LET THERE BE AN EXPANSE IN THE MIDST OF THE WATERS, AND LET IT SEPARATE THE WATERS FROM ONE ANOTHER. 7) AND GOD MADE THE EXPANSE, AND HE SEPARATED THE WATERS THAT WERE UNDER THE EXPANSE FROM THE WATERS THAT WERE ABOVE THE EXPANSE. - AND IT WAS SO. 8) AND GOD CALLED THE EXPANSE HEAVEN. AND THERE WAS EVENING AND THERE WAS MORNING: THE SECOND LIGHT. 9) AND GOD SAID: LET THE WATERS UNDER HEAVEN BE GATHERED TOGETHER TO ONE PLACE, AND LET THE DRY LAND APPEAR. - AND IT WAS SO. 10) AND GOD CALLED THE DRY LAND EARTH, AND THE GATHERING OF THE WATERS HE CALLED SEAS. AND GOD SAW THAT IT WAS GOOD. 11) AND GOD SAID: LET THE DRY LAND BRING FORTH GRASS, SEED-BEARING PLANTS, AND FRUIT TREES THAT BEAR FRUIT ACCORDING TO THEIR KIND, WITH SEED IN THEM ON THE DRY LAND. - AND IT WAS SO.

12) AND THE EARTH BRINGS FORTH GRASS THAT YIELDS SEED ACCORDING TO ITS KIND, AND TREES THAT BEAR FRUIT WITH SEED IN THEM ACCORDING TO THEIR KIND. AND GOD SAW THAT IT WAS GOOD. 13) AND THERE WAS EVENING AND THERE WAS MORNING: THE THIRD DAY. 14) AND GOD SAID: LET THERE BE LIGHTS IN THE EXPANSE OF THE HEAVENS TO SEPARATE THE DAY FROM THE NIGHT, AND LET THEM BE FOR SIGNS AND FOR SEASONS, AND FOR DAYS AND YEARS. 15) AND LET THEM BE LIGHTS IN THE EXPANSE OF THE HEAVENS TO GIVE LIGHT UPON THE EARTH. AND IT WAS SO. 16) AND GOD MADE THE TWO GREAT LIGHTS, THE GREATER LIGHT TO GOVERN THE DAY, AND THE LESSER LIGHT TO GOVERN THE NIGHT, AND THE STARS. 17) AND GOD SET THEM IN THE EXPANSE OF THE HEAVENS TO GIVE LIGHT ON THE EARTH. 18) AND TO GOVERN THE DAY AND THE NIGHT, AND TO SEPARATE THE LIGHT FROM THE DARKNESS. AND GOD SAW THAT IT WAS GOOD. 19) AND THERE WAS EVENING AND THERE WAS MORNING: THE FOURTH DAY. 20) AND GOD SAID: LET THE WATERS SWARM WITH SWARMS OF LIVING CREATURES, AND LET BIRDS FLY ABOVE THE EARTH ACROSS THE EXPANSE OF THE HEAVENS. 21) SO GOD CREATED THE GREAT SEA CREATURES AND EVERY LIVING CREATURE THAT MOVES, WITH WHICH THE WATERS SWARM, ACCORDING TO THEIR KINDS, AND EVERY WINGED BIRD ACCORDING TO ITS KIND. AND GOD SAW THAT IT WAS GOOD. 22) AND GOD BLESSED THEM, SAYING: BE FRUITFUL AND MULTIPLY, AND FILL THE WATERS IN THE SEAS, AND LET BIRDS MULTIPLY ON THE EARTH. 23) AND THERE WAS EVENING AND THERE WAS MORNING: THE FIFTH DAY. 24) AND GOD SAID: LET THE EARTH BRING FORTH LIVING CREATURES ACCORDING TO THEIR KINDS: LIVESTOCK AND CREEPING THINGS AND BEASTS OF THE EARTH ACCORDING TO THEIR KINDS. AND IT WAS SO.

AND GOD CREATES LIVING BEINGS ON DRY LAND ACCORDING TO THEIR KINDS, AND ANIMALS ACCORDING TO THEIR KINDS, AND EVERYTHING HARMFUL ON THE EARTH ACCORDING TO ITS KIND. - AND GOD SEES THAT IT WILL BE GOOD.

AND GOD SAID: LET US MAKE ADAM IN OUR IMAGE, ACCORDING TO OUR LIKENESS, AND LET THEM RULE OVER THE FISH OF THE SEA, AND OVER THE BIRDS OF THE SKY, AND OVER THE ANIMALS, AND OVER ALL THE EARTH, AND OVER EVERYTHING HARMFUL THAT CAUSES DAMAGE ON THE LAND.

AND GOD CREATES ADAM IN HIS IMAGE; IN THE IMAGE OF GOD HE CREATED HIM; MALE AND FEMALE HE CREATED THEM.

THE LORD GOD HAD NOT YET CAUSED IT TO RAIN ON THE DRY LAND, AND ADAM WAS NOT PRESENT TO CULTIVATE THE GROUND. THEN A MIST ROSE FROM THE DRY LAND AND WATERED THE ENTIRE SURFACE OF THE GROUND. AND THE LORD GOD FORMED ADAM FROM THE DUST OF THE GROUND AND BREATHED INTO HIS NOSTRILS THE BREATH OF LIFE, AND ADAM BECAME A LIVING BEING.



IN THE INSIGHTFUL INTERPRETATION OF THIS VERY IMPRESSIVE NEW VERSION OF THE CREATION ACCOUNT, ERICH LIEBMANN ASSUMES THAT THREE DIFFERENT HEBREW WORD FORMS STAND FOR THE WORD 'LIGHTS': MEARAT, MEOROT, AND MEOR. HOWEVER, NONE OF THESE WORDS ACTUALLY MEANS 'LIGHT.' LIEBMANN TRANSLATES THEM AS 'LIGHT PREPARATION SYSTEM.' ACCORDING TO GENESIS 1:4, THE HEBREW WORD FOR 'DAY' IN THE CREATION ACCOUNT SIGNIFIES 'LIGHT.' ACCORDINGLY, THE PLURAL JAMIM = 'DAYS' SHOULD BE TRANSLATED AS 'LIGHTS.' THIS WORD ALSO MEANS 'SEAS.' BY CONSIDERING THESE IMPORTANT DIFFERENCES IN THE TRANSLATION OF THE WORDS 'LIGHT' AND 'LIGHTS,' LIEBMANN ARRIVES AT A DEEPER UNDERSTANDING OF THE ENTIRE CREATION ACCOUNT. WHEN IT SAYS, 'LET THERE BE LIGHT' AND 'GOD SEPARATED THE LIGHT FROM THE DARKNESS,' LIEBMANN INTERPRETS THIS AS AN ONGOING PROCESS AFFECTING THE FUTURE, A DEVELOPMENT. THE SEPARATION OF THE PRIMORDIAL WATERS OF LIGHT AND DARKNESS, WHICH LIEBMANN PERCEIVES AS FULL OF SOULS, CONTINUES TO OCCUR TODAY, ESPECIALLY IN THE CREATURES. GOD CREATED SEVEN LEVELS OF LIGHT. FROM EVENING (MIXTURE) AND MORNING (VISITATION), A NEW, BRIGHTER LEVEL OF LIGHT OR REVELATION OF LIGHT WAS CONTINUALLY BORN, FOR DAY IS INDEED LIGHT. ADAM WAS IN THE SIXTH LEVEL OF LIGHT IN PARADISE, BUT THROUGH THE FALL, HE FELL BACK TO THE FOURTH LEVEL OF LIGHT. THE SEVENTH LEVEL OF LIGHT IS WITHOUT ANY DARKNESS, FOR THERE IS NO EVENING (MIXTURE) FOLLOWING IT AND NO NEW PURIFICATION OR VISITATION OF GOD ON A NEW MORNING. AT THE SAME TIME, THE SEVEN CREATIONS OF LIGHT BY GOD ARE TO BE CONNECTED WITH THE CREATION OF THE PLANETS, WHICH, ACCORDING TO PSALM 109:6, ARE DESTINED FOR THE GOVERNMENTS OF DARKNESS. THE CREATION WORD OF GOD: 'LET THERE BE LIGHT!' CONTINUES TO OPERATE UNTIL ALL DARK PRIMORDIAL WATERS ARE TRANSFORMED INTO SEVENFOLD PURIFIED LIGHT. LIEBMANN SEES THE PLANETS EMERGING FROM THE LOWER WATERS AND THE FIXED STARS FROM THE UPPER WATERS.

THE HEAVENS, ACCORDING TO JOB 37:18, ARE LIKE CAST MIRRORS THAT REFLECT THE LIGHT OF THE STARS, MAKING IT IMPOSSIBLE TO DETERMINE THEIR POSITIONS. THIS RECALLS THE WORDS IN 1 CORINTHIANS 13:12: 'FOR NOW WE SEE THROUGH A GLASS, DARKLY.' IN HEBREW, DARKNESS FUNDAMENTALLY MEANS TO TAKE, SAVE, OR KEEP, WHILE LIGHT SIGNIFIES GIVING AND RADIATING. LIEBMANN SEES THE 'DUST' FROM WHICH ADAM WAS MADE AS THE FINE, INVISIBLE LIGHT MATTER OF THE SOUL. ONCE THIS SOUL WAS FORMED, GOD BREATHED HIS SPIRIT INTO IT, MAKING IT A LIVING OR SPIRITUAL SOUL, YET STILL 'NAKED,' MEANING WITHOUT A BODY. LIEBMANN ALSO FINDS THE GARDEN OF EDEN WITH ITS WATERS ABOVE IN THE HEAVENS. THE FALL RESULTED IN ADAM'S TRANSPLANTATION OR TRANSFER TO EARTH. THIS GOOD, BIBLICAL INTERPRETATION ALSO LEADS THE AUTHOR TO LARGELY REJECT THE SCIENTIFIC, COPERNICAN WORLDVIEW. HOWEVER, HE CANNOT RECONCILE WITH THE IDEA OF A HOLLOW EARTH EITHER, INSTEAD HOLDING ONTO THE SOLAR SYSTEM AND THE LARGE, ROTATING PLANETARY SPHERES, ONE OF WHICH HE SEES AS EARTH OR ADAMAH. HE BELIEVES THAT NOTHING IN THE BIBLE CONTRADICTS THE ROTATION OF THE EARTH, OVERLOOKING NUMEROUS PASSAGES THAT INDICATE GOD HAS FIRMLY ESTABLISHED THE EARTH ON PILLARS, WHICH WILL NOT BE MOVED FOREVER! FROM JEREMIAH 31:36: 'IF THE HEAVENS ABOVE CAN BE MEASURED AND THE FOUNDATIONS OF THE EARTH BELOW SEARCHED OUT, THEN I WILL ALSO REJECT ALL THE SEED OF ISRAEL,' ERICH LIEBMANN CONCLUDES THAT THE CONCEPT OF A HOLLOW WORLD CANNOT BE CORRECT, AS IT WOULD IMPLY THAT THE HEAVENS COULD BE MEASURED. ONE ONLY NEEDS TO CONSIDER THE EARTH'S DIAMETER, WHICH IS ALREADY KNOWN. HOWEVER, THIS CONCLUSION SEEMS UNCONVINCING, AS WHILE THE EARTH CAN BE MEASURED, THE HEAVENS IN A HOLLOW WORLD CANNOT BE, BECAUSE THEY ARE INVISIBLE AND CONSIST OF DIMENSIONS INACCESSIBLE TO US. THE EARTH'S DIAMETER IS IRRELEVANT HERE. LIEBMANN'S CONTRIBUTION TO UNDERSTANDING THE CREATION STORY IS VERY IMPORTANT AND SIGNIFICANT, WHICH IS WHY IT HAS BEEN QUOTED IN DETAIL HERE. THE HEBREW CREATION ACCOUNT UNDOUBTEDLY HOLDS ALL THE MYSTERIES OF THE UNIVERSE THAT WE DO NOT YET KNOW AND CAN HARDLY IMAGINE. WHAT HAS BEEN REVEALED TO US SO FAR ALREADY SHEDS MUCH LIGHT ON THE UNIVERSE AND ITS SHAPE. WE MUST NOT MIX OUR OWN THOUGHTS INTO THE DIVINE REPRESENTATION.

THE MIDDLE FLOOR: THE EARTH BETWEEN FIRE AND WATER.

GOD HAS GIVEN THE EARTH TO HUMANKIND (PS. 115:16). WE LIVE ON IT AND CAN THEREFORE EXPLORE IT. HOW FAR HAVE HUMANS COME IN THIS REGARD! YET, TO THIS DAY, THEY STILL DO NOT KNOW EXACTLY WHAT THE SHAPE OF THE EARTH IS. THE LORD JESUS ALREADY TOLD THE PHARISEES THAT THEY WERE HYPOCRITES FOR BEING ABLE TO DISCERN THE FACE OF THE SKY AND THE EARTH, BUT NOT THE TIME IN WHICH THEY LIVE. HOWEVER, THIS EXAMINATION OF THE EARTH'S APPEARANCE HAS NOT PROVIDED HUMANITY WITH CERTAINTY ABOUT ITS TRUE NATURE OR FORM. OFFICIALLY, IT IS CLAIMED THAT THE EARTH IS A SLIGHTLY FLATTENED SPHERE AT THE POLES, THUS PERFECTLY ROUND. AND ON THIS UNCHALLENGED ASSUMPTION, ALL MEASURING DEVICES BUILT FOR THE EARTH ARE BASED. YET, THERE ARE UNDISPUTED CLAIMS STATING THAT THE CURVATURE OF THE EARTH HAS NEVER BEEN SERIOUSLY DETERMINED BY GLOBE PROPONENTS. THEY ONLY ASSUME AND TAKE IT FOR GRANTED. IT MUST BE TRUE. BUT IT SIMPLY ISN'T. AND THERE IS GREAT UNREST, AS EVIDENCED BY THE FACT THAT IN THE MAJOR NOISE AND IMAGE CENTERS OF OUR TIME, THE ILLUSTRATED MAGAZINES, PHOTOGRAPHS OF ROCKETS SHOT INTO GREAT HEIGHTS KEEP APPEARING. THESE PHOTOGRAPHS ALWAYS SHOW A MORE OR LESS CURVED, ROUNDED SECTION OF THE EARTH AND CARRY THE CAPTION: ANOTHER PROOF THAT THE EARTH IS A SPHERE. WHY MUST THERE ALWAYS BE SUCH FERVENT PROOF OF SOMETHING THAT IS SUPPOSEDLY ALREADY ESTABLISHED AND TAUGHT IN ALL SCHOOLS? IT MUST BE DIRE FOR A MATTER THAT NEEDS TO BE SUPPORTED BY SUCH CLUMSY MANEUVERS, AS THESE ROCKET PHOTO MONTAGES FROM THE STRATOSPHERE DEPICT. FOR IT TAKES LITTLE INTELLIGENCE TO REALIZE THAT THEY CANNOT BE ACCURATE. TO TRULY PERCEIVE THE CURVATURE OF SUCH A LARGE GLOBE, ONE WOULD HAVE TO ASCEND MUCH, MUCH HIGHER THAN ANY ROCKET HAS MANAGED SO FAR. AND THEN THE OPTICAL HORIZON, WHICH LIMITS ALL LONG-DISTANCE VISION, WOULD HAVE TO BE ABSENT. THE ROCKET PHOTOS MERELY REPRESENT IMAGES OF AN ENLARGED OPTICAL HORIZON THAT IS TILTED SIDEWAYS AND THUS APPEARS LIKE A SEGMENT OF A SPHERICAL SURFACE, ESPECIALLY WHEN THE INDIVIDUAL IMAGES ARE SUGGESTIVELY ASSEMBLED AGAINST A DARK BACKGROUND AND THIS PHOTO MONTAGE IS SKILLFULLY RETOUCHED! ONE CANNOT PERCEIVE THE CURVATURE OF A SPHERE AT ALL.

ONE CAN RECOGNIZE THEIR SMALL CIRCLE, BUT RATHER THEIR LARGE CIRCLE, AND FOR THAT, A HEIGHT OR DISTANCE IS NEEDED THAT STANDS IN A CERTAIN RATIO TO THE DIAMETER AND CIRCUMFERENCE OF THE SPHERE. WHAT GREAT INTEREST MUST THE PRINCE OF THIS WORLD, THE PRINCE WHO REIGNS IN THE AIR, HAVE IN CONVINCING PEOPLE OF THE SUPPOSED SPHERICAL SHAPE OF THE EARTH AND OBSCURING THE TRUTH? THE FULLY ROUNDED, CONVEX CURVATURE OF THE EARTH HAS NOT EVEN BEEN SCIENTIFICALLY PROVEN TO THIS DAY, LET ALONE BIBLICALLY. YET EVERYONE ACTS AS IF IT WERE SO. THERE ARE ACTUALLY ONLY TWO OTHER POSSIBILITIES FOR THE SHAPE OF THE EARTH: HOLLOW AND FLAT. BOTH ARE CLAIMED TODAY AND ATTEMPTED TO BE SUPPORTED WITH MORE OR LESS CONVINCING EVIDENCE. HERE ON EARTH, WE CAN MORE READILY ACCEPT EVIDENCE, AS OUR FIVE SENSES CAN BE APPLIED SOMEWHAT DIRECTLY. ONE TRAVELS AROUND THE EARTH, ONE FLIES AROUND IT, EVIDENCE THAT IT MUST AT LEAST BE SOMEWHAT ROUND. BUT THE REPRESENTATIVES OF THE FLAT EARTH SAY THAT THESE ARE NOT PROOFS. THE EARTH COULD WELL BE A FLAT DISC, FRAMED BY HUGE ICE WALLS, FLOATING ON WATER. IN THE CENTER IS THE NORTH POLE. WHAT TRAVELS OR FLIES AROUND THE EARTH ONLY MOVES IN A CIRCLE ABOVE THIS DISC. HOWEVER, THEN THE DISTANCES TO THE OUTER EDGE OF THE DISC, SUCH AS BETWEEN SOUTH AFRICA AND SOUTH AMERICA, WOULD HAVE TO BE MUCH GREATER THAN THEY ARE PRACTICALLY ESTABLISHED AND MEASURED. ACCORDING TO THIS VIEW, THERE SHOULD ALSO BE NO SOUTH POLE. YET IT EXISTS, AND IT HAS BEEN FLOWN OVER SEVERAL TIMES. THE LINES OF LATITUDE SOUTH OF THE EQUATOR ARE NOT LONGER THAN THOSE NORTH OF THE EQUATOR. THIS HAS ALSO BEEN PROVEN BY EXPERIENCE. IF AIRPLANES ALWAYS FLY THE NORTHERN ROUTE AROUND THE WORLD, IT IS BECAUSE THEY PASS OVER MORE LAND AND POPULATED AREAS, WHICH IS VERY IMPORTANT IN CASE OF AN EMERGENCY LANDING. SOUTH OF THE EQUATOR, ONLY A LITTLE LAND AND A LOT OF WATER DESERT ARE FLOWN OVER. WE ALSO SEE DIFFERENT STARS AND CONSTELLATIONS SOUTH OF THE EQUATOR, IN A GRADUAL TRANSITION, WHICH NECESSARILY LEADS TO THE CONCLUSION OF A SPHERICAL SHAPE OF THE EARTH OR SKY. BUT SINCE THE EARTH STANDS FIRM, DOES NOT WAVER ACCORDING TO THE WORD OF GOD, AND THEREFORE DOES NOT ROTATE, IT CANNOT BE A CONVEX STRUCTURE, I.E., A FULLY ROUNDED SPHERE ON WHICH WE LIVE. FOR A PERSON LIVING ON A SPHERE, THE SPHERE MUST ROTATE, AS IT IS HARD TO ASSUME THAT THE ENTIRE SUPPOSEDLY INFINITE UNIVERSE REVOLVES AROUND THE SPHERE. WE MUST ALSO BE CLEAR THAT MOVEMENT IS ALWAYS A RELATIVE MATTER. ONE CAN ONLY EVER...

OBSERVING MOVEMENT OR STILLNESS IN RELATION TO ANOTHER. SOME BELIEVE THAT EVEN IN THE HOLLOW WORLD, THE EARTH'S SHELL ROTATES SLOWLY, WHILE OTHERS DISPUTE THIS. A RAPIDLY SPINNING TOP REMAINS STABLE AS LONG AS ITS MOTION LASTS. HOWEVER, AS MENTIONED, MOVEMENT AND STILLNESS ARE RELATIVE CONCEPTS. IN ANY CASE, THE EARTH HAS A DIFFERENT RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD THAN THE HEAVENS, AND THEREFORE ALSO A DIFFERENT 'STILLNESS' OR 'MOVEMENT' AROUND THE CENTER. THE RELATIVITY OF THE TERMS STILLNESS AND MOVEMENT CAN ALSO BE SEEN IN THE NOW RECOGNIZED FACT THAT IN A PIECE OF MATTER THAT APPEARS COMPLETELY STILL AND LIFELESS, SUCH AS A STONE, COUNTLESS ATOMIC PARTICLES AND NUCLEI ARE ACTUALLY IN RAPID ROTATION. HERE, OPPOSITES TOUCH: THE GREATEST STILLNESS AND THE HIGHEST MOVEMENT MERGE INTO ONE ANOTHER. WE ASSUME THAT THE EARTH IS AT REST, GROUNDED, BECAUSE THIS IS STATED MULTIPLE TIMES IN GOD'S WORD FOR US. HOWEVER, IT IS NOT STATED IN THE SAME WORD OF GOD THAT THE HEAVENS ARE AT REST, UNSHAKEN, EVEN THOUGH THERE ARE MENTIONS OF PILLARS OF HEAVEN. THE CREATOR CONTINUALLY BRINGS FORTH THE HOST OF THE HEIGHTS (JOB 38:31-33), THE STARS HAVE THEIR ORBITS, AND THE SUN MOVES FROM ONE END OF THE HEAVENS TO THE OTHER. THUS, ACCORDING TO THE BIBLE AND THEREFORE ACCORDING TO GOD'S WORD FOR US, IT IS CLEARLY DECIDED WHAT REVOLVES (AROUND GOD'S THRONE AS THE CENTER): NOT THE EARTH, BUT THE HEAVENS AND THEIR HOST, NAMELY THE CELESTIAL BODIES. THE LACK OF MOVEMENT OF THE EARTH ALSO CORRESPONDS TO THE SOLIDIFICATION INTO VISIBLE MATTER, INTO WHICH THE EARTH HAS FALLEN IN CONTRAST TO THE HEAVENS. HOWEVER, WITH THIS OBSERVATION, A LIFE ON A GLOBE OF EARTH ALREADY FADES AWAY. FURTHERMORE, WE HAVE ALREADY RECOGNIZED THE PRINCIPLE THAT GOING UP ALWAYS MEANS GOING INWARD, WHILE GOING DOWN ALWAYS MEANS GOING OUTWARD. THIS PRINCIPLE REAPPEARS HERE. IF WE WERE ON A GLOBE, WE WOULD ALWAYS SEE OUTWARD WHEN LOOKING UP AND INWARD WHEN LOOKING DOWN. WE WOULD ALSO BE AT THE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE IF THE UNIVERSE WERE TO REVOLVE AROUND OUR STATIONARY GLOBE OF EARTH. HOWEVER, THIS PLACE AT THE CENTER OF ALL THINGS BELONGS ONLY TO GOD. THE COMPARISON WITH ATOMS ALSO SHOWS US THAT THE ATOMIC NUCLEUS ROTATES. 'A HYDROGEN ATOM, FOR EXAMPLE, IS PRACTICALLY A DUPLICATE OF THE HOLLOW WORLD. ITS NUCLEUS ROTATES AND THUS GOVERNS THE ENTIRE GAS ATOM. THE CONCLUSION THAT THE ORIGINAL, NAMELY THE CELESTIAL SPHERE AS THE CORE OF THE HOLLOW WORLD, ALSO ROTATES IS NOT ONLY PERMISSIBLE BUT NECESSARY.' (C. F. MÜLLER.)

FURTHERMORE, THERE IS AN INVESTIGATION INTO THE CURVATURE SENSE OF THE EARTH'S SURFACE THAT HAS STRONG EVIDENTIAL POWER. ANYONE WHO DOES NOT WANT TO ACKNOWLEDGE THIS INVESTIGATION MUST BE ABLE TO REFUTE IT. PROFESSOR U. G. MORROW FROM CHICAGO, A GEODESIST AND ASTRONOMER, ATTEMPTED TO DETERMINE THE CURVATURE SENSE OF THE EARTH'S SURFACE IN 1897 ALONG THE COAST OF FLORIDA USING ALL MEANS OF SCIENTIFIC FIELD MEASUREMENT, PROMPTED BY THE CLAIM OF A BIBLE-BELIEVING DOCTOR NAMED DR. TWEED, WHO HAD ALREADY STATED IN 1871 IN CHICAGO THAT THE EARTH IS HOLLOW AND WE LIVE INSIDE IT, NOT ON IT. PROFESSOR MORROW CONSTRUCTED AND SET UP MEASURING DEVICES TO ESTABLISH A STRAIGHT LINE OVER A DISTANCE OF 4.5 MILES. THESE MEASURING DEVICES CONSISTED OF WOODEN FRAMEWORKS, WHOSE PRECISELY CRAFTED CROSSARMS ALIGNED A HAIRLINE ON A BRASS PLATE. DURING THE MEASUREMENTS, ALL POSSIBLE DISTURBANCES WERE TAKEN INTO ACCOUNT, ESPECIALLY TIDES AND THE KNOWN CURVATURE OF LARGE BODIES OF WATER. THE SURPRISING RESULT WAS THAT THE STRAIGHT LINE WAS NOT A TANGENT TO A GLOBE, BUT A SECANT IN A HOLLOW SPHERE. THIS MEANS THAT THE ENDS OF THE LINE CLEARLY APPROACHED THE EARTH OR THE WATER. ITS STRAIGHT CONTINUATION ON BOTH SIDES EXTENDED INTO THE EARTH. IF THE LINE HAD BEEN A TANGENT THAT TOUCHES A CIRCLE OR SPHERE AT ONLY ONE POINT, THEN BOTH ENDS AND THEIR STRAIGHT EXTENSIONS WOULD HAVE HAD TO MOVE AWAY FROM THE EARTH. THIS MECHANICAL CURVATURE MEASUREMENT OF THE EARTH WAS CONDUCTED WITH SCIENTIFIC RIGOR. IT ONLY NEEDS TO BE REPEATED AT ANOTHER LOCATION ON THE EARTH'S SURFACE, AS OBJECTIONS SUGGEST THAT A HYDRAULIC SINKING CURVE OF THE SEA LEVEL COULD ARISE IN FLORIDA DUE TO A BELT AND TIDAL FLOOD. THE REPETITION OF THIS SIGNIFICANT MEASUREMENT HAS YET TO OCCUR. THE COSTS WOULD BE VERY LOW COMPARED TO THE MILLIONS OTHERWISE SPENT ON SO-CALLED SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH. AS LONG AS THIS CLEAR CURVATURE MEASUREMENT BY PROFESSOR MORROW IS NOT DISPROVEN BY NEW MEASUREMENTS, SCIENCE CONTINUES TO OPERATE UNDER THE UNPROVEN ASSUMPTION THAT THE EARTH IS A PERFECT SPHERE ON WHICH WE LIVE. IN DOING SO, SCIENCE HAS ABANDONED ITS OWN PRINCIPLES, AS IT ALWAYS DEMANDS EVIDENCE. HERE ON EARTH IS THE TRUE DOMAIN OF RATIONAL PROOF. YET, IT IS PRECISELY HERE THAT EVIDENCE IS DISREGARDED, AND FOR CENTURIES, PEOPLE HAVE BEEN CONTENT WITH UNPROVEN NOTIONS AND CONCLUSIONS. THIS FACT ALSO BELONGS TO THE WONDERS AND SIGNS OF THE LIE (2 THESS. 2:9).

THOSE WHO WISH TO READ IN DETAIL ABOUT THE MEASUREMENT EXPERIMENT CONDUCTED BY PROF. MORROW, WHICH LASTED FROM JANUARY 12 TO MAY 8, 1897, ARE REFERRED TO THE GERMAN TRANSLATION (44 PAGES) OF HIS BOOK "THE CELLULAR COSMOGONY," AVAILABLE FROM THE TRANSLATOR BAURAT DIPL.-ING. R. ENGLER IN MÜLHEIM/RUHR. THIS MEASUREMENT IS PRESENTED WITH IMAGES, DRAWINGS, CALCULATIONS, AND EXPLANATIONS THAT EVEN A MATHEMATICAL LAYPERSON CAN FOLLOW. BASED ON THE BIBLICAL VERSE THAT THE HEAVEN IS GOD'S THRONE AND THE EARTH IS HIS FOOTSTOOL, WE HAVE CONCLUDED A SPECIFIC SIZE RATIO BETWEEN HEAVEN AND EARTH THAT CORRESPONDS TO THE RATIO BETWEEN THRONE AND FOOTSTOOL. THIS SIZE RATIO IS BASED ON THE EARTH AS A FIXED, MEASURABLE ENTITY. HOWEVER, IT DOES NOT YET SAY ANYTHING ABOUT THE SHAPE OR CURVATURE OF THE EARTH. ULTIMATELY, THE SHAPE OF THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE DEPENDS ON THIS CURVATURE. THE DISC SHAPE CAN BE RULED OUT, AS IT CAN BE EASILY DISPROVEN WITH SIMPLE MEANS, JUST AS THE SPHERICAL SHAPE CAN BE PROVEN. THUS, FROM A HUMAN PERSPECTIVE, THE ONLY QUESTION REMAINS: CONVEX OR CONCAVE? OR: DO WE LIVE ON A SPHERE OR INSIDE A SPHERE? JUST AS THERE IS ONLY LIGHT OR DARKNESS, HIGH OR LOW, GOOD OR EVIL, THERE ARE ONLY THESE TWO POSSIBILITIES FOR THE EARTH IN THE VISIBILITY OF THREE DIMENSIONS: CONVEX OR CONCAVE. THE BIBLE DOES NOT DIRECTLY ADVOCATE FOR EITHER POSSIBILITY. HOWEVER, WE CAN INDIRECTLY CONCLUDE AND RECOGNIZE FROM ALL RELEVANT PASSAGES OF GOD'S WORD AND THE OVERALL CONTEXT OF THE SCRIPTURE THAT GOD'S THRONE IS ALSO SPATIALLY AT THE CENTER OF ALL THINGS AND THAT THE EARTH SURROUNDS IT CONCENTRICALLY AT A GREAT DISTANCE. FOR NOW, WE CAN CALMLY WAIT UNTIL ONE DAY THE MEASUREMENTS BY HONEST SCHOLARS REGARDING THE CURVATURE OF THE EARTH ARE REPEATED AND CONFIRM THE UNIVERSE DESCRIBED IN THE BIBLE. BUT IT IS POSSIBLE THAT THE TRUE SHAPE OF HEAVEN AND EARTH WILL BE REVEALED EVEN EARLIER DURING THE COSMIC UPHEAVALS OF THE SIXTH SEAL OF REVELATION. WHEN THE (LOWEST) HEAVEN IS ROLLED UP LIKE A SCROLL AND THE TERRIFIED PEOPLE ON EARTH SEE GOD'S THRONE AT THE CENTER OF ALL THINGS ABOVE THEM, THEY WILL SIMULTANEOUSLY ALSO SEE THE SHAPE OF THE EARTH THAT ENCOMPASSES THE HEAVENS. THIS WILL BE THEIR TERROR, AS THEY WILL REALIZE: WE ARE ALL INSIDE, WE CANNOT ESCAPE. FOR THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE IS IN CHRIST AND THUS IN GOD, AND GOD IS WITHIN ALL THINGS TO THE HIGHEST DEGREE. AS THE PSALMIST SAYS, IF I MAKE MY BED IN HELL, BEHOLD.

SO YOU ARE HERE TOO! (PSALM 139:8) THE BOOK TITLE THAT IS CURRENTLY BEING PURCHASED A LOT: 'AND THE BIBLE IS INDEED RIGHT' WILL ONE DAY ALSO PROVE TO BE RELEVANT FOR THE ASTROLOGICAL REFERENCES IN THE BIBLE.

DARKNESS IN MATTER. ASIDE FROM THE SHAPE OF THE EARTH, THE QUESTION ARISES: WHERE DOES THIS EARTH MADE OF STONES AND CLAY WITH ITS VAST OCEANS ACTUALLY COME FROM? AT THE BOTTOM OF THE OCEANS, THERE IS ALSO EARTH AND STONE, MOUNTAINS AND VALLEYS. WHAT A MASSIVE SHELL OF STONE, SAND, AND CLAY WE REFER TO AS EARTH MUST BE! WE CAN HARDLY EXPLORE ITS THICKNESS OR DEPTH; WE ONLY KNOW FROM SCRIPTURE THAT BENEATH THE EARTH'S CRUST, THERE MUST BE A HOLLOW SPACE, A DARK WORLD, WHICH SCRIPTURE REFERS TO AS 'UNDER THE EARTH.' THE EARTH WAS FORMLESS AND EMPTY, ACCORDING TO THE ACCOUNT IN THE SECOND VERSE OF THE BIBLE. BUT GOD DID NOT ORIGINALLY CREATE THE EARTH TO BE FORMLESS; RATHER, GOD FORMED AND MADE THE EARTH TO BE INHABITED (ISAIAH 45:18). THEREFORE, THE CHURCH FATHERS HAVE RIGHTLY ALWAYS ASSUMED THAT AN EVENT MUST HAVE OCCURRED BETWEEN THE FIRST AND SECOND VERSES OF THE BIBLE THAT LED TO THE DEVASTATION OF THE EARTH. THEY BELIEVED THIS EVENT WAS SATAN'S REBELLION AGAINST GOD. THIS TREMENDOUS BATTLE IN THE COSMOS DESTROYED THE FIRST CREATION, MAKING THE EARTH FORMLESS AND EMPTY, THUS NECESSITATING A NEW CREATION. SO, IN THE EARTH AS IT IS TODAY, NAMELY CLAY AND STONES AND MUCH WATER, WE SEE WHAT REMAINS AFTER SATAN'S REBELLION AND FALL FROM THE EARLIER EARTH AND ITS HEAVENS, OF WHICH THE SEAS ARE THE REMNANTS. HOW DID THE CLAY AND SAND OR THEIR MIXTURE TO FORM THE EARTH AND THE ROCKS OF THE MOUNTAINS LOOK BEFORE THE EARTH BECAME FORMLESS AND EMPTY? IS THE OPACITY AND DENSITY OF THINGS ON EARTH NOT A CONSEQUENCE OF THE FALL, OF THE INTRUSION OF DARKNESS? WHERE THERE IS LIGHT, THERE IS CLARITY; ONE CAN SEE THROUGH. DARKNESS IS THE ABSENCE OF LIGHT AND CLARITY, MAKING IT IMPOSSIBLE TO SEE THROUGH. A COMMON STONE DIFFERS FROM A PRECIOUS STONE IN THAT ITS CRYSTALLINE STRUCTURE IS DISORDERED, PREVENTING IT FROM ALLOWING LIGHT TO PASS THROUGH AND RADIATE. IN CONTRAST, THE CRYSTALS OF A PRECIOUS STONE ARE STILL ARRANGED IN A UNIFORM ORDER, MAKING IT TRANSLUCENT TO LIGHT AND ABLE TO RADIATE IT. THUS, ONE STONE HAS DISORDER, MEANING...

DARKNESS HAS INTRUDED, DRIVING AWAY THE LIGHT, WHILE GOD'S ORDER OR LIGHT STILL PREVAILS ELSEWHERE. BEFORE THE EARTH BECAME DESOLATE AND EMPTY, AND DARKNESS LAY OVER THE DEEP, THE EARTH MUST HAVE BEEN CLEAR AND RADIANT. IMAGINE A MOUNTAIN RANGE OF GEMSTONES THAT MUST SHINE AND SPARKLE! WHEN DARKNESS IS FINALLY DISPELLED AND NIGHT NO LONGER COMES, THE EARTH WILL ALSO BE TRANSFORMED, TRANSPARENT, RADIANT, OR GLORIFIED. IN GREEK, THE WORD FOR CLEAR IS 'TELAUGOS,' COMPOSED OF 'TELOS' MEANING END AND 'AUGAZO' MEANING TO SHINE. THE CLARITY AT THE END WILL CONSIST OF EVERYTHING SHINING, GLORIFIED, AND FILLED WITH LIGHT, INCLUDING THE RESURRECTED BODIES OF HUMANS. EVEN THE SO-CALLED PRECIOUS METALS, LIKE GOLD, SILVER, AND PLATINUM, ARE TODAY SO PERMEATED WITH DARKNESS THAT THEY HAVE BECOME OPAQUE LIKE THE SO-CALLED BASE METALS. IN SCRIPTURE, WE READ ABOUT 'PURE GOLD' LIKE GLASS (REVELATION 21:18), MEANING THAT THINGS IN HEAVEN ARE GLORIFIED, TRANSPARENT, AND FILLED WITH LIGHT, IN CONTRAST TO TODAY'S EARTH, WHERE THINGS ARE OPAQUE, FILLED WITH DARKNESS, AND THUS FROZEN. IT LITERALLY SAYS IN REVELATION 21:18 AND 21 'PURE GOLD' AND 'PURE GLASS,' MEANING CLEANSED FROM DARKNESS, REFINED, AND THUS GLORIFIED OR TRANSPARENT. THIS DARKNESS WILL BE REFINED THROUGH OUR INNER DEVELOPMENT OR EXPELLED THROUGH TRANSFORMATION UNTIL WE CAN RISE AS GLORIFIED BEINGS, AND ALL CREATION WILL BE FREED FROM THE BONDAGE OF DECAY TO FREEDOM. CREATION WILL ONE DAY BE LIBERATED FROM THE BONDAGE OF CORRUPTION TO THE FREEDOM OF THE GLORY OF THE CHILDREN OF GOD. 'FOR WE KNOW THAT THE WHOLE CREATION GROANS AND SUFFERS TOGETHER UNTIL NOW. NOT ONLY THAT, BUT WE OURSELVES, WHO HAVE THE FIRSTFRUITS OF THE SPIRIT, ALSO GROAN INWARDLY, WAITING FOR THE ADOPTION: THE REDEMPTION OF OUR BODIES' (ROMANS 8:21-23). THE DARKNESS THAT ENTERED AND PERMEATED CREATION, THUS BECOMING VISIBLE, IS LINKED TO DECAY, CORRUPTION, OR TIME. GLORIFICATION OR THE BREAKTHROUGH OF LIGHT SIMULTANEOUSLY MEANS: IMMORTALITY, OVERCOMING TIME. THE DECAY RESULTING FROM THE ENCROACHING DARKNESS WILL BE REFINED THROUGH JUDGMENTS, ESPECIALLY THROUGH THE JUDGMENT OF WATER (THE FLOOD) AND THEN THROUGH THE JUDGMENT OF FIRE (THE DAY OF THE LORD), THUS THROUGH CHEMICAL, OR SPIRITUAL TRANSFORMATION PROCESSES. EVERY JUDGMENT PROCESS IS A TRANSFORMATION, A PURIFICATION, AND A REFINEMENT.

THE PROCESS OF EMERGENCE, NOT ONLY AMONG HUMANS BUT ALSO IN THE REST OF CREATION. SCRIPTURE STATES THAT GOD GATHERED THE WATERS BENEATH THE HEAVENS INTO ONE PLACE, MAKING THE DRY LAND VISIBLE. THIS DRY LAND GOD CALLED EARTH. IN HEBREW, EARTH IS REFERRED TO AS ERES. HOWEVER, THE EARTH FROM WHICH MAN WAS LATER FORMED FROM DUST IS CALLED ADAMAH, MEANING FERTILE GROUND, LOOSE SOIL, COVERING, SKIN, SURFACE, OR COATING. THE ADAMAH IS THUS EVIDENTLY THE UPPER LAYER OF THE ERES, FORMED THROUGH OXIDATION AND WEATHERING. THE CHARACTERISTIC PROPERTY OF THE EARTH CAN ONLY BE RECOGNIZED IN COMPARISON WITH WATER OR THE SEA, NAMELY AS THE DRY LAND. THIS MEANS THAT EARTH IS SOMETHING FROM WHICH WATER HAS BEEN WITHDRAWN. THE HEBREW WORD FOR THIS ALSO CARRIES THE MEANING OF SHARPNESS, DRYNESS, AND DESERT, AS WATER IS A PHENOMENON THAT TENDS TO MOVE DOWNWARD BUT CAN ALSO RISE UNDER CERTAIN CIRCUMSTANCES; IT HAS A MEDIATING, SOOTHING, AND REFRESHING CHARACTER, SERVING AS A CARRIER OF LIFE FORCES, A HEAVENLY MESSENGER WITH PROPERTIES THAT COME FROM ABOVE. THE ROARING WATERS OF THE PRIMORDIAL SEA WERE THE RESULT OF THE COLLAPSE OF THE FIRST HEAVENS. WHERE WATER IS ABSENT, THERE IS A LACK OF WATER OR DRYNESS, WHICH BECOMES FERTILE AND LIFE-GIVING ONLY THROUGH MOISTURE FROM WATER, WHETHER IT BE LIGHT WATERS OR 'LOWER WATERS.' SINCE GOD CREATED THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH IN THE BEGINNING, HE HAS THUS MADE THE TWO FUNDAMENTALLY DIFFERENT POLES OF CREATION. THE HEAVENS ARE SPIRITUAL, GASEOUS STAGES OF GOD'S REVELATION, WHILE THE EARTH IS THE SOLID, DRY, DENSE, AND VISIBLE STAGE OF REVELATION, A CRYSTALLIZATION OF POWER AT A PURPOSEFUL DISTANCE WITHIN THE DIVINE REVELATION OF SPACE FROM THE DIVINE CENTER. EARTH AND HEAVEN ARE SO FUNDAMENTALLY SEPARATE THAT THEY CANNOT COME TOGETHER WITHOUT A MEDIATOR THAT UNITES BOTH PROPERTIES. THIS MEDIATOR IS WATER IN ALL ITS FORMS AS LOWER WATERS, UPPER WATERS (LIGHT!), AND AS GAS AND AIR. THE DRY LAND BECOMES FERTILE THROUGH MOISTURE, RECEPTIVE AND GIVING, MEANING IT RESPONDS TO GOD'S HEAVENLY CALL AND DEVELOPS OVER MILLENNIA TOWARDS GLORIFICATION. ACCORDING TO SCRIPTURE, THE ULTIMATE GOAL FOR THE EARTH IS THAT IT MAY ONE DAY EMBRACE AND PRESERVE THE HEAVENLY AND DIVINE. THE HEAVENLY JERUSALEM, THE CITY OF GOD, WILL ONE DAY DESCEND FROM HEAVEN TO HUMANITY. 'BEHOLD, THE DWELLING OF GOD AMONG MEN!' BUT THEN THERE WILL BE NO MORE SEA, NOR WILL THERE BE LIGHTS OR LIGHT-BEARERS, THE MEDIATING UPPER AND...

THE LOWER WATERS ARE NO LONGER NECESSARY; A DIRECT, UNMEDIATED CONNECTION BETWEEN HEAVEN AND EARTH WILL BE POSSIBLE THROUGH THE ACHIEVED TRANSFIGURATION OF THE EARTH. THE DRY LAND WILL THEN BE CAPABLE OF ABSORBING THE SPIRITUAL OR GASEOUS AND THE LIGHT IN SUCH A WAY THAT IT BECOMES SPIRITUALIZED. THE GREAT FALL, WHICH BROUGHT KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL AND THE DIVINE REVELATION OF JUDGMENT THROUGH THE SEPARATION FROM GOD, WILL THEN BE OVERCOME; DARKNESS WILL NO LONGER EXIST BECAUSE IT HAS TURNED INTO LIGHT, FOR WHAT IS REVEALED IS LIGHT, BUT THE KNOWLEDGE OF DARKNESS REMAINS AS A GREAT CLARITY THAT PERMEATES AND ILLUMINATES EVERYTHING. THE DRY LAND THIRSTS; THIS IS PART OF ITS NATURE. IT WAS SEPARATED FROM THE WATER SO THAT IT COULD EXIST AS DRY, MEANING IT BECOMES CONSCIOUS, AND THIS HAPPENS AT EVERY LEVEL OF EXISTENCE OR BEING ONLY THROUGH SUFFERING, THROUGH THE SENSATION OF PAIN, FOR THESE MAKE US KNOWLEDGEABLE, ORIENTING US ABOUT WHAT WE LACK, ABOUT OUR DISTANCE FROM DIVINE FULLNESS AND PERFECTION. SELF-AWARENESS IS THE BEGINNING; IT LEADS TO THE CAPACITY FOR KNOWLEDGE IN GENERAL AND THUS TO THE POSSIBILITY OF RECEIVING, PROCESSING, AND GROWING LIFE AND SPIRIT, DEVELOPING ONESELF. THE DRY LAND OR EARTH IS THEREFORE AN EXPRESSION OF GREAT DISTANCE FROM GOD, WHICH IS REPEATEDLY CALLED UPON BY GOD THROUGH HIS WORD, WHICH BECOMES LOWER AND UPPER WATERS AND AWAKENS LIFE, THAT IS, FORCES OF HOPE IN THE STATE OF DIVINE DISTANCE THAT HAVE A REVITALIZING EFFECT. 'AND IT WILL COME TO PASS ON THAT DAY, I WILL RESPOND, SAYS THE LORD: I WILL RESPOND TO THE HEAVENS, AND THEY WILL RESPOND TO THE EARTH, AND THE EARTH WILL RESPOND TO THE GRAIN AND THE NEW WINE AND THE OIL' (HOSEA 2:23). THIS RESPONDING IS CALLED THE BETROTHAL OF GOD WITH HIS PEOPLE ISRAEL, WHICH WILL FOLLOW WITH RECOGNITION! HOWEVER, A LONG TIME OF CRYING, THIRSTING, AND BEING UNHEARD HAD TO PRECEDE THE RESPONDING AND RECOGNITION! FOR THE BETROTHAL OF GOD WITH HIS PEOPLE ON EARTH TAKES PLACE IN JUSTICE AND JUDGMENT AND ONLY THEN IN GOODNESS AND MERCY (HOSEA 2:19). THUS, WE CAN CHARACTERIZE THE EARTH AS A GODFORSAKEN MANIFESTATION OR STAGNATION OF LIFE, WHICH WE CALL DARKNESS AND DEATH. IT WAITS FOR RAIN OR FOR GOD'S VISITATIONS, WHICH WILL FIRST PENETRATE IT, THEN ILLUMINATE IT, AND FINALLY COMPLETELY TRANSFIGURE IT, SO THAT IT WILL BECOME THE DWELLING PLACE OF GOD HIMSELF. AS LONG AS THE EARTH STILL EXISTS AS THE DRY LAND, THE JUDGMENT UPON IT IS NOT YET COMPLETE; THEREFORE, THE DRY LAND IS ALSO CALLED SHARPNESS OR DROUGHT AND DESERT.

HEAVEN IS THE PROXIMITY OF GOD, WHILE EARTH IS HIS DISTANCE, WHICH IS CONTINUALLY REFRESHED, COMFORTED, AND GRADUALLY TRANSFORMED THROUGH GOD'S JUDGMENTS. CLAY AND FLESH CORRESPOND TO EACH OTHER; FLESH IS ANIMATED CLAY. STONES AND BONES ALSO RESEMBLE ONE ANOTHER. THE MOUNTAINS RUN THROUGH THE SOFT CLAY OF THE EARTH LIKE A SKELETAL STRUCTURE. THESE CONNECTIONS, ALONG WITH THE PECULIAR OUTLINE OF THE VISIBLE LANDMASSES TODAY, HAVE LED MR. FRITZ GOHLKE FROM LÜDENSCHEID TO A UNIQUE THOUGHT, NAMELY, THAT THE EARTH BEARS THE IMAGE OF THE FALLEN LUCIFER, WHO WAS ONCE A CHERUB. THE SHAPE OF THE LANDMASSES, WHICH IS NOT COINCIDENTAL, HAS PROMPTED MANY OBSERVERS TO REFLECT. FROM SIBERIA TO NEW ZEALAND, GOHLKE RECOGNIZES THE FORM OF A 'STRETCHED-OUT FIGURE.' ONE CAN DISCERN SKELETAL PARTS OF A GIANT BODY BURNED BY FIRE, WITH ALMOST ONLY THE BONES REMAINING. THESE BONES ARE THE GREAT MOUNTAIN RANGES OF THE EARTH, WHILE THE SOFT TISSUES REPRESENT THE EARTHY REGIONS. THE LARGE HEAD IS SIBERIA, THE CHIN IS THE TIP OF SIBERIA FACING ALASKA. THE FACE OR PROFILE TURNS TOWARDS THE ARCTIC OCEAN, THE LENA RIVER MARKS THE MOUTH, THE BACK OF THE HEAD IS TIBET, BORDERED BY THE HIMALAYAS, WHILE THE MALAY PENINSULA AND THE LARGE ISLANDS OF INDONESIA REPRESENT PARTS OF THE SHATTERED SPINE, EXTENDING DOWN TO AUSTRALIA, WHICH IS THE GREAT STONE THAT, ACCORDING TO DANIEL 2, ONCE SMASHED LUCIFER TO THE GROUND. ITALY IS ONE LEG WITH A FOOT, NEW ZEALAND THE OTHER. THE LEFT CHERUB WING HAS BECOME AMERICA, WHILE THE RIGHT IS STILL RECOGNIZABLE IN AFRICA. THIS ALSO EXPLAINS WHY THESE CONTINENTS ARE BROAD AT THE TOP AND TAPER AT THE BOTTOM, AS WELL AS WHY GOLD AND PRECIOUS STONES ARE FOUND THERE! THUS, THE DRY LAND REPRESENTS THE FORMER GIANT BODY OF THE CHERUB KNOWN AS SATAN, WHICH HAS WEATHERED AND DECAYED OVER THE MILLENNIA, A PROCESS THAT THE SPIRIT OF SATAN, WHO NOW REIGNS IN THE AIR ABOVE, MUST OBSERVE. FROM THIS BODY OF SATAN, WHICH WAS SMASHED TO THE GROUND AND BECAME EARTH, HUMAN BODIES HAVE BEEN FORMED, WHICH IS WHY IT IS NOT SURPRISING THAT EVIL DWELLS WITHIN THIS FLESH. THIS IS A BOLD THOUGHT THAT EACH PERSON MAY CONTEMPLATE FOR THEMSELVES. IN ANY CASE, WE READ IN ISAIAH 14:11-15, AMONG OTHER THINGS: 'YOUR SPLENDOR HAS GONE DOWN TO HELL, ALONG WITH THE SOUND OF YOUR HARPS. WORMS WILL BE YOUR BED AND MAGGOTS YOUR BLANKET. HOW YOU HAVE FALLEN FROM HEAVEN, O SHINING MORNING STAR! HOW YOU HAVE BEEN CAST DOWN TO THE EARTH, YOU WHO WEAKENED THE NATIONS! FOR YOU SAID IN YOUR HEART: I WILL ASCEND TO HEAVEN; I WILL RAISE MY THRONE ABOVE THE STARS OF GOD; I WILL SIT ON...'

THE MOUNTAIN OF ASSEMBLY IN THE FARTHEST MIDNIGHT, I WILL RIDE OVER THE HIGH CLOUDS AND BE LIKE THE MOST HIGH. YES, YOU ARE GOING TO HELL, TO THE DEEPEST PIT." A PART OF CHAPTER 28 OF EZEKIEL UNDOUBTEDLY RELATES TO THE FALL OF THE CHERUB AND ANGELS. IN EZEKIEL 28:12-19 IT SAYS: "SON OF MAN, TAKE UP A LAMENT CONCERNING THE KING OF TYRE AND SAY TO HIM: THIS IS WHAT THE SOVEREIGN LORD SAYS: YOU WERE THE SEAL OF PERFECTION, FULL OF WISDOM AND PERFECT IN BEAUTY. YOU WERE IN EDEN, THE GARDEN OF GOD; EVERY PRECIOUS STONE ADORNED YOU: RUBY, TOPAZ, AND EMERALD, CHRYSOLITE, ONYX, AND JASPER, SAPPHIRE, AGATE, AND AMETHYST. THE WORKMANSHIP OF YOUR TIMBRELS AND PIPES WAS PREPARED FOR YOU ON THE DAY YOU WERE CREATED. YOU WERE ANOINTED AS A GUARDIAN CHERUB, FOR SO I ORDAINED YOU. YOU WERE ON THE HOLY MOUNT OF GOD; YOU WALKED AMONG THE FIERY STONES. YOU WERE BLAMELESS IN YOUR WAYS FROM THE DAY YOU WERE CREATED TILL WICKEDNESS WAS FOUND IN YOU. THROUGH YOUR WIDESPREAD TRADE YOU WERE FILLED WITH VIOLENCE AND YOU SINNED; SO I DROVE YOU IN DISGRACE FROM THE MOUNT OF GOD, AND I EXPELLED YOU, GUARDIAN CHERUB, FROM AMONG THE FIERY STONES. YOUR HEART BECAME PROUD ON ACCOUNT OF YOUR BEAUTY, AND YOU CORRUPTED YOUR WISDOM BECAUSE OF YOUR SPLENDOR. SO I THREW YOU TO THE EARTH; I MADE A SPECTACLE OF YOU BEFORE KINGS. BY YOUR MANY SINS AND DISHONEST TRADE YOU HAVE DESECRATED YOUR SANCTUARIES. SO I MADE A FIRE COME OUT FROM YOU, AND IT CONSUMED YOU, AND I REDUCED YOU TO ASHES ON THE GROUND IN THE SIGHT OF ALL WHO WERE WATCHING. ALL THE NATIONS WHO KNEW YOU ARE APPALLED AT YOU; YOU HAVE COME TO A HORRIBLE END AND WILL BE NO MORE." IT IS A BREATHTAKING THOUGHT: THE EARTH IS THE FALLEN BODY OF THE CHERUB OR ARCHANGEL REBELLING AGAINST GOD FROM THE FIRST CREATION. IS THAT WHY THE HEBREW WORD FOR SHARPNESS, DESERT, AND ODE IS 'CHEREB'? THIS THOUGHT MAY NOT DIRECTLY RELATE TO THE SHAPE OF THE EARTH, BUT SUCH A TITANIC BATTLE OF OLD IS EASIER TO IMAGINE IN THE EARTHLY REALM THAN IN THE COPERNICAN INFINITY. A SEAT OF POWER OVER "THE LITTLE DUST OF EARTH" IN THE INFINITE COSMOS OF STAR CLUSTERS WOULD NOT HAVE BEEN A SPECIAL DISTINCTION FOR LUCIFER. THE PROPORTIONS BETWEEN HEAVEN AND EARTH MUST BE OF A DIFFERENT NATURE TO MAKE "THE KINGDOMS OF THIS WORLD" SO SIGNIFICANT THAT THE DEVIL COULD SERIOUSLY USE THEM AS A MEANS OF TEMPTATION IN MATTHEW 4. AS WE GO THROUGH THE BIBLICAL PASSAGES THAT DEAL WITH THE EARTH, WE NOTICE THAT THERE IS NO HINT OF A ROTATING...

AND MOVING EARTH. THERE IS ALSO NO INDICATION ANYWHERE THAT THE EARTH MOVES AROUND THE SUN, OR THAT THE EARTH IS A STAR AMONG COUNTLESS OTHER STARS OR SPHERICAL WORLDS. THE EARTH ALWAYS PLAYS A VERY LARGE ROLE IN THE BIBLE AS A POLE TO THE SKY, WHOSE HOST OF STARS WILL ONE DAY FALL TO THE EARTH. IN SCRIPTURE, HEAVEN AND EARTH ARE ASSOCIATED WITH EACH OTHER LIKE MAN AND WOMAN; HEAVEN IS THE MASCULINE, GIVING PRINCIPLE, AND EARTH IS THE FEMININE, RECEIVING PRINCIPLE. 'THE HEAVENS WILL HEAR THE EARTH ...' (HOSEA 2:23). THE EARTH SURROUNDS THE HEAVENS AS THE WOMAN IS TO SURROUND THE MAN (JER. 31:22). GOD IS ALSO PREPARING A PEOPLE FOR HIMSELF ON THIS EARTH, WHOM HE CALLS THE WOMAN ISRAEL. THE EARTH RECEIVES FROM HEAVEN, OF WHICH RAIN IS A PICTURE, AND THEN GIVES BIRTH. WE RECOGNIZE THREE SERIES OF SCRIPTURES THAT EXPRESS THE FOLLOWING TRUTHS

SAY:

THE EARTH IS FOUNDED ON FOUNDATIONS; IT STANDS ON THEM AND WILL NOT WAVER FOREVER AND EVER. 2. THIS FIRMLY FOUNDED EARTH IS SOMETHING THAT CAN BE FILLED, THAT WILL BECOME FULL, AS THE SEA IS FULL. FROM THIS COMES THE COMPELLING CONCLUSION THAT THE EARTH IS LIKE A VESSEL THAT CAN BE FILLED OR BECOME FULL, WHICH IS THE CASE WITH THE HOLLOW EARTH. 3. THE FIRMLY FOUNDED EARTH WILL ONE DAY BE SHAKEN, WAVER, AND FALL, AND THEN NOT RISE AGAIN. AND FINALLY, IT WILL BE DISSOLVED IN FIRE.

THE INDIVIDUAL PASSAGES READ:

FOUNDED - NOT WAVERING! FOR JEHOVAH'S ARE THE PILLARS OF THE EARTH, AND ON THEM HE HAS SET THE WORLD... 1 SAM. 2:8C HE MAKES THE EARTH TREMBLE FROM ITS PLACE, AND ITS PILLARS SHAKE... JOB 9:6 WHERE WERE YOU WHEN I FOUNDED THE EARTH? JOB 38:4 INTO WHAT WERE ITS FOUNDATIONS SUNK, OR WHO LAID ITS CORNERSTONE? ... JOB 38:6 THE FOUNDATIONS OF THE WORLD WERE UNCOVERED AT YOUR REBUKE... PSALM 18:15 JEHOVAH IS THE EARTH AND ITS FULLNESS, THE WORLD AND THOSE WHO DWELL ON IT, FOR HE, HE HAS FOUNDED IT UPON THE SEAS AND ESTABLISHED IT UPON THE STREAMS... PSALM 24:1. 2 .

YOU HAVE RECOGNIZED ALL THE BOUNDARIES OF THE EARTH... THE EARTH IS FIRMLY ESTABLISHED; IT WILL NOT SHAKE... PSALM 24:17

PSALM 93:1C HE HAS FOUNDED THE EARTH ON ITS FOUNDATIONS; IT WILL NOT SHAKE FOREVER AND EVER... PSALM 104:5 YOUR FAITHFULNESS ENDURES FROM GENERATION TO GENERATION; YOU HAVE ESTABLISHED THE EARTH, AND IT STANDS... PSALM 119:90 JEHOVAH ESTABLISHED THE EARTH BY WISDOM... PROVERBS 3:19 WHEN HE ESTABLISHED THE FOUNDATIONS OF THE EARTH... PROVERBS 8:29B JEHOVAH SPEAKS, WHO STRETCHES OUT THE HEAVENS AND ESTABLISHES THE EARTH AND FORMS THE SPIRIT OF MAN WITHIN HIM... ZECHARIAH 12:1 HAVE YOU NOT GAINED INSIGHT INTO THE FOUNDATION OF THE EARTH... ISAIAH 40:21



THE EARTH IS THE FOOTSTOOL OF MY FEET... ISAIAH 66:1 THUS SAYS JEHOVAH: IF THE HEAVENS ABOVE CAN BE MEASURED AND THE FOUNDATIONS OF THE EARTH BELOW CAN BE SEARCHED OUT, THEN I WILL ALSO REJECT ALL THE DESCENDANTS OF ISRAEL... JEREMIAH 31:37

FULLNESS AND ABUNDANCE FOR THE EARTH WILL BE FILLED WITH THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE GLORY OF JEHOVAH, AS THE WATERS COVER THE SEA... HABAKKUK 2:4 AND THE STONE THAT STRUCK THE IMAGE BECAME A GREAT MOUNTAIN AND FILLED THE WHOLE EARTH... DANIEL 2:35 AND FILL THE EARTH... GENESIS 9:1 LET THE WHOLE EARTH BE FILLED WITH HIS GLORY. PSALM 72:19

SHAKE, FALL, BURN, AND PERISH! JEHOVAH REIGNS; THE NATIONS TREMBLE; HE SITS ENTHRONED BETWEEN THE CHERUBIM; THE EARTH SHAKES... PSALM 99:1 AND THE EARTH WILL TREMBLE FROM ITS PLACE... ISAIAH 13:13 THE FOUNDATIONS OF THE EARTH WILL TREMBLE. THE EARTH SPLITS APART, THE EARTH BURSTS, THE EARTH SWAYS BACK AND FORTH, THE EARTH STAGGERS LIKE A DRUNKARD AND SWAYS LIKE A PENDULUM.

HEAVY WEIGHS HER TRANSGRESSION UPON HER, AND SHE FALLS AND DOES NOT RISE AGAIN. THE EARTH WILL CRUMBLE LIKE A GARMENT, AND ITS INHABITANTS WILL PERISH... FOR THUS SAYS THE LORD OF HOSTS: ONCE MORE, IN A LITTLE WHILE, I WILL SHAKE THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH AND THE SEA AND THE DRY LAND... THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH WILL PASS AWAY, BUT MY WORDS SHALL NOT PASS AWAY... FOR ACCORDING TO THEIR OWN WILL, THIS IS HIDDEN FROM THEM (THE SCOFFERS), THAT THERE WERE HEAVENS OF OLD AND AN EARTH FORMED OUT OF WATER AND THROUGH WATER BY THE WORD OF GOD, BY WHICH THE WORLD THAT THEN EXISTED PERISHED, BEING FLOODED WITH WATER. BUT THE PRESENT HEAVENS AND THE EARTH ARE KEPT BY HIS WORD FOR FIRE, RESERVED FOR THE DAY OF JUDGMENT AND PERDITION OF UNGODLY MEN. BUT THE DAY OF THE LORD WILL COME AS A THIEF IN THE NIGHT, IN WHICH THE HEAVENS WILL PASS AWAY WITH A GREAT NOISE, AND THE ELEMENTS WILL MELT WITH FERVENT HEAT; BOTH THE EARTH AND THE WORKS THAT ARE IN IT WILL BE BURNED UP. NEVERTHELESS, WE, ACCORDING TO HIS PROMISE, LOOK FOR NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH IN WHICH RIGHTEOUSNESS DWELLS. AND HE WHO SAT ON THE CLOUD THRUST IN HIS SICKLE ON THE EARTH, AND THE EARTH WAS REAPED. AND I HEARD A LOUD VOICE FROM THE TEMPLE SAYING TO THE SEVEN ANGELS: GO AND POUR OUT THE SEVEN BOWLS OF THE WRATH OF GOD ON THE EARTH...

THE MIDDLE LEVEL OF EXISTENCE: HUMAN. THE EARTH IS THE MIDDLE FLOOR BETWEEN HEAVEN WITH ITS HEAVENS AND THE FLOOR 'BENEATH THE EARTH.' IN THE HEAVENLY REALM DWELL THE CELESTIAL BEINGS, BENEATH THE EARTH THE SUBTERRANEAN ONES, AND ON THE EARTH THE EARTHLY BEINGS, ALSO CALLED HUMANS. THE UPPER LEVEL OF EXISTENCE IS THE HEAVENLY OR DIVINE, THE MIDDLE IS THE HUMAN, AND THE LOWER IS THE DEMONIC. SINCE GOD IS SPIRIT, LIGHT, AND LOVE, THE UPPER, DIVINE BEINGS ARE SPIRITUAL BEINGS, BEINGS OF LIGHT, AND BEINGS OF LOVE. CORRESPONDINGLY, THE BEINGS OF THE LOWER OR OUTER LEVEL OF EXISTENCE ARE UNGODLY OR DISTANT FROM GOD, THAT IS, DEMONIC AND THUS SPIRITUAL BEINGS OF DARKNESS AND OF COLD LOVE OR HATRED. BETWEEN THESE TWO LEVELS OF EXISTENCE STANDS THE HUMAN BEING AT THE MIDDLE.

THE LEVEL OF THE EARTH, SPATIALLY AND ESSENTIALLY NOT AS CLOSE TO THE DIVINE CENTRAL POINT OF THE UNIVERSE AS THE HEAVENLY BEINGS, BUT ALSO NOT AS FAR FROM IT AS THE UNDERGROUND BEINGS, IS RATHER A DISTINCT MIDDLE BEING, AROUND WHICH BOTH POLES OR LEVELS, ABOVE AND BELOW, STRUGGLE. IN 'WORD AND TIME' (NO. 11 FROM 1954), THE AUTHOR EXPLAINED THE SPIRITUAL DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE THREE LEVELS OF BEING IN THE UNIVERSE AS FOLLOWS: 'THE THREE LEVELS OF BEING–DIVINE, HUMAN, AND DEMONIC–EXIST IN THE UNIVERSE. THIS IS TAUGHT TO US BY THE WORD OF GOD. THEY CORRESPOND TO THE THREE TIERS THAT MAKE UP THE SPATIALLY AND TEMPORALLY LIMITED UNIVERSE: HEAVEN, EARTH, AND BENEATH THE EARTH. HOW CAN WE BRIEFLY OUTLINE THE INNERMOST ESSENCE OF THESE THREE LEVELS? THEY REPRESENT THREE DIFFERENT POSITIONS TOWARDS LIFE. IT IS DIVINE TO GIVE LIFE, TO GIVE EVERYTHING, FOR GOD IS ALWAYS THE GIVER, NOT THE TAKER. IT IS HUMAN TO RECEIVE LIFE, TO PRESERVE IT, NOT WANTING TO GIVE IT AWAY, WANTING TO KEEP EVERYTHING AND NOT WANTING TO GIVE MORE THAN A PART. IT IS DEMONIC TO TAKE LIFE, TO CONSUME, TO MURDER, TO TAKE EVERYTHING AND GIVE NOTHING. SIMON PETER, JUST RECENTLY THE SPOKESPERSON FOR THE MIGHTY REVELATION OF THE SON FROM THE FATHER (MATTHEW 16:16), SUDDENLY BECAME A VESSEL FOR SATAN TO THE LORD JESUS. THIS HAPPENED SIMPLY BECAUSE HE GAVE THE LORD THE WELL-MEANING, HUMANLY UNDERSTANDABLE ADVICE: 'TAKE CARE OF YOURSELF!' IN OTHER WORDS: 'DO NOT GIVE YOUR LIFE AWAY, KEEP IT!' THIS WAS TYPICALLY HUMAN, THE ESSENCE OF HUMANITY. A DECENT PERSON DOES NOT TAKE ANYONE'S LIFE, AT LEAST NOT IN A COARSE, EXTERNAL MANNER; ONE LETS EVERYONE HAVE THEIR OWN, BUT ONE ALSO DOES NOT GIVE AWAY WHAT ONE HAS. AT THAT MOMENT, THE LORD JESUS LITERALLY SEES THE SATAN THAT IS WITHIN PETER. THEREFORE, HE ADDRESSES HIM, NOT PETER, WHO IS MERELY A SHELL AT THAT MOMENT. IT IS ASTONISHING THAT THE LORD ACCUSES SATAN OF THINKING HUMANLY RATHER THAN DIVINELY. HOW CAN HE EXPECT OR DEMAND DIVINE THINKING FROM SATAN? HERE, A VIEW OPENS INTO IMMENSE AEONIC EXPANSES. NOT EVERYONE WANTS TO TAKE SUCH A VIEW. SATAN BELONGS TO THE SONS OF GOD (BNE ELOHIM) ACCORDING TO JOB 1. AND WHEN WE CONSIDER THE STORY OF THE PRODIGAL SON AND...

IF WE DO NOT REMAIN SOLELY FOCUSED ON THE HUMANLY UPLIFTING, NO MATTER HOW VALUABLE IT MAY BE, WE REALIZE THAT THE YOUNGER BROTHER (CHRIST, THE SECOND ADAM) SURPASSES THE OLDER BROTHER THROUGH HIS DEATH AND LOST STATE BEFORE HIS RETURN, WHILE THE OLDER BROTHER HAS NOT DIED AWAY FROM THE FATHER. THE LORD JESUS DIRECTLY TELLS THE REPRESENTATIVES OF THE LAW: 'YOU ARE OF YOUR FATHER, THE DEVIL.' EVEN IF SATAN IS CONSIDERED A SON OF GOD (THE GNOSTICS CLAIM HE WAS ONCE CALLED SATANAEL!), ONE MIGHT EXPECT HIM TO KNOW WHAT IS DIVINE, NAMELY TO GIVE UP LIFE, THAT IS, TO DIE AND BE LOST AS THE YOUNGER, LOST SON EXPERIENCED AND SUFFERED. BUT SATAN DOES NOT WANT THAT; HE WANTS LIFE, TO TAKE AND KEEP HIS SHARE OF GOODS, AND AS MUCH OF THE OTHER'S AS POSSIBLE, NOT TO GIVE IT UP. THE HIGHEST HE ASPIRES TO IS THE HUMAN LEVEL, TO TURN IT INTO THE DEVILISH. FOR THE HUMAN BECOMES DEVILISH IF IT DOES NOT ALLOW ITSELF TO BE ELEVATED TO THE DIVINE. IT CANNOT REMAIN A NEUTRAL INTERMEDIATE STAGE BETWEEN THE DIVINE AND THE DEVILISH FOR LONG. THE GREAT ERROR OF THIS WORLD IS THE BELIEF THAT IT CAN SUCCESSFULLY ASSERT NOBLE HUMANITY AGAINST THE DEVILISH THROUGH ITS OWN STRENGTH. IN BELIEVERS, THE HOLY SPIRIT RESIDES, WHILE IN THE CHILDREN OF DISBELIEF, THE SPIRIT OF THE PRINCE OF THE AIR REIGNS (EPH. 2:2). BESIDES THE RELATIONSHIP TO LIFE, HUMANITY DIFFERS FROM THE DEVILISH IN THAT WHILE MAN IS WEAK AND THEREFORE SINS, HE STILL DESIRES AND AFFIRMS THE GOOD WHEN HE KNOWS AND EXPERIENCES IT; HE OFTEN FAILS TO ACHIEVE IT BECAUSE HE IS MADE OF FLESH AND BLOOD. HOWEVER, AS SOON AS THE AFFIRMATION, THE WILL TO DO GOOD CEASES, AND EVIL IS AFFIRMED AND DESIRED, THE BOUNDARY FROM THE HUMAN TO THE DEVILISH IS CROSSED. THE DEVIL DESIRES EVIL AND DOES IT, BUT IN DOING SO, HE UNWITTINGLY SERVES THE GOOD, GOD. MAN DESIRES GOOD, DOES EVIL, AND THUS UNWITTINGLY SERVES EVIL. BUT GOD DESIRES GOOD AND ACCOMPLISHES IT, EVEN THROUGH ALL EVIL. BROTHER KNOCH TRANSLATES OUR PASSAGE LITERALLY: 'YOU ARE A STUMBLING BLOCK TO ME, FOR YOU DO NOT HAVE IN MIND THE THINGS OF GOD, BUT THE THINGS OF MEN.' TO SHOW DIVINE DISPOSITION, SATAN WOULD FIRST HAVE TO CHANGE HIS MIND, REPENT, AND TURN BACK. THE LORD EVIDENTLY EXPECTS THIS FROM HIM AS WELL. BUT THE TIME IS NOT YET HERE. THE STORY OF THE LOST SON IS NOT YET OVER; IT ABRUPTLY BREAKS OFF AT THE FATHER'S ADDRESS TO THE OLDER BROTHER...

IF SATAN HAD APPEARED WITH HIS DEVILISH ORIGINAL DISPOSITION, PERHAPS IN THE PERSON OF JUDAS, WHOM HE POSSESSED AFTER THE BITE ANYWAY, HE WOULD HAVE SAID: YOU DESERVE IT WHEN THEY CRUCIFY YOU; WHY DON'T YOU TAKE ANOTHER PATH TO POWER! BUT THEN EVERY DISCIPLE WOULD HAVE RECOGNIZED SATAN IMMEDIATELY, BECAUSE THE GAP BETWEEN MAN AND DEVIL IS VERY LARGE, ESPECIALLY AMONG THE DISCIPLES. EVEN THE ORDINARY PERSON UNDER THE LAW KNOWS IMMEDIATELY WHERE THE DEVILRY, THE WICKEDNESS BEGINS, BECAUSE HUMANITY IS WEAK AND THEREFORE SINFUL, BUT NOT WILLFULLY EVIL. ONLY AMONG DEVILS DOES SATAN ACT DEVILISHLY. AMONG HUMANS, HE PRESENTS HIMSELF AS HUMAN; HE DISGUISES HIMSELF. AND WHEN NECESSARY, HE EVEN PRESENTS HIMSELF AMONG THE PIOUS AS AN ANGEL OF LIGHT FOR A TIME. HE CANNOT PRESENT HIMSELF AS DIVINE, BECAUSE THEN HE WOULD HAVE TO GIVE HIMSELF UP. FOR ONCE THE DEVILISH BECOMES DIVINE, THE ULTIMATE GOAL OF THE ENTIRE SALVATION PROCESS WOULD BE REACHED: GOD ALL IN ALL! TODAY, SATAN FEARS NOTHING AS MUCH AS THE FIRE OF THE ALTAR OF SACRIFICE, BECAUSE HE WOULD HAVE TO BURN IN IT HIMSELF. HE SLANDERS THE GIVING, THE ALTAR OF SACRIFICE AS FANATICISM OR SEEKS TO GIVE THE SACRIFICE ANOTHER GOAL, A PERVERSE CONTENT. BECAUSE IT IS THE DEVILISH NATURE TO TAKE LIFE, CAIN WAS ALREADY THE FIRST MURDERER, THE SON OF THE DEVIL, AND HE WANTED TO DO ACCORDING TO HIS FATHER'S DESIRE (JOHN 8:44). ABEL CERTAINLY DID NOT WILLINGLY AND EASILY GIVE HIS LIFE; IT WAS BRUTALLY TAKEN FROM HIM, HIS LIFE OFFERING WAS FORCED, HE WAS, SO TO SPEAK, VIOLENTLY PUSHED INTO THE DIVINE ROLE, WHICH HE HAD ALREADY APPROACHED VERY CLOSELY THROUGH HIS KNOWING SACRIFICE FROM THE FLOCK. MAN LIVES HIS EXISTENCE BETWEEN HEAVEN AND HELL; HE EXISTS IN A MIXED WORLD, PERMEATED BY BOTH DIVINE AND DEVILISH INFLUENCES. GOD BECAME MAN TO DESTROY THE WORKS OF THE DEVIL, WHICH AIM TO TURN HUMANS INTO DEVILS, TO PULL THE EARTHLY, THE HUMAN DOWN TO THE DEVILISH LEVEL, WHILE GOD WANTS TO ESTABLISH THE HEAVENLY, THE DIVINE AT THE EARTHLY LEVEL OF HUMANITY AND WILL DO SO UNTIL THE HEAVENLY JERUSALEM CAN COME DOWN TO EARTH. ACCORDING TO JAMES 3:15, THERE ARE ALSO THREE LEVELS OF WISDOM: DIVINE, EARTHLY OR HUMAN, AND DEVILISH. THE DIVINE WISDOM IS CHRIST JESUS (1 CORINTHIANS 1:24). TO HUMANS, IT APPEARS AS FOOLISHNESS, FOR IT IS SEEN AS THE PREACHING OF THE CRUCIFIED SON OF GOD. AS WISDOM FROM ABOVE, IT IS FIRST PURE, THEN PEACEABLE, GENTLE, WILLING TO YIELD... (JAMES 3:17). THIS IS THE WISDOM OF THIS WORLD.

THE WISDOM OF THE FLESH IS FOOLISHNESS TO GOD; IT IS THE WISDOM OF MAN FROM THE DARKENED MIND DUE TO THE FALL, A BELIEF IN PERSUASIVE WORDS OF REASON DEVOID OF SPIRIT AND POWER, THE SELFISHNESS THAT DISTINGUISHES BETWEEN THE DESPISED AND THE ESTEEMED, THE STRONG AND THE WEAK. ULTIMATELY, THE DEVILISH WISDOM MANIFESTS IN ENVY, STRIFE, AND LIES AGAINST THE TRUTH, IN THE MURDER AND SUPPRESSION OF THE TRUTH.

BEING HUMAN IS THE PREREQUISITE FOR GOD'S SON TO COME AND CALL SINNERS TO REPENTANCE. SINNERS ARE THOSE WHO HAVE FALLEN INTO THE BONDAGE OF GUILT AND WISH TO BE FREE. THEY ARE STILL HUMAN, NOT DEVILS, EVEN IF THEIR FLESH AND BLOOD CAN NO LONGER INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD. HUMANS ARE CREATURES WHO AFFIRM THE GOOD INTERNALLY AS SOON AS THEY KNOW IT, BUT DUE TO THE WEAKNESS OF THEIR FLESH, THEY CANNOT ACCOMPLISH IT ON THEIR OWN. IF THEY DO NOT RECOGNIZE THIS STATE, THEY ARE STILL BLIND; IF THEY DO RECOGNIZE IT, THEY ARE SEEING AND THUS EVEN MORE WRETCHED, LONGING FOR REDEMPTION. THIS IS THE PREREQUISITE FOR THEIR DIVINIZATION. HOWEVER, THE FOUNDATION FOR SALVATION AND REDEMPTION IS ALWAYS BEING HUMAN. "WHAT IS MAN THAT YOU ARE MINDFUL OF HIM, OR THE SON OF MAN THAT YOU VISIT HIM? FOR HE DOES NOT GIVE AID TO ANGELS, BUT HE GIVES AID TO THE SEED OF ABRAHAM" (HEB. 2:6, 16). WHERE, HOWEVER, MAN HAS LOST THE HUMAN LEVEL AND HAS BECOME A DEVIL, THE PREREQUISITE FOR SALVATION IN THIS AGE HAS VANISHED (MARK 3:29), FOR NOW, THE SOULS OF MEN ARE SAVED THROUGH FAITH IN THE SON OF GOD AND HIS BLOOD. NOT THE SOULS OF DEVILS AND DEMONS. THEY ALSO BELIEVE IN GOD, BUT WITH THE EFFECT THAT THEY TREMBLE (JAMES 2:19). AND THE TRUTH THAT JESUS CHRIST HAS COME IN THE FLESH, THE SPIRITS THAT ARE NOT FROM GOD CANNOT YET CONFESS (JOHN 4:2). TODAY IS THE DAY OF MAN, THE DAY OF SALVATION. THEREFORE, THE PREREQUISITE FOR SALVATION, BEING HUMAN, MUST ALWAYS BE RESTORED FIRST. THE EXPULSION OF DEVILS AND EVIL SPIRITS FROM POSSESSED PEOPLE LEADS BACK TO THE LEVEL OF HUMANITY (MARK 5:15); IT DOES NOT MAKE THEM DIVINE, HEAVENLY, OR AT LEAST CAPABLE OF ENTERING THE KINGDOM OF GOD, BUT IT RESTORES THE PREREQUISITE, THE LEVEL OF HUMANITY, ONCE AGAIN. PSALM 9:21: "THAT THE NATIONS MAY KNOW THEY ARE MEN." THUS, THE LORD SAYS IN JOHN 6:70 TO HIS DISCIPLES: DID I NOT CHOOSE YOU TWELVE (AS HUMANS!)? AND ONE OF YOU IS A DEVIL. THE DEVIL.

FROM THE BEGINNING, MAN DOES NOT SIN; HE WAS LED ASTRAY. FOR HUMANITY, THERE IS A HUMAN GOSPEL, AND FOR THE CHURCH, A NON-HUMAN GOSPEL. FOR GOD MANIFESTS HIMSELF IN THE HUMAN REALM IN TWO WAYS: FIRST, HE COMES DOWN AND ESTABLISHES HIS KINGDOM ON EARTH, POURING OUT HIS SPIRIT UPON FLESH. AT THE SAME TIME, HE CHOOSES A CHURCH THAT IS PREPARED THROUGH THE EXPERIENCE OF SUFFERING AND DEATH, MEANING THE GIVING OF LIFE, TO LEAVE THE HUMAN LEVEL AND ASCEND INTO THE DIVINE NATURE IN HEAVENLY PLACES. HUMANS ARE INHERENTLY OF DIVINE LINEAGE, FOR 'IN HIM WE LIVE AND MOVE AND HAVE OUR BEING.' THE HEBREW WORD FOR ADAM CONTAINS THE CONCEPTS OF 'SIMILAR' AND 'EARTH.' MAN IS AN IMAGE OF GOD MADE FROM EARTH, MEANING IN A FALLEN STATE. IN GENESIS 1, THE IMAGE OF GOD IS EMPHASIZED IN ADAM; IN GENESIS 2, THE EARTHLY ASPECT COMES TO THE FOREFRONT. THE STRONGEST CHARACTERISTIC OF A DIVINE IMAGE MUST BE THE PRINCIPLE OF SPIRIT AND THUS LIFE, FOR GOD IS SPIRIT, AND WHERE THERE IS SPIRIT, THERE IS LIFE. THEREFORE, THE IMAGE OF GOD COULD ONLY BE SPIRIT; OTHERWISE, IT WOULD NOT HAVE BEEN A TRUE IMAGE OF GOD THAT WAS CREATED. THIS SPIRIT FROM GOD BECAME MAN, MEANING IT RECEIVED A COVERING OF INVISIBLE, SUBTLE DUST FROM THE ADAMAH, AND AFTER THE FALL, 'GARMENTS OF SKINS,' MEANING THE OUTER BODY FROM THE ADAMAH ITSELF. THUS, MAN IS A CONNECTION BETWEEN HEAVEN AND FALLEN, HARDENED EARTH, DISTANT FROM GOD. FROM THIS EARTH, HE IS TEMPTED THROUGH HIS BODY, WHICH IS MADE OF EARTH, BUT FROM HEAVEN, HE IS ALSO REACHABLE AND RESPONSIVE THROUGH GOD AND HIS SPIRIT. THE STRUGGLE BETWEEN THESE TWO POLES, ABOVE AND BELOW, IS FOUGHT IN THE SOUL OR SELF-AWARENESS OF MAN. THEREFORE, MAN IS A LIVING BEING THAT CAN BE ADDRESSED AND TEMPTED FROM BOTH ABOVE AND BELOW, OR FROM WITHIN AND WITHOUT. HE CAN DEVELOP INTO EITHER GOD OR AN ANTI-GOD OR DEVIL. THE EARTH, AS THE MIDDLE GROUND, IS THE STAGE WHERE THE ADVANCING DOMINION OF HEAVEN COLLIDES WITH THE DOMINION OF SATAN, WHO STILL OFFICIALLY RULES THE EARTH. THE APPEARANCE OF MAN IS GOD'S ADVANCE FROM THE HEAVENS OUTWARD TO DESTROY THE WORKS OF THE DEVIL. FOR THIS PURPOSE, GOD HIMSELF BECAME MAN. SINCE THEN, HUMANS CAN BECOME GODS! THE LORD JESUS SPEAKS OF OUTER DARKNESS IN THREE PLACES IN THE GOSPEL OF MATTHEW. OUTSIDE IS BELOW, AS WE HAVE SEEN MULTIPLE TIMES. ABOVE IS...

INSIDE. THE TERM THAT APPEARS ONLY THREE TIMES IN THE NEW TESTAMENT FOR 'OUTER' = EXOTEROS STANDS IN CONTRAST TO THE WORD FOR INNER OR INTERNAL = ESOTEROS, WHICH ALSO APPEARS ONLY TWICE IN THE NEW TESTAMENT, AMONG OTHERS IN HEBREWS 6:19: 'TO GRASP THE HOPE THAT LIES BEFORE US, WHICH WE HAVE AS AN ANCHOR FOR THE SOUL, THAT IS SURELY CONFIRMED AND ENTERS INTO THE INNER SPACE OF THE VEIL, WHERE THE FORERUNNER, JESUS, ENTERED FOR US, HAVING BECOME A HIGH PRIEST ACCORDING TO THE ORDER OF MELCHIZEDEK.' SINCE WE KNOW FROM OTHER TESTIMONIES OF SCRIPTURE THAT THE LORD ASCENDED TO HEAVEN ABOVE ALL HEAVENS TO SIT AT THE RIGHT HAND OF THE FATHER, WE HAVE IN THIS HEBREW PASSAGE A CONFIRMATION THAT THE ABOVE IS EQUIVALENT TO THE INNER. THEN THE OUTSIDE OR THE OUTER IS ALSO EQUIVALENT TO THE LOWER. THAT DARKNESS REIGNS ON THE FALLEN EARTH IS CLEAR TO US FROM SCRIPTURE AND EXPERIENCE. THE LIGHT CAME INTO THIS DARKNESS ON EARTH. BUT THERE IS ALSO AN OUTER DARKNESS FROM THE PERSPECTIVE OF THE EARTH, ESPECIALLY IN THE MILLENNIUM, WHEN THE WEDDING FEAST TAKES PLACE AND THOSE WHO DO NOT HAVE WEDDING GARMENTS WILL BE CAST OUT INTO THIS OUTER DARKNESS, WHICH MUST THEN BE OUTSIDE OR BELOW THE EARTH, SINCE IN THE MEANTIME THE KINGDOM OF GOD HAS BEEN ESTABLISHED ON EARTH. THE DARKNESS HAS BEEN EXPELLED OUTWARD WITH THE SEALING OF SATAN IN THE ABYSS, AND ON EARTH, AFTER THE ONSET OF THE MILLENNIUM, A LIGHT HAS BROKEN THROUGH THAT IS ALREADY SEVEN TIMES BRIGHTER THAN THE CURRENT SUNLIGHT (ISAIAH 30:26). INSIDE OR OUTSIDE, WE CAN ALWAYS REFER TO THE MOST PERFECT FORM AND APPEARANCE THAT WE KNOW, THE SPHERE. INSIDE IS LIGHT, OUTSIDE IS A LACK OF LIGHT OR DARKNESS. THOSE WHO LIVE DIRECTED OUTWARD WILL EVENTUALLY ALSO GO OUTWARD, INTO THE OUTER DARKNESS; THOSE WHO LIVE DIRECTED INWARD WILL GO INWARD, INTO THE INNER LIGHT. ALFRED WOLFRAM IN KIERSPE VEHEMENTLY ADVOCATES THE HOLLOW WORLD AS THE BIBLICAL UNIVERSE IN HIS LETTERS AND OTHER STATEMENTS. HE WRITES, AMONG OTHER THINGS, ABOUT JESUS' STAY AFTER HIS DEATH ON THE CROSS UNTIL THE RESURRECTION: 'DR. SIMON WEBER TRANSLATES GENESIS 1:6 IN THE CATHOLIC BIBLE AS FOLLOWS: AND GOD SAID: LET THERE BE A FIRMAMENT IN THE MIDST OF THE WATERS AND LET IT DIVIDE THE WATERS FROM THE WATERS. VERSE 7: AND GOD MADE THE FIRMAMENT... IF HE MADE IT, IT MUST ALSO BE VISIBLE, ESPECIALLY WHEN HE ALWAYS SPEAKS OF THE SPACE 'BETWEEN HEAVEN AND EARTH.' DO WE SEE IN THE CLOUDLESS 'SKY' THE SAPPHIRE BLUE AS A BARRIER VIEW TO THE CENTER OF THE EARTH AND THERE...

THE VIEW OF THE HEAVENLY FIRMAMENT, IN WHICH OUR HEAVENLY HOMELAND RESIDES, REFLECTS THE BIBLICAL PERSPECTIVE THAT DOES NOT MAKE GOD GREATER THAN HE REVEALS HIMSELF IN HIS WORD. WE ALSO RECOGNIZE IN GENESIS 1:1 AND 2 THAT MOSES MENTIONS BOTH ASPECTS OF CREATION: THE ABYSS AND THE WATERS. THE ABYSS REPRESENTS THE SEPARATION FROM GOD'S CREATIVE REALM. EVEN BEFORE GOD CREATED THE FIRMAMENT, HE SEPARATED THE GODLESS FROM THE FIRST LAND (THE TIBETAN PLATEAU?), JUST AS HE LATER DID WITH KORAH'S REBELLION IN NUMBERS 16:31-33. FURTHERMORE, IN JOB 38:8-9, GOD USES THE IMAGERY OF A BIRTH PROCESS TO DESCRIBE THE GREAT EMERGENCE OF WATER FROM THE EARTH, MOVING FROM THE INNER CAVITY TO THE OUTSIDE. THE FOLLOWING BIBLE VERSES ADDRESS THESE MATTERS: DEUTERONOMY 10:14; PSALM 24:1; LUKE 4:5; ACTS 17:24; ISAIAH 14:9-15; 40:22; NAHUM 1:5. THE FOUNDATION OF THE EARTH REMAINS: ECCLESIASTES 1:4; PSALM 119:90; JEREMIAH 31:37. HOWEVER, THE INNER SURFACE OF THE EARTH WILL PERISH AND BE RENEWED: ISAIAH 24:18-20; MATTHEW 24:35; 2 PETER 3:13; REVELATION 21:1. 2. THE VIEW UPWARDS (AND INWARDS) OBSTRUCTED BY THE SAPPHIRE-BLUE FIRMAMENT LATER EXTENDS TO THE MIDDLE HEAVEN, WHICH CAN BE MEASURED (PERCEIVED IN CIRCUMFERENCE), JEREMIAH 31:37. CHRIST JESUS WILL THEN BE THE LIGHT AND HEAD OF THE CREATIVE REALM, AND HIS CHURCH WILL FILL THIS ENTIRE SPACE, EPHESIANS 1:21-23. THE CREED ASSERTS THAT CHRIST WAS BURIED AND DESCENDED TO HELL AFTER HIS CRUCIFIXION, AND ON THE THIRD DAY, HE ROSE FROM THE DEAD, ASCENDED TO HEAVEN, AND SITS AT THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD THE ALMIGHTY FATHER, FROM WHERE HE WILL COME TO JUDGE THE LIVING AND THE DEAD. WOLFRAM, HOWEVER, SEES THE SEQUENCE IN THE UNIVERSE AS FOLLOWS: CRUCIFIED, DIED, AND BURIED. SEPARATED FROM THE EARTH. ON THE SAME DAY, HE ESCAPED THE GATES OF HELL AND ASCENDED TO THE FATHER'S HOUSE WITH MANY ROOMS IN THE CENTER OF THE EARTH OR WORLD (THE HEART OF THE EARTH = THE SUN, MATTHEW 12:40), ALONG WITH THE BELIEVERS OF THE OLD COVENANT AND THE FIRST OF THE NEW COVENANT (THE THIEF), HANDING OVER PARADISE ABOVE TO THE SPIRITS, THUS BEGINNING THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN. ON THE THIRD (EARTH) DAY, HE INTERRUPTED THE TIME IN THE FATHER'S HOUSE ABOVE AND THE PREPARATION OF ROOMS AND PLACES WITH HIS BODILY RESURRECTION ON EARTH AND THROUGH THE VARIOUS EASTER APPEARANCES. AFTER FORTY EARTHLY DAYS, DURING WHICH HE ALSO REMAINED UNDER THE EARTH (1 PETER 3:19), HE VISIBLY ASCENDED TO HEAVEN BEFORE THE DISCIPLES, THIS TIME TO THE THRONE OF GOD THROUGH ALL THE HEAVENS AS A TRIUMPHANT VICTOR (HEBREWS).

BEING HUMAN IS AN IMMENSE PRIVILEGE, A CHANCE, BUT IT ALSO COMES WITH A GREAT RESPONSIBILITY. TO BE HUMAN MEANS TO HAVE A BODY, EVEN IF IT IS INITIALLY MADE FROM THE FALLEN DARKNESS OF THE EARTH. HOWEVER, IT CAN BE A PRECURSOR TO A SPIRITUAL AND LIGHT BODY, BUT ALSO TO A BODY OF DARKNESS. FROM THE HUMAN STAGE, ONE CAN EITHER BECOME GOD OR THE DEVIL. HUMANITY IS GOD IN THE PROCESS OF EMBODIMENT, A STAGE IN THE 'GROWTH OF GOD,' WHICH GIVES IT ITS TREMENDOUS, UNIQUE SIGNIFICANCE. THIS ALSO GRANTS THE EARTH A RANK THAT SURPASSES THAT OF THE STARS, POSITIONING THE EARTH AS A SPECIAL REVELATION AND CREATION OF GOD ALONGSIDE THE HEAVENS, AS ALREADY STATED IN THE FIRST VERSE OF THE BIBLE. GOD CREATED THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH, AND LATER THE CELESTIAL BODIES. THESE WILL EVENTUALLY CEASE TO BE NECESSARY, BUT THE EARTH WILL REMAIN AS LONG AS ITS COUNTERPART, THE HEAVENS, EXIST. A NEW EARTH WILL CORRESPOND TO A NEW HEAVEN.

WHEN ONE CONSIDERS THE IMMENSE VOLUMES OF WATER IN THE OCEANS, ONE INEVITABLY WONDERS: WHAT KIND OF GREAT CATASTROPHE ARE THESE THE REMNANTS OF? WE HAVE ALREADY SUSPECTED THAT WATER IS THE RESULT OF THE EARTH AND SKY CATASTROPHE MENTIONED IN 2 PETER 3:5, WHICH MUST HAVE OCCURRED BETWEEN THE FIRST TWO VERSES OF THE BIBLE. THE LARGE AMOUNT OF SALT IN THESE WATERS UNDOUBTEDLY HAS ITS OWN SPECIAL SIGNIFICANCE. IN SALT, ACID AND BASE ARE BOUND TOGETHER, OR IN OTHER WORDS: A PIECE OF GOOD BINDS A PIECE OF EVIL. THE OCEANS COVER AN AREA OF 362,586,000 SQUARE KILOMETERS, WHICH IS ABOUT 70 PERCENT OF THE EARTH'S SURFACE. IF ONE IMAGINES THE IRREGULARITIES OF THE EARTH'S SURFACE LEVELED, THE GLOBE WOULD BE COVERED BY MORE THAN 2000 METERS OF WATER. IN MANY RESPECTS, THE SEA OFFERS A GREATER NATURAL SPECTACLE THAN THE LAND. FOR INSTANCE, THE DEEPEST KNOWN OCEAN TRENCH NEAR MINDANAO REACHES A DEPTH OF 10,380 METERS, WHICH IS 2000 METERS DEEPER THAN MOUNT EVEREST. THE NATURE OF THE ATMOSPHERE IS CLOSELY CONNECTED WITH THE SEA, AND WEATHER FORECASTING LARGELY DEPENDS ON OCEANOGRAPHY. THE DEPTHS OF THE SEA ARE AS DYNAMIC AS THE LAYERS OF AIR. OCEANOGRAPHERS DISTINGUISH BETWEEN PLATEAUS, BASINS, TRENCHES, ELEVATIONS, REEFS, CLIFFS, GROOVES, AND VALLEYS. THE DEPTH OF THE SEA DECREASES AT THE COAST OF THE MAINLAND INTO WHAT IS KNOWN AS...

THE CONTINENTAL SHELF, WHICH IS LESS THAN 2000 METERS DEEP AND OFTEN HAS A CONSIDERABLE EXTENT. IN THE ENGLISH CHANNEL AND THE NORTH SEA, THERE ARE DEPTHS OF LESS THAN A HUNDRED METERS, WHICH IS OF GREAT IMPORTANCE DUE TO THE NUMEROUS FISH AND SHELLFISH SPECIES FOUND HERE. BARE ROCK IS RARELY THE SEA FLOOR; IT IS COVERED WITH DEPOSITS FROM THE LAND, INCLUDING GRAVEL, SAND, AND MUD. AT GREATER DEPTHS, THESE DEPOSITS ARE OF A DIFFERENT KIND. REMAINS OF MICROSCOPIC ANIMALS TAKE A CONSIDERABLE AMOUNT OF TIME TO SINK TO THE SEA FLOOR, AND THE CARBONIC ACID IN THE WATER HAS ENOUGH TIME TO DISSOLVE THEM, SO THAT ONLY THE SILICEOUS SHELLS OF CERTAIN SHELLFISH REACH THE BOTTOM. THUS, THE DEPOSITS ARE ALMOST EXCLUSIVELY SILICEOUS. HOWEVER, AT THE GREATEST DEPTHS, EVEN THE SEAWATER DISSOLVES THESE DEPOSITS BEFORE THEY REACH THE BOTTOM. THE FLOOR THERE IS ONLY COVERED WITH FINE RED MUD OF VOLCANIC ORIGIN. HERE, A PERMANENT GRAND PROCESS OF DECAY OR DISSOLUTION UNDOUBTEDLY TAKES PLACE, UNTIL ONLY FINE RED MUD REMAINS IN THE DEEPEST PARTS OF THE SEA. MUD IS DAMPENED DUST. FLESH IS DISSOLVED INTO DUST DURING ITS TOTAL PURIFICATION OR TRANSFORMATION IN THE PROCESSES OF DECAY AND WEATHERING. IN THE DEPTHS OF THE SEA, IMMENSE TRANSFORMATION PROCESSES OCCUR ON THE BODIES THAT FALL IN AND SINK. IS THIS THE TOTAL DISSOLUTION REFERRED TO IN THE SCRIPTURES BY THE GREEK WORD 'APOLYMI' OR THE GERMAN TERM 'VERLORENSEIN,' WHICH SIGNIFIES THE SECOND, AEONIC DEATH? SUNLIGHT PENETRATES ONLY UP TO 200 METERS DEEP, WHICH IS WHY THERE IS NO VEGETATION AT GREATER DEPTHS. FOR A LONG TIME, IT WAS BELIEVED THAT FISH THERE WERE BLIND, AS ORGANS THAT DO NOT FUNCTION ATROPHY; HOWEVER, DEEP-SEA FISH DO HAVE EYES. IT WAS ONLY THROUGH THE DISCOVERY OF BIOLUMINESCENT FISH THAT THIS MYSTERY WAS CLARIFIED. THESE FISH PRESENT AN EXTRAORDINARY SPECTACLE, GLOWING IN VIOLET, PURPLE, RED, ORANGE, BLUE, GREEN, AND EVEN BRIGHT WHITE. BEEBE, THE FIRST TO REACH GREAT DEPTHS, PROVIDES AN ENTHUSIASTIC ACCOUNT: '... A FEW TIMES I ENCOUNTERED UNKNOWN BEINGS THAT EMITTED SUCH A STRONG BEAM OF LIGHT THAT I WAS BLINDED FOR SEVERAL MOMENTS. OFTEN, THE ABUNDANCE OF GLOWING POINTS WAS SO NUMEROUS THAT A COMPARISON WITH THE STARS ON A MOONLESS NIGHT WAS INEVITABLE.'

OCEANOGRAPHY IS STILL A YOUNG SCIENCE, BARELY 65 YEARS OLD. TODAY, WE KNOW MORE ABOUT THE CONDITIONS ON THE MOON THAN THOSE ON THE OCEAN FLOOR. FOR CENTURIES, HUMANS HAVE BEEN EXTRACTING SALT FROM THE SEA. IT EXISTS IN SUCH QUANTITIES THAT A CONTINENT LIKE EUROPE COULD BE COVERED WITH A SALT LAYER 1800 METERS HIGH. SIMILARLY, IODINE, SODA, AND ALGAE ARE HARVESTED AS FERTILIZERS. A LARGE PORTION OF THE MAGNESIUM USED IN WARFARE FOR MAKING BOMBS, AIRPLANES, AND OTHER WEAPONS WAS OBTAINED FROM THE SEA. SEAWATER CONTAINS SO MANY VALUABLE SALTS AND TRACE ELEMENTS THAT IT IS NOW BOTTLED AND SHIPPED AS THERAPEUTIC AND HEALING WATER, WHICH IS NOT SURPRISING GIVEN THE ORIGIN OF THE SEA. THEREFORE, IT IS A SIGNIFICANT JUDGMENT WHEN IN REVELATION 8:8 A THIRD OF THE SEA TURNS TO BLOOD AND A THIRD OF THE FRESH WATER BECOMES BITTER. TECHNOLOGY IS ALREADY CONTRIBUTING TO THE FULFILLMENT OF THIS PROPHETIC JUDGMENT THROUGH THE ONGOING POLLUTION OF WATER BODIES.

THE LOWER FLOOR

BENEATH THE EARTH JUST AS THE EARTH, AIR, AND HEAVENS ARE SPATIAL REVELATIONS OF GOD THAT CAN BE UNDERSTOOD AND EXPERIENCED, NOT JUST METAPHORICALLY, THE BIBLICAL STATEMENT "BENEATH THE EARTH" SHOULD ALSO BE UNDERSTOOD SPATIALLY, LITERALLY, AND EXPERIENTIALLY. WE HAVE LAID OUT THE REASONS FOR THIS IN EARLIER SECTIONS. THERE IS A VAST AREA BENEATH THE EARTH. IN THE COPERNICAN MODEL OF THE EARTH AS A SPHERE, ONE MIGHT IMAGINE A HOLLOW SPACE INSIDE THIS GLOBE OR THE SO-CALLED PLANET EARTH, BUT THIS SPACE WOULD BE VERY SMALL COMPARED TO THE "ENDLESS UNIVERSE" AND SHOULD ACTUALLY BE REFERRED TO AS "WITHIN THE EARTH." IT WOULD BE INSIDE, WHILE THE HEAVENS ARE OUTSIDE. HOWEVER, WE HAVE ALREADY RECOGNIZED SEVERAL TIMES THE BIBLICAL PRINCIPLE: ABOVE IS EQUAL TO INSIDE, BELOW IS EQUAL TO OUTSIDE. THE PART OF THE UNIVERSE THAT THE BIBLE CALLS "BENEATH THE EARTH" IS THEREFORE NECESSARILY ALSO OUTSIDE, AS SEEN FROM THE EARTH AND THE HEAVENS. A HOLLOW SPACE WITHIN A PLANET EARTH WOULD BE BELOW BUT NOT ALSO OUTSIDE; RATHER, IT WOULD BE INSIDE, AS VIEWED FROM THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH. FURTHERMORE, SCIENCE DOES NOT ADMIT THAT THE INTERIOR OF THEIR PLANETARY SPHERE IS HOLLOW; RATHER, IT BELIEVES IT CONSISTS OF EXTREMELY DENSE MATTER OR A MOLTEN METAL CORE.

THE WORLD 'BENEATH THE EARTH' IS ALSO THE ANSWER TO THE QUESTION: WHAT EXISTS OUTSIDE IN THE BIBLICAL COSMOS OF THE HOLLOW WORLD OR EARTH WORLD? OUTSIDE, EQUATING TO BELOW, IS A REALM THAT WE EARTHLY BEINGS CAN ONLY EXPERIENCE UNDER CERTAIN CONDITIONS, A WORLD OF DIFFERENT DIMENSIONS, ORDERS OF MAGNITUDE, AND RELATIONSHIPS WITH GOD OR LIFE ORDERS THAN WE KNOW ON EARTH. WE ARE PROTECTED FROM THIS WORLD 'BENEATH THE EARTH' BY THE EARTH'S CRUST, WHICH MUST HAVE A WISE REASON FOR BEING SO ARRANGED; OTHERWISE, IT WOULDN'T BE SET UP THIS WAY. HOWEVER, THE WORD OF GOD SPEAKS SO FREQUENTLY IN SUCH CLEAR, EMPHATIC TERMS ABOUT THIS WORLD 'BENEATH THE EARTH' THAT ITS EXISTENCE AND REALITY CAN NO LONGER BE QUESTIONED BY A BIBLE-BELIEVING PERSON. THIS WORLD 'BENEATH THE EARTH' IS THE PLACE OF DARKNESS, HELL, JUDGMENT, THE ABYSS INTO WHICH THOSE ARE SWALLOWED WHO ARE CONSUMED BY THE MOUTH OF THE EARTH. THE FOLLOWING PASSAGES FROM SCRIPTURE REFER TO THE WORLD 'BENEATH THE EARTH':

☆

IN THE SIX HUNDREDTH YEAR OF NOAH'S LIFE, IN THE SECOND MONTH, ON THE SEVENTEENTH DAY OF THE MONTH, ALL THE FOUNTAINS OF THE GREAT DEEP BURST FORTH, AND THE WINDOWS OF HEAVEN WERE OPENED. GENESIS 7:11

☆

AND IT HAPPENED, WHEN HE HAD FINISHED SPEAKING ALL THESE WORDS, THAT THE GROUND BENEATH THEM SPLIT OPEN, AND THE EARTH OPENED ITS MOUTH AND SWALLOWED THEM AND THEIR FAMILIES AND ALL THE MEN WHO BELONGED TO KORAH, ALONG WITH ALL THEIR POSSESSIONS. THEY WENT DOWN ALIVE INTO SHEOL, AND THE EARTH CLOSED OVER THEM... NUMBERS 16:31-34

☆

AND HE WILL BLESS YOU WITH BLESSINGS FROM HEAVEN ABOVE, WITH BLESSINGS FROM THE DEEP THAT LIES BELOW... GENESIS 49:25

☆

FOR A FIRE HAS BEEN KINDLED IN MY ANGER AND WILL BURN TO THE LOWEST SHEOL, AND IT WILL CONSUME THE EARTH AND ITS PRODUCE AND SET ABLAZE THE FOUNDATIONS OF THE MOUNTAINS... DEUTERONOMY 32:22

☆

FOR THE REALM OF HELL IS NOT ON EARTH. WISDOM 1:14

☆

EVERYTHING THAT JEHOVAH DELIGHTS IN, HE DOES, IN THE HEAVENS AND ON THE EARTH, IN THE SEAS AND IN ALL DEPTHS ... PSALM 135:6

☆

ASK FOR A SIGN FROM THE LORD YOUR GOD, WHETHER IT IS BELOW IN THE DEPTHS OR ABOVE IN THE HEIGHTS. ISAIAH 7:11

☆

THE DEPTHS TREMBLED BEFORE YOU AS YOU APPROACHED THEM. THEY AWAKEN THE DEAD FOR YOU, ALL THE MIGHTY ONES OF THE WORLD, AND COMMAND ALL THE KINGS OF THE NATIONS TO RISE FROM THEIR THRONES. YES, YOU WILL DESCEND TO THE DEPTHS, TO THE LOWEST PIT ... ISAIAH 14:9, 15

☆

AND YOU, CAPERNAUM, WHO HAVE BEEN EXALTED TO HEAVEN, WILL BE BROUGHT DOWN TO HADES ...

MATTHEW 11:23

☆

AND THEY BEGGED HIM NOT TO COMMAND THEM TO GO INTO THE ABYSS. LUKE 8:31

☆

WHO WILL DESCEND INTO THE ABYSS ... ROMANS 10:7

☆

THEN THE KING SAID TO THE SERVANTS: BIND HIS FEET AND HANDS, AND THROW HIM OUT INTO THE OUTER DARKNESS; THERE WILL BE WEEPING AND GNASHING OF TEETH ... MATTHEW 22:13

☆

FOR IF GOD DID NOT SPARE THE ANGELS WHO SINNED, BUT CAST THEM DOWN TO THE DEEPEST ABYSS, DELIVERING THEM INTO CHAINS OF DARKNESS TO BE RESERVED FOR JUDGMENT ... 2 PETER 2:4

☆

AND THE ANGELS WHO DID NOT KEEP THEIR PROPER DOMAIN, BUT LEFT THEIR OWN ABODE, HE HAS RESERVED IN EVERLASTING CHAINS UNDER DARKNESS FOR THE JUDGMENT OF THE GREAT DAY ... JUDE 6

☆

THAT AT THE NAME OF JESUS EVERY KNEE SHOULD BOW, OF THOSE IN HEAVEN AND ON EARTH AND UNDER THE EARTH ... PHILIPPIANS 2:10

☆

AND NO ONE IN HEAVEN, NOR ON EARTH, NOR UNDER THE EARTH WAS ABLE TO OPEN THE BOOK OR EVEN LOOK AT IT... REV. 5:3

☆

AND EVERY CREATURE THAT IS IN HEAVEN AND ON EARTH AND UNDER THE EARTH AND IN THE SEA, AND ALL THAT IS IN THEM... REV. 5:13

☆

BESIDES THESE STATEMENTS OF SCRIPTURE, WE RECOGNIZE FROM OTHER PASSAGES INSIGHTFUL CONNECTIONS THAT WERE ALREADY MENTIONED IN THE FIRST EDITION OF THE BOOK 'THE UNIVERSE OF THE BIBLE.' THEY SHOULD BE ADDRESSED AGAIN HERE BECAUSE THEY ARE SO IMPORTANT. ACCORDING TO EPH. 1:4 (AND OTHER SCRIPTURES), WE ARE CHOSEN IN HIM BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD. WHAT LUTHER TRANSLATED AS 'FOUNDATION' MEANS IN THE GREEK LANGUAGE OF INSPIRATION OF THE NEW TESTAMENT: KATABOLA, WHICH ACTUALLY TRANSLATES TO: THROWING DOWN, DOWNFALL. IT PRIMARILY BELONGS TO MEDICAL GREEK AND REFERS TO THE DISCHARGE OF SEED FROM THE OVARIES, AS KNOCH EMPHASIZES IN HIS KEYWORD CONCORDANCE TO THE NEW TESTAMENT. WE ALSO FIND THIS EXPRESSION KATABOLA USED IN THE SAME SENSE IN HEB. 11:11: 'BY FAITH, SARAH HERSELF RECEIVED STRENGTH TO CONCEIVE SEED, AND SHE BORE A CHILD WHEN SHE WAS PAST THE AGE...' THIS THROWING DOWN OF THE MATURE EGG IN THE FALLOPIAN TUBE, WHEN APPLIED TO COSMIC DIMENSIONS, IS LIKELY WHAT IS REPORTED IN GENESIS 1:2 WITH THE WORDS: AND THE EARTH WAS WITHOUT FORM AND VOID. THE CARRIER OF THIS COSMIC EGG THAT FELL IS CHRIST, WHO ACCORDING TO REV. 1:8 AND COL. 1:18 IS THE BEGINNING, NOT JUST THE END. IN THE BEGINNING, GOD CREATED THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH, MEANING IN CHRIST. ACCORDING TO HEB. 1:3, CHRIST UPHOLDS ALL THINGS; WE MAY, INDEED MUST, UNDERSTAND THIS SPATIALLY. JUST AS THE EGG IS IN THE MOTHER AND IS CARRIED AND NURTURED BY HER, WHICH IS WHY PREGNANCY IS ALSO REFERRED TO AS 'TRÄCHTIGKEIT' IN GERMAN, SO CHRIST CARRIES THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE WITHIN HIMSELF. THE WORD OF GOD THUS ANSWERS THE UNDERSTANDABLE, CURIOUS QUESTION: WHAT WOULD BE OUTSIDE THEN? WITH THE SINGLE WORD: CHRIST, RIGHT FROM THE FIRST WORD OF THE BIBLE! WE KNOW HOW OFTEN PAUL SPEAKS OF BEING 'IN CHRIST,' EMPHASIZING THAT THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE WAS CREATED IN HIM AND HAS ITS EXISTENCE IN HIM. IN GOD'S CREATION, EVERYTHING INTERWEAVES, CREATING AND BEING BORN, LIKE THE WHEELS OF THE CHARIOT IN EZEKIEL 1:16. AND THE MOST PERFECT FIGURATIVE REPRESENTATION OF THIS LAW OF INTERCONNECTION AND BIRTH IS THE HOLLOW SPHERE OR EGG, IN WHICH LIFE CONTINUALLY MATURES UNTIL IT...

THE ABILITY TO BREAK THROUGH BARRIERS. (HEAVEN IS WITHIN THE EARTH, BUT THE EARTH IS OUTSIDE OF HEAVEN!) THIS BREAKING OF BARRIERS IS HINTED AT BY PETER WHEN HE WRITES THAT THE HEAVENS WILL DISSOLVE WITH A GREAT NOISE AND THE EARTH WILL BURN (2 PETER 3:10). BUT CHRIST IS NOT ONLY EXTERNAL AND BEARS IT; HE HAS ALSO ENTERED INTO THE COSMIC EGG AS THE LIFE SEED FROM GOD, FERTILIZING THIS EGG. THIS FERTILIZATION TOOK PLACE FROM BETHLEHEM TO GOLGOTHA. 'IN HIM WAS LIFE, AND THAT LIFE WAS THE LIGHT OF MEN. AND THE LIGHT SHINES IN THE DARKNESS...' (JOHN 1:4-5). THERE CAME ONE WHO 'BORE WITNESS' TO THE LIGHT... HE WAS IN THE WORLD, AND THE WORLD WAS MADE THROUGH HIM. (JUST AS THE EGG IS THROUGH THE MOTHER.) HE CAME TO HIS OWN... THUS, GOD LOVED THE WORLD BY GIVING HIS ONLY BEGOTTEN SON TO THIS WORLD (JOHN 3:16). WE KNOW HOW SCRIPTURE, ESPECIALLY PAUL'S LETTERS, TELLS US THAT CHRIST IS THE BELOVED OF GOD (EPHESIANS 1:6). GOD WOULD BE (TO USE THE SIMPLEST IMAGE OF OUR FALLEN EARTHLY LIFE) THE MAN, CHRIST THE (TAKEN OUT OF GOD) WOMAN, THE RECIPIENT FROM GOD (JOHN 8:28). IN RELATION TO THE CHURCH, CHRIST IS AGAIN THE MAN, THE GIVER, WHILE SHE IS THE RECEIVER. THUS, THE SECOND ADAM IS AGAIN MALE-FEMALE, LIKE THE FIRST ADAM BEFORE THE FALL, ONLY PERFECT. IN RELATION TO THE BRIDE CHURCH, THE BODY CHURCH IS AGAIN THE MALE GIVER, WHILE SHE IS THE RECEIVING, FEMININE PRINCIPLE. THIS THEN BECOMES THE GIVING, MASCULINE PRINCIPLE IN RELATION TO THE WORLD. THUS, ONE EMERGES FROM THE OTHER AND INTO THE OTHER, IN A DEVELOPMENTAL, BIRTH-LIKE, LIFE-LIKE MANNER, NOT ORGANIZED, BUT ORGANIC. A SPHERE CONTINUALLY ENCLOSED BY ANOTHER SPHERE! THE WORLD BENEATH THE EARTH, THE REALM OF DEATH AND HELL, CONSISTS OF TWO PARTS SEPARATED BY AN UNBRIDGEABLE CHASM (LUKE 16:26). THE ONE, BETTER PLACE IS LIKELY THE OUTER SIDE OF THE EARTH'S SHELL, WHICH IS ENVELOPED IN WATER AND CLOUD DARKNESS ACCORDING TO JOB 38. THE OTHER, WORSE AND DEEPER PART IS THE OPPOSITE SHELL, THUS SOMEWHAT THE PARALLEL FLOOR OF THE EARTH. IN THIS ABYSSAL WORLD, NO SUN SEEMS TO SHINE ANYMORE. THE LAWLESS, WHO ACCORDING TO JOB 38:13 WERE CAST AWAY FROM THE EDGES OF THE EARTH INTO THE REALM OF THE DEAD (ELBERFELDER NOTE), HAVE HAD THEIR LIGHT TAKEN AWAY ACCORDING TO JOB 38:15. THERE BENEATH THE EARTH'S SHELL ARE ALSO THE 'FOUNTAINS OF THE SEA' AND THE 'DEPTHS OF THE ABYSS' (JOB 38:16), AS WELL AS THE GATES OF DEATH AND THE GATES OF THE SHADOW OF DEATH. WHEN GOD (JOB 38:12-13) HIMSELF REPORTS THAT HE HAS SHAKEN THE UNGODLY OUT OF THE FIRST EARTHLY LAND...

THIS CAN ONLY BE UNDERSTOOD CORRECTLY, THAT IS, LITERALLY, WITHIN THE FRAMEWORK OF THE HOLLOW EARTH THEORY, AS HERE THE EARTH CAN HAVE AN OPENING TO THE ALSO HOLLOW UNDERGROUND, NAMELY THE 'GATES' OF HELL AND DEATH OR THE 'BOTTOMLESS PIT' (REVELATION 9:1). HERE IS ALSO THE 'OUTER DARKNESS' OR THE 'DARKNESS OUTSIDE' THAT THE LORD JESUS REFERS TO IN MATTHEW 22:13 AND 25:30. THE WORD 'OUTER' HAS ITS ORIGINAL SPATIAL MEANING, RELATED TO A CENTER, ONLY IN THE HOLLOW EARTH CONCEPT. ISAIAH 14 REPORTS THAT THROUGH THE ENTRANCE OF THE ANTICHRIST INTO THE UNDERWORLD, THE ONCE CAST-OUT PREHISTORIC HUMANS (GIANTS), WHO ARE BURIED UNDERGROUND, WILL BE RESURRECTED. JUST AS THE 'INSIDE' OF CREATION IS REFERRED TO AS HEAVEN IN THE FIRST CHAPTER OF THE BIBLE, THE 'OUTSIDE' IS DECLARED AS HELL IN THE LAST CHAPTER OF THE BIBLE. THE SHORTEST STAY IN THE REALM OF THE DEAD UNDERGROUND WAS EXPERIENCED BY THE REPENTANT THIEF, AS HE WAS THE LAST TO WITNESS THE INVISIBLE TRIUMPHAL PROCESSION OF THE RELEASE OF THE RIGHTEOUS FROM THE UNDERWORLD OF ABRAHAM'S BOSOM INTO THE PARADISE OF THE HEAVENLY SKY. WHEN WE LOOK UP FROM ANY POINT ON OUR EARTH TOWARDS THE SAPPHIRE-BLUE OUTER CELESTIAL SPHERE, THROUGH WHICH A STEPHEN WAS GIVEN A GLIMPSE INTO THE THIRD HEAVEN, TO THE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE, TO RECOGNIZE THE SAVIOR, THE RENEWED SURFACE OF THE EARTH WILL LIKELY ALLOW US A VIEW TO THE OPPOSITE SIDE OF THE EARTH AFTER THE FIRST HEAVENLY WALL IS ROLLED BACK. THE RESURRECTION OF THE LORD IS INCOMPREHENSIBLE WITHIN THE HELIOCENTRIC, SCIENTIFIC WORLDVIEW. ACCORDING TO MATTHEW 12:40, THE SON OF MAN HAD TO BE THREE DAYS AND THREE NIGHTS IN THE HEART OF THE EARTH. ACCORDING TO JESUS' WORDS ON THE CROSS, THE THIEF WOULD BE WITH HIM IN PARADISE THAT VERY DAY. THIS PARADISE WAS UNDOUBTEDLY ABOVE, NEAR THE SUN. FOR ON THE FALLEN EARTH, PARADISE CAN NO LONGER BE FOUND ANYWHERE. IT IS CERTAINLY NOT UNDERGROUND EITHER. THEREFORE, IT CAN ONLY BE ABOVE IN THE HEAVENLY SKY TODAY. THE HEART OF A MATTER IS NOT ALWAYS THE GEOMETRIC CENTER, BUT THE HEART IS THE POINT FROM WHICH LIFE (OR THE SOUL) EMANATES. THUS, OUR SUN IS THE HEART OF THE EARTH. AND IN THIS HEART, THE LORD WAS FROM DEATH ON THE CROSS UNTIL HIS RESURRECTION. THAT IS WHY THE SUN LOST ITS SHINE AT HIS CRUCIFIXION; IT WAS LIKELY A TRIBUTE TO THE INCOMING NEW KING. AND WHEN THE LORD JESUS RETURNS, IT WILL AGAIN BE ANNOUNCED BY SIGNS IN THE SUN AND OTHER CELESTIAL BODIES (MATTHEW 24:29). (QUOTED FROM WOLFRAM-KIERSPE.)

THE RESURRECTION FROM THE GRAVE HAS LED PEOPLE TO ASSUME THAT CHRIST CAME FROM THE DEPTHS OF THE EARTH, WHERE HE SPENT THOSE THREE DAYS. HOWEVER, HE CAME FROM ABOVE, FROM HIS FATHER AND OUR FATHER, TO WHOM HE WENT, ACCORDING TO HIS OWN WORDS, THROUGH THE CRUCIFIXION. AT THE CROSS, HE ALSO ENTRUSTED HIS SPIRIT INTO HIS FATHER'S HANDS, WHICH ARE INDEED ABOVE, NOT BENEATH THE EARTH. ACCORDING TO JOHN 14, THE LORD JESUS WENT TO HIS FATHER'S HOUSE TO PREPARE A PLACE FOR HIS OWN. THIS PLACE, THE MANY ROOMS IN THE HOUSE OF GOD THE FATHER, IS NATURALLY ABOVE IN THE LIGHT, NOT UNDER THE EARTH, IN THE DARKNESS OF SEPARATION FROM GOD. THEREFORE, JESUS' RESURRECTION WOULD HAVE BEEN HIS FIRST RETURN. SINCE THEN, HE HAS ALWAYS BEEN PRESENT WITH US UNTIL THE END OF THE WORLD. HE HAS BEEN LIFTED UP FROM THE EARTH. HE SAID (JOHN 8:21): WHERE I GO, YOU CANNOT COME! BECAUSE HE ASCENDED TO HEAVEN, TO PARADISE AFTER HIS CRUCIFIXION, HIS ENEMIES COULD NOT FOLLOW, AS THEY COULD ONLY ENTER THE UNDERWORLD THROUGH DEATH. WHEN THE GRAVES OPENED AFTER HIS DEATH AND MANY BODIES OF THE BELIEVERS EMERGED, THIS EVENT WAS ALSO CONNECTED TO THE RELOCATION OF THE BLESSED PART OF THE UNDERWORLD FROM BELOW TO THE AIR REGION. THE PREACHING TO THE SPIRITS OF THE DISOBEDIENT FROM THE DAYS OF NOAH IN PRISON CAN REFER TO BOTH THE TIME FROM THE CROSS TO THE RESURRECTION AND THE EARTHLY TIME AFTER THE RESURRECTION. IN THIS ABYSSAL UNDERWORLD OUTSIDE THE EARTH'S CRUST, SATAN WILL BE LOCKED AWAY DURING THE THOUSAND-YEAR REIGN. THUS, SATAN WOULD LITERALLY BE 'UNDER' THE FEET OF MEN (ROMANS 16:20). IN EXODUS 20:4 IT SAYS: 'YOU SHALL NOT MAKE FOR YOURSELF A CARVED IMAGE, OR ANY LIKENESS OF ANYTHING THAT IS IN HEAVEN ABOVE, OR ON THE EARTH BENEATH, OR IN THE WATER UNDER THE EARTH.' THAT IS WHY IT IS SAID THAT THE EARTH IS FOUNDED UPON WATER. (THE EGG IS SURROUNDED BY AMNIOTIC FLUID BEFORE BIRTH!) IT IS THE WATERS OF THE DEEP THAT SURGED FORTH DURING THE FLOOD. IN THIS UNDERGROUND WORLD, WHICH MUST EXTEND ALL AROUND OUR ABOVE-GROUND WORLD, THERE IS LIKELY A SPECIFIC DWELLING PLACE FOR EVERY NATION; HENCE, IN THE OLD TESTAMENT, THE PHRASE 'AND WAS GATHERED TO HIS PEOPLE' IS OFTEN MENTIONED AT DEATH. THIS IS THE LAND OF SHADOWS, THE REPHAIM, THE POWERLESS, IN CONTRAST TO OUR EARTHLY REALM, WHERE WE LIVE IN THE BODY, WHICH IS REFERRED TO IN SCRIPTURE AS THE 'LAND OF THE LIVING.' ALSO, SPATIALLY, THE EARTHLY WORLD CORRESPONDS IN THAT THE WORLDS BECOME 'LARGER' THE FURTHER THEY ARE FROM THE CENTER, WHILE THE WORLDS ARE CLOSER TO THE CENTER.

THEY BECOME 'SMALLER'. THEY ALSO DON'T NEED MUCH SPACE, AS THE MASSES LIVE IN THE OUTER WORLDS, ESPECIALLY IN THE UNDERGROUND WORLD AND ITS DUNGEONS.

ELEVEN REALMS OF THE DEAD. ADOLF HELLER CONDUCTED A THOROUGH INVESTIGATION AND COMPILATION OF THE SCRIPTURAL STATEMENTS ABOUT THE SPACES BENEATH THE EARTH. HE FOUND ELEVEN REALMS OF THE DEAD AND PRISONS: 1. HADES (HEBREW: SHEOL), 2. TARTARUS, 3. ABYSS, 4. PIT, 5. PRISON, 6. DUNGEON, 7. DEATH, 8. THE LOWER PARTS OF THE EARTH, 9. THE SEA, 10. GEHENNA, 11. LAKE OF FIRE. THE REALM OF THE DEAD, REPRESENTED IN GREEK AS HADES AND IN HEBREW AS SHEOL, HAS GATES AND SEALS. ACCORDING TO PROVERBS 7:27, THERE ARE 'CHAMBERS OF DEATH' THERE. PSALM 86:13 SPEAKS OF THE 'LOWEST SHEOL'. NO ONE CAN RISE FROM SHEOL BY THEIR OWN STRENGTH (JOB 7:9). THE HEAVENS ARE ON HIGH, SHEOL BELONGS TO THE DEPTHS (JOB 11:8). FOR GOD, SHEOL IS NAKED AND WITHOUT COVERING (PSALM 139:8), FOR GOD CAN SEE THROUGH THE EARTH. SHEOL DEVOURS EVERYTHING LIKE A MOUTH (ISAIAH 5:14). IT WOULD BE VISIBLE IF ONE WERE TO CUT AND SPLIT THE EARTH (PSALM 141:7). IT HAS VARIOUS DEPTHS THAT ARE INSATIABLE (PROVERBS 9:18; 27:20). ISAIAH 14:9-17 PROVIDES A REPORT ON WHAT HAPPENS IN SHEOL. THERE, THE SHADOWS OF THE MIGHTY OF THE EARTH ARE STIRRED, AND THEY RISE FROM THEIR THRONES BECAUSE THE SHADOW OF LUCIFER HIMSELF DESCENDS: 'YOU TOO HAVE BECOME POWERLESS LIKE US, YOU HAVE BECOME LIKE US. YOUR SPLENDOR HAS FALLEN INTO SHEOL, THE SOUND OF YOUR HARPS. MAGGOTS ARE SPREAD BENEATH YOU, WORMS ARE YOUR COVERING. HOW YOU HAVE FALLEN FROM HEAVEN, O SHINING STAR, SON OF THE MORNING! YOU HAVE BEEN CAST DOWN TO THE EARTH, YOU WHO ONCE LAID LOW THE NATIONS! AND YOU SAID IN YOUR HEART: I WILL ASCEND TO HEAVEN; I WILL RAISE MY THRONE ABOVE THE STARS OF GOD; I WILL SIT ENTHRONED ON THE MOUNT OF ASSEMBLY, ON THE UTMOST HEIGHTS OF MOUNT ZAPHON. I WILL ASCEND ABOVE THE TOPS OF THE CLOUDS; I WILL MAKE MYSELF LIKE THE MOST HIGH.' THE 'KING OF BABYLON' IS CAST INTO THE DEEPEST PIT OF THE REALM OF THE DEAD, INDICATING THAT THERE ARE DIFFERENT DEPTHS AND PITS. EXISTENCE IS POWERLESS BECAUSE THE BODY IS ABSENT; INSTEAD OF THE FLESHLY SPLENDOR OF OLD, MAGGOTS AND WORMS ARE NOW THE SURROUNDINGS. THE SHADOWS SEE EACH OTHER AND CONVERSE.

IN HES. 31:15, WE TRACE THE ARRIVAL OF THE KING OF EGYPT IN SHEOL: 'THEY WENT DOWN WITH HIM (THE NATIONS WITH THE KING OF EGYPT) TO SHEOL, TO THOSE SLAIN BY THE SWORD, WHO SAT AS HIS HELPERS IN HIS SHADOW AMONG THE NATIONS.' IN HOSEA 13:14, THE PROPHET COMFORTS: 'I WILL REDEEM THEM FROM THE POWER OF SHEOL; I WILL FREE THEM FROM DEATH. WHERE, O DEATH, ARE YOUR PLAGUES? WHERE, O SHEOL, IS YOUR DESTRUCTION?' SHEOL IS ALWAYS BELOW; IT IS A DESCENT FROM THE EARTH AND, OF COURSE, EVEN MORE SO FROM THE PERSPECTIVE OF HEAVEN. THE BIBLE ASSUMES QUITE NATURALLY THAT SHEOL IS A SPACE. AMOS 9:2-4A STATES: 'IF THEY DIG INTO SHEOL, FROM THERE MY HAND WILL TAKE THEM; AND IF THEY ASCEND TO HEAVEN, I WILL BRING THEM DOWN FROM THERE...' FOR JONAH (2:2-7), THE BELLY OF THE WHALE WAS SHEOL AND A PIT; HIS STAY IN THE FISH'S BELLY HAD A SHEOL-LIKE CHARACTER BECAUSE HE WAS CUT OFF FROM ALL SURROUNDINGS AND COULD NOT ESCAPE BY HIS OWN STRENGTH. THE INHABITANTS OF SHEOL OR HADES WILL ONE DAY, ACCORDING TO REVELATION 6:8, LEAVE THEIR PLACES UNDERGROUND AND FOLLOW DEATH ON THE PALE HORSE TO THE EARTH. TARTARUS IS EVEN DEEPER THAN SHEOL AND IS ALWAYS ASSOCIATED WITH THE VERB 'TO DESCEND.' 'FOR IF GOD DID NOT SPARE ANGELS WHO SINNED, BUT CAST THEM DOWN TO THE DEEPEST TARTARUS, DELIVERING THEM INTO CHAINS OF DARKNESS, TO BE RESERVED FOR JUDGMENT...' (2 PETER 2:4). THIS 'DOWN' IS FURTHER EMPHASIZED IN JUDE 6, WHERE IT STATES THAT THE ANGELS WHO LEFT THEIR DWELLING ARE KEPT WITH CHAINS OF HADES UNDER DARKNESS. THIS 'UNDER' WAS SO EXTRAORDINARY TO KNOCHEN THAT HE DID NOT TRANSLATE IT BUT REPLACED IT WITH THE PALE EXPRESSION 'IN DARKNESS,' WHILE THE ELBERFELDER BIBLE TRANSLATES IT ACCURATELY AS 'UNDER DARKNESS.' IT REMINDS US OF JESUS' WORDS ABOUT THE OUTER DARKNESS, CONFIRMING THAT OUTSIDE IS THE SAME AS BELOW. THEREFORE, THERE IS A SPECIAL, DEFINED SPHERE OF DARKNESS BENEATH THE EARTH, UNDER WHICH THERE ARE FURTHER SPACES OR SPHERES. WHAT IS ALL BENEATH OUR FEET AND UNDER THE EARTH ON WHICH WE LIVE! IN THE DREADFUL DARK PRISONS OF TARTARUS, THE FALLEN ANGELIC PRINCES OR SONS OF GOD FROM GENESIS 6:2 MUST WAIT FOR THE GREAT DAY OF JUDGMENT, WHICH WILL BE EXECUTED BY US, THE BODY OF CHRIST, FOR WE WILL JUDGE ANGELS AND THE COSMOS! (1 CORINTHIANS 6:2-3.) THE GREEKS WERE NOT ENTIRELY WRONG WHEN THEY REPORTED THAT DEEP BENEATH HADES LIES THE PRISON OF THE TITANS WHO ONCE REBELLED AGAINST GOD.

THE ABYSS WAS AN UNFATHOMABLE, BOTTOMLESS CHASM FOR THE GREEKS. IN THE NEW TESTAMENT, THIS TERM APPEARS NINE TIMES, ALONGSIDE LUKE 8:31 AND ROMANS 10:7, PRIMARILY IN REVELATION. THE DEMONS FEAR BEING CAST INTO THE ABYSS. CHRIST ALSO DESCENDED INTO THIS ABYSS. FOR ROMANS 10:7 STATES: WHO WILL DESCEND INTO THE ABYSS, THAT IS, TO BRING CHRIST UP FROM THE DEAD? THE LORD WAS UNDOUBTEDLY IN ALL THE REALMS OF THE DEAD BENEATH THE EARTH, FOR HE HOLDS THE KEYS OF DEATH AND THE GRAVE (REVELATION 1:18). THE KING OF THE ABYSS IS CALLED ABADDON IN HEBREW AND APOLLYON IN GREEK, MEANING DESTROYER OR TOTAL DISSOLVER. CLOSELY RELATED TO APOLLYON IS THE VERB APOLLUMI, WHICH MEANS TO PERISH, TO BE DESTROYED, TO DISSOLVE COMPLETELY. LUTHER TRANSLATES THIS WORD AS 'TO LOSE.' THE SON OF MAN HAS COME TO SEEK WHAT IS LOST, MEANING THAT WHICH HAS FALLEN INTO TOTAL DISSOLUTION OF PERSONALITY–BODY, SOUL, AND SPIRIT–IN THE ABYSS. THIS TOTAL DISSOLUTION CORRESPONDS TO THE SECOND DEATH. IT IS MORE THAN THE FIRST DEATH. THEREFORE, THE FATHER OF THE PRODIGAL SON SAYS: THIS MY SON WAS DEAD AND IS ALIVE AGAIN; HE WAS LOST AND IS FOUND. FROM THE PIT OR ABYSS OF THE ABYSS, THE BEAST WILL RISE IN THE END TIMES (REVELATION 11:7), AND SATAN WILL BE LOCKED IN THE ABYSS DURING THE THOUSAND-YEAR REIGN (REVELATION 20:1, 3). ACCORDING TO JOB 28:22, THIS ABYSS HAS ONLY HEARD A RUMOR OF GOD'S WISDOM. THIS WISDOM OF GOD IS TO BE REPRESENTED BY THE CHURCH, SO THAT THESE POWERS OF DARKNESS CAN READ IT FROM HER (EPHESIANS 3:10). HABAKKUK 3:10 REPORTS HOW DEEPLY THE DEPTHS LONG FOR THE HEIGHTS AND THUS FOR GOD: 'THE DEEP LIFTED UP ITS VOICE; IT RAISED ITS HANDS ON HIGH.' BECAUSE THE ANTICHRIST RISES FROM THE ABYSS, HE IS ALSO CALLED 'THE SON OF PERDITION' (2 THESSALONIANS 2:3). 'I HAVE CREATED THE DESTROYER TO DESTROY' (ISAIAH 54:16). THE PIT IS NOT MERELY THE GRAVE, BUT ANOTHER DWELLING PLACE IN THE DEPTHS. THERE ARE VARIOUS DEEP PITS ON EARTH, WHICH ARE A REFLECTION OF THE DIFFERENT DEEP PITS BENEATH THE EARTH. 'YOU HAVE LAID ME IN THE LOWEST PIT, IN DARKNESS, IN THE DEPTHS...' (PSALM 88:6). HERE WE HAVE THE DEEPEST PIT, SO THERE ARE ALSO DEEP AND DEEPER ONES. PSALM 103:2-4 THANKS GOD THAT OUR LIFE IS REDEEMED FROM THE PIT. EZEKIEL 32 SHOWS US WHO WILL ONCE BE IN THE LOWEST PLACES OF THE EARTH, IN THE PIT: 'SON OF MAN, TAKE UP A LAMENTATION FOR THE MULTITUDE OF EGYPT, AND CAST THEM DOWN, THEM AND THE DAUGHTERS OF THE GLORIOUS NATIONS, TO THE LOWEST PLACES OF THE EARTH.'

THOSE WHO HAVE GONE DOWN INTO THE PIT... BRING EGYPT AND ALL ITS MULTITUDE HERE. FROM THE MIDST OF SHEOL, THE MIGHTY SPEAK OF HIM... THERE IS ASSYRIA... THERE IS ELAM... THEY BEAR THEIR SHAME AMONG THOSE WHO HAVE GONE DOWN INTO THE PIT... THERE IS MESHECH-TUBAL AND ALL ITS MULTITUDE... THERE IS EDOM... THERE ARE THE PRINCES OF THE NORTH ALTOGETHER... THE PHARAOH WILL SEE THEM AND TAKE COMFORT (VERSES 18-31). A WHOLE SERIES OF GODLESS NATIONS THAT OPPRESSED ISRAEL DWELL IN THOSE CHAMBERS OF DEATH. THEY ARE NOT UNCONSCIOUS, BUT THEY SEE AND HEAR EACH OTHER, SPEAK, AND BEAR THEIR SHAME. THERE DWELL ENTIRE NATIONS WITH THEIR PRINCES. THE PRISON BECOMES EVIDENT FROM A COMPARISON OF PS. 68:18 WITH EPH. 4:8-10. THE LORD HAS LED CAPTIVITY CAPTIVE IN HIS DESCENT AND ASCENT. IN THE PRISON, THERE ARE DIVISIONS FOR SPIRIT POWERS AND OTHER DIVISIONS FOR DEPARTED HUMAN SPIRITS. WHERE THE WORD 'SPIRITS' APPEARS ALONE IN SCRIPTURE, IT REFERS NOT TO HUMAN SPIRITS, BUT ALWAYS TO ANGELS AND SPIRITUAL BEINGS OUTSIDE THE HUMAN REALM. HOWEVER, WHERE THERE ARE ADDITIONS, SUCH AS IN HEB. 12:23 (SPIRITS OF THE PERFECTED RIGHTEOUS), IT REFERS TO SPIRITS OF HUMANS. IN 1 PETER 3:19, WHERE IT IS REPORTED THAT THE LORD PROCLAIMED TO THE SPIRITS IN PRISON (I.E., DECLARED HIMSELF AS THE VICTOR), IT PRIMARILY CONCERNS THE SPIRITS OF THE SONS OF GOD WHO DESCENDED FROM HEAVEN BEFORE THE FLOOD AND MINGLED WITH HUMANS, AS NOTED IN GENESIS 6. ALSO, IN ZECHARIAH 9:11-12, THE UNDERGROUND PRISON IS UNDOUBTEDLY REFERENCED: 'FOR THE BLOOD OF YOUR COVENANT, I WILL ALSO RELEASE YOUR PRISONERS FROM THE PIT WHERE THERE IS NO WATER. RETURN TO THE FORTRESS, YOU PRISONERS OF HOPE! TODAY I DECLARE THAT I WILL RESTORE TO YOU DOUBLE.' THE PIT WITHOUT (LIFE) WATER IS EITHER THE REALM OF THE DEAD IN GENERAL OR IT IS WITHIN THE REALM OF THE DEAD. THE MOST TERRIBLE AND LONGEST CAPTIVITY, OF WHICH THE PRISONS ON EARTH ARE ONLY WEAK REPRESENTATIONS, IS IN THE REALMS OF THE DEAD, WHERE DEATH, THE MOST DREADFUL AND POWERFUL SERVANT AND SUBORDINATE OF SATAN, SHEPHERDS THE DEAD AS A FALSE, UNTRUE SHEPHERD UNTIL THEIR FORM, I.E., THEIR BEAUTY OR PRIDE, IS CONSUMED (PS. 49:14). WHEN THE PRISON OF THE REALM OF THE DEAD MUST RELEASE ITS PRISONERS, IT WILL BE, IN OTHER WORDS, A RESURRECTION. 'TO SAY TO THE PRISONERS: GO FORTH! AND TO THOSE WHO ARE IN DARKNESS: COME TO THE LIGHT!' (ISA. 49:8-9). THE PRISONERS DO NOT REMAIN ENDLESSLY IN THEIR PRISONS, NEITHER ON EARTH NOR BENEATH THE EARTH. THE LAST ENEMY, WHO...

WHAT IS ULTIMATELY DISMISSED IS DEATH, AND WITH IT, EVERY PRISON WILL EVENTUALLY CEASE TO EXIST! 'GOD... LEADS PRISONERS OUT INTO HAPPINESS' (PS. 68:8). THE DUNGEON IS A MORE SEVERE PRISON. THE DISTINCTION BETWEEN THE TWO EXISTS EVEN UNDERGROUND, AS SHOWN IN ISAIAH 42:6, 7, 22: '... TO BRING PRISONERS OUT OF THE DUNGEON AND FROM THE PRISON... IT IS A ROBBED AND PLUNDERED PEOPLE, THEY ARE BOUND IN HOLES AND ALL HIDDEN IN DUNGEONS...' HERE, ISRAEL IS PRIMARILY MEANT. HOWEVER, THE TERM ALSO REFERS NOT ONLY TO ISRAEL'S EARTHLY PRISONS AMONG THE NATIONS DURING THE TIME OF DISPERSION BUT ALSO TO THOSE BEINGS WHO ARE IMPRISONED NOT ABOVE BUT BENEATH THE EARTH. FOR ACCORDING TO ISAIAH 24:21, 22, NOT ONLY 'THE KINGS OF THE EARTH ON THE EARTH' BUT ALSO 'THE RULERS OF THE HEIGHTS IN THE HEIGHTS... WILL BE PUNISHED WITH PLAGUES' AND NOT ONLY AS PRISONERS IN THE PIT AND IN PRISON BUT ALSO 'CONFINED IN THE DUNGEON.' THESE 'RULERS OF THE HEIGHTS IN THE HEIGHTS' ARE NOT HUMANS BUT ANGELIC AND SPIRITUAL BEINGS. THEY CANNOT BE CONFINED IN EARTHLY DUNGEONS; FOR THEM, THE DUNGEONS ARE ESTABLISHED IN THE DEPTHS OF DARKNESS BENEATH THE EARTH. PSALM 107:10-16 ALSO BELONGS HERE. DEATH IS SEPARATION FROM GOD AT VARIOUS LEVELS. ACCORDING TO SCRIPTURE, DEATH IS PRIMARILY A TERRIFYING PERSONALITY, A POWERFUL ANGELIC PRINCE, THE STRONGEST SUBORDINATE OF SATAN. DEATH IS PART OF THE RANKS OF PRINCES AND POWERS, AUTHORITIES, AND WORLD RULERS OF THIS DARKNESS (EPH. 6:12). CONSIDER ALSO HEBREWS 2:14; REVELATION 20:14; 1 CORINTHIANS 15:54, 55. IN GETHSEMANE, THE LORD WRESTLED WITH DEATH. ADDITIONALLY, SCRIPTURE SPEAKS OF REALMS OF DARKNESS AS DEATH. SPACE BELONGS TO THE PERSON! ACCORDING TO REVELATION 20:13, THREE DIFFERENT REALMS OF THE DEAD WILL GIVE UP THE DEAD WITHIN THEM TO BE JUDGED ACCORDING TO THEIR WORKS: THE SEA, DEATH, AND HADES. THE LATTER TWO, DEATH AND HADES, WILL EVENTUALLY BE THROWN INTO THE SECOND DEATH, THE LAKE OF FIRE. ULTIMATELY, HOWEVER, DEATH AS THE LAST ENEMY WILL BE ABOLISHED, AND AS A PERSONALITY AND AS A SPACE OR NUMBER OF DARK PLACES WILL NO LONGER EXIST, FOR THESE DARK REALMS BENEATH THE EARTH WILL BE PENETRATED BY THE LIGHT OF REDEMPTION, AND 'DEATH WILL BE NO MORE' (REVELATION 21:4). (PERHAPS BECAUSE THE EARTH WILL HAVE BEEN TRANSFORMED OR BECOME TRANSPARENT AND PERMEABLE TO LIGHT!) ACCORDING TO EPHESIANS 4:9, THE LORD DESCENDED INTO THE LOWER PARTS OF THE EARTH. 'HE WHO DESCENDED IS THE SAME ONE WHO ALSO ASCENDED ABOVE ALL HEAVENS, THAT HE MIGHT FILL ALL THINGS' (OTHERS...).

TO FILL THE UNIVERSE WITH HIS PRESENCE (EPH. 4:10). THE UNIVERSE ALSO INCLUDES THE OUTERMOST REALMS OF DARKNESS BENEATH THE EARTH. THEY TOO WILL ONE DAY SHINE IN THE LIGHT OF DIVINE CONNECTION. THE EARTH WILL FIRST COME INTO THIS LIGHT, FOLLOWED BY WHAT IS BENEATH IT. SOME INTERPRETERS BELIEVE THAT THE 'LOWEST PLACES OF THE EARTH' REFER TO THE DEPRESSIONS ON ITS SURFACE THAT LIE BELOW SEA LEVEL, SUCH AS THE DEAD SEA AND THE JORDAN RIFT. HOWEVER, THIS MAY BE AN OVERLY SIMPLISTIC VIEW OF THESE PLACES. IT IS CERTAINLY TRUE THAT THESE LOWEST PLACES STILL BELONG TO THE EARTH, NOT TO THE REALMS BENEATH IT. EZEKIEL 26:19-20A SPEAKS OF A MYSTERIOUS 'PEOPLE OF ANTIQUITY' IN THE LOWEST PLACES OF THE EARTH, 'IN THE RUINS FROM ANCIENT TIMES.' THESE LOWEST PLACES OF THE EARTH ARE REMINISCENT OF THE LOWEST SHEOL, WHERE THE WRATH OF GOD BURNS (DEUT. 32:22). IN THE LOWEST PLACES OF THE EARTH, SOULS ARE ALSO FORMED ACCORDING TO PSALM 139:16: 'YOUR EYES SAW MY UNFORMED SUBSTANCE; IN YOUR BOOK WERE WRITTEN EVERY ONE OF THEM, THE DAYS THAT WERE FORMED FOR ME, WHEN AS YET THERE WAS NONE OF THEM.' JEREMIAH 1:5 STATES: 'BEFORE I FORMED YOU IN THE WOMB, I KNEW YOU, AND BEFORE YOU WERE BORN, I CONSECRATED YOU...' THUS, THE BODY OF A PERSON IS FORMED IN THE WOMB, BUT THE SOUL, THEIR SELF, IS SHAPED IN SECRET IN THE LOWEST PLACES OF THE EARTH! THE SPIRIT, HOWEVER, COMES FROM GOD! AT THE DISSOLUTION OF A PERSON'S IDENTITY IN DEATH, THIS PROCESS REVERSES: THE BODY RETURNS TO THE EARTH FROM WHICH IT WAS MADE, THE SOUL GOES TO THE REALM OF THE DEAD, TO THE LOWEST PLACES OF THE EARTH, AND THE SPIRIT GOES TO GOD WHO GAVE IT. THE SEA IS REFERRED TO AS A SPECIAL CONTAINER FOR THE DEAD. HOWEVER, IT IS UNLIKELY TO REFER TO THE EARTHLY BODY OF WATER. FOR ACCORDING TO REVELATION 20:11, BOTH EARTH AND HEAVEN DISAPPEAR SO THOROUGHLY THAT NO PLACE IS FOUND FOR THEM. THEY SIMPLY NO LONGER EXIST. YET, TWO VERSES LATER, THE SEA, DEATH, AND HADES GIVE UP THE DEAD WHO ARE IN THEM. THEREFORE, THE SEA IS SOMETHING OTHER THAN THE SUM OF THE OCEANS ON EARTH. IT CANNOT REFER TO THE AIR EITHER, SINCE EARTH AND HEAVEN ARE GONE, ALONG WITH WATER AND AIR. THAT THIS SEA IS SOMETHING SPECIAL IS ALSO EVIDENT FROM PSALM 135:6: 'WHATEVER THE LORD PLEASES, HE DOES IN HEAVEN AND ON EARTH, IN THE SEAS AND ALL DEEPS.' IN PSALM 139, THE PSALMIST DESCRIBES THE INESCAPABLE OMNIPRESENCE OF GOD: '... IF I TAKE THE WINGS OF THE MORNING AND DWELL IN THE UTTERMOST PARTS OF THE SEA...'

THE SEA, THERE TOO YOUR HAND WOULD GUIDE ME AND YOUR RIGHT HAND WOULD HOLD ME. THIS OUTERMOST SEA REMINDS ONE OF THE UTMOST DARKNESS, OF THE LOWEST PLACES ON EARTH, AND OF THE DEEPEST PIT. OUTSIDE IS THE SAME AS BELOW, JUST AS ABOVE IS THE SAME AS WITHIN! IN SCRIPTURE, THE SEA IS ALSO USED TO REFER TO THE MULTITUDE OF PEOPLES. IN HEBREW, SEA AND PEOPLES ARE ESSENTIALLY THE SAME EXPRESSION. AND SINCE THE DEAD WERE ALWAYS GATHERED TO THEIR PEOPLE, WE KNOW THAT THERE ARE ALSO GREAT MULTITUDES OF PEOPLE BENEATH THE EARTH. WHETHER THEY ARE MEANT BY THE OUTERMOST SEA, WE DO NOT KNOW. BUT IN ANY CASE, IT IS A VAST CONTAINER FOR THE DEAD, WHICH IS VERY IMPORTANT, SO THAT REVELATION 20:13 EMPHASIZES: THE SEA GIVES UP THE DEAD THAT ARE IN IT. 'AND WHO SHUT UP THE SEA WITH DOORS WHEN IT BROKE FORTH, COMING OUT OF THE WOMB...?' (JOB 38:8) - 'HAVE YOU COME TO THE SPRINGS OF THE SEA, AND WALKED IN THE RECESSES OF THE DEEP?' (JOB 38:16) - 'AND GOD CALLED THE DRY LAND EARTH, AND THE GATHERING OF THE WATERS HE CALLED SEAS...' (GENESIS 1:10). THE WATERS THAT YOU SAW WHERE THE HARLOT SITS ARE PEOPLES AND MULTITUDES AND NATIONS AND LANGUAGES' (REVELATION 17:15). - DARKNESS COVERS THE EARTH AND GLOOM THE PEOPLES - JUST AS WATER COVERS THE SEA! (ISAIAH 60:2; 11:9.) THE SEA RECEIVES SPECIAL TREATMENT. WHILE DEATH AND HADES ARE THROWN INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE, IT IS FINALLY EMPHASIZED ABOUT THE SEA: 'I SAW A NEW HEAVEN AND A NEW EARTH, FOR THE FIRST HEAVEN AND THE FIRST EARTH HAD PASSED AWAY, AND THE SEA IS NO MORE' (REVELATION 21:1). IT RESONATES: EVEN THE SEA GIVES UP ITS DEAD, NOT JUST DEATH AND HADES. EVEN THE SEA IS NO MORE! GEHENNA IS THE VALLEY WHERE THE REFUSE AND WASTE OF JERUSALEM WERE BURNED. IT IS THUS A PICTURE OF THE GREAT GEHENNA, WHERE THE ABOMINATIONS BURN. IN THE NEW COVENANT, THE WORD GEHENNA APPEARS A DOZEN TIMES. IT IS TRANSLATED AS HELL. THE FIRE OF GEHENNA DOWN BELOW SALTS THOSE WHO DID NOT ALLOW THEMSELVES TO BE SALTED WITH FIRE ON EARTH, FOR 'EVERYONE WILL BE SALTED WITH FIRE' (MARK 9:49). THERE IS NO SALVATION WITHOUT THE FIRE OF JUDGMENT, EITHER THE SELF-JUDGMENT IN THE TIME OF GRACE OR THE FIRE OF JUDGMENTS AFTER DEATH. COMPARE MARK 9:43-48. CLEARLY, THE FIERY HELL, GEHENNA, IS BOTH A STATE OF EXISTENCE AND A SPACE BENEATH THE EARTH WHERE THE JUDGMENTS TAKE PLACE. THE SAME APPLIES TO THE LAKE OF FIRE, WHICH BURNS WITH SULFUR AND INTO WHICH THE BEAST AND THE FALSE PROPHET, SATAN AND HIS ANGELS, ALONG WITH THE PEOPLE WHO ACCEPTED THE MARK, ARE THROWN.

THE RESULT IS: 'AND THEY WILL BE TORMENTED DAY AND NIGHT FROM AON TO AON' (REV. 20:10). BUT FIRE IS ULTIMATELY NOTHING BUT BURNING LOVE. EVEN IN THE LAKE OF FIRE, GOD'S LOVE WILL REACH ITS GOAL. FIRE IS THE STRONGEST AGENT OF TRANSFORMATION AND PURIFICATION. FOR 'LOVE IS AS FIERCE AS DEATH, AS UNYIELDING AS THE GRAVE; ITS FLAMES ARE FIERY FLAMES, A FLAME OF THE LORD' (SONG OF SOLOMON 8:6). FIRE EXISTS IN THE HEAVENS, BUT FIRE ALSO EXISTS BENEATH THE EARTH, THOUGH THEY ARE DIFFERENT TYPES OF FIRE. ABOVE ARE FIRES OF LIGHT, BELOW ARE FIRES OF DARKNESS, WHOSE FLAMES BILLOW FROM THE EARTH'S VOLCANOES.

THE LIGHT

LIGHT IS THE MEANS BY WHICH WE CAN AND SHOULD DISTINGUISH EVERYTHING. IN THE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE, GOD DWELLS IN A LIGHT THAT NO ONE CAN APPROACH (1 TIM. 6:16), AND WITH GOD, ACCORDING TO JAMES 1:17, 'THERE IS NO VARIATION OR SHADOW DUE TO CHANGE!' (KNOCH). HOWEVER, THE FURTHER WE EXIST FROM THE DIVINE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE, THE MORE THERE IS A CHANGE BETWEEN LIGHT AND DARKNESS DUE TO THE ROTATION OF THE STARRY HEAVENS, AS WELL AS THE SUN AND MOON. THERE ARE UNDOUBTEDLY LEVELS OF LIGHT, DIFFERENT DEGREES OF BRIGHTNESS OR CLOSENESS TO GOD. LIKEWISE, THERE ARE CORRESPONDING LEVELS OF DARKNESS BENEATH THE EARTH, DIFFERENT DEGREES OF OBSCURITY. ON EARTH, THE LOWEST LEVEL OF LIGHT MEETS THE HIGHEST LEVEL OF DARKNESS, REGULARLY ALTERNATING WITH EACH OTHER. IN THE THOUSAND-YEAR REIGN, THE EARTHLY SUN WILL SHINE SEVEN TIMES BRIGHTER THAN BEFORE, AS WILL THE MOON. BUT NOWHERE DOES IT SAY THAT THE NIGHT WILL BE SEVEN TIMES DARKER. THUS, WE HAVE THE FOLLOWING GRADATION IN THE UNIVERSE: ABOVE OR WITHIN: LIGHT THAT DESCENDS AND CONTINUALLY WANDERS THROUGH DARKNESS, FROM THE LIGHT THAT NO ONE CAN APPROACH, DOWN TO THE PALE LIGHT IN THE FALLEN EARTHLY SPHERE. BELOW THE EARTH, LIGHT CEASES, AND DARKNESS REIGNS. ALTHOUGH EVERYTHING IS BARE AND EXPOSED BEFORE GOD, EVEN DARKNESS IS LIGHT TO HIM (PSALM 139:12). DARKNESS OR THE LACK OF LIGHT ALWAYS REFERS TO THE CREATURES. THEIR INNER CAPACITY TO GRASP LIGHT SEEKS THE CORRESPONDING OUTER EXISTENCE OF LIGHT. SINCE GOD IS LIGHT, LIGHT MEANS CLOSENESS TO GOD, KNOWLEDGE OF GOD. DARKNESS MEANS DISTANCE FROM GOD, LACK OF KNOWLEDGE OF GOD. DISTANCE FROM GOD MANIFESTS IN SPACE OR SPATIAL DISTANCE FROM THE DIVINE CENTER (EPH. 4:9, 10; 3:18-20). LIGHT IS NOT MERELY POSSESSION, BUT PRIMARILY A STATE, A BEING. DARKNESS IS THE SAME!

"IF THE LIGHT THAT IS IN YOU IS DARKNESS, HOW GREAT IS THAT DARKNESS!" (MATT. 6:23). WE ARE THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD AND CHILDREN OF LIGHT AMIDST THE DARKNESS OF THIS WORLD. LIGHT DIVIDES INTO VISIBLE AND INVISIBLE RAYS. THE VISIBLE RAYS ARE INDEED THE SMALLER PART OF THE LIGHT SUBSTANCE AND RADIANCE PRESENT IN THE UNIVERSE. THE VISIBLE LIGHT IS WHAT IS MADE VISIBLE TO US BY GOD. THE INVISIBLE LEVELS OF LIGHT MUST FIRST BE ATTAINED INTERNALLY (SANCTIFICATION) BEFORE THEY CAN BE EXPERIENCED EXTERNALLY (GLORY). PERHAPS DARKNESS IS LESS A STATE OF LACKING LIGHT AND MORE AN EXISTENCE IN LIGHT THAT IS INVISIBLE TO THE CREATURE BECAUSE IT IS STILL UNCONSCIOUS. WE MUST COMBINE THE TWO BIBLICAL VERSES: "GOD IS LIGHT, AND IN HIM IS NO DARKNESS" (1 JOHN 1:5) AND: "GOD IS AWARE OF ALL HIS WORKS FROM THE BEGINNING OF THE WORLD" (ACTS 15:18). LIGHT AND CONSCIOUSNESS ARE INSEPARABLY LINKED, AND IN THIS WAY, LIGHT IS EQUIVALENT TO LIFE. "THE LIFE WAS THE LIGHT OF MEN" (JOHN 1:4). THEREFORE, TO THE EXTENT THAT THE CONSCIOUSNESS OF LIGHT OR THE ABILITY TO RECEIVE LIGHT DIMINISHES, DARKNESS AND THE SHADOW OF DEATH ARE PRESENT. THIS IS WHY THE LIGHT OF KNOWLEDGE IS SO CRUCIAL FOR LIFE, AND A LACK OF KNOWLEDGE LEADS TO THE RUIN OF THE PEOPLE. GOD SEPARATED THE LIGHT FROM THE DARKNESS. SEPARATION MEANS DIVISION OR JUDGMENT. THUS, LIGHT IS SOMETHING THAT HAS ALWAYS ALREADY UNDERGONE THE JUDGMENT, THE SEPARATION FROM DARKNESS; OTHERWISE, IT WOULD NOT BE LIGHT, BUT DARKNESS WOULD HAVE SEIZED IT. THE SEPARATION IS IRREVOCABLE; LIGHT CAN NO LONGER BE SEIZED BY DARKNESS, NO MATTER HOW OFTEN IT MAY SEEM TO BE IN DARKNESS. THEREFORE, LIGHT IS THE VISIBLE MANIFESTATION OF THE SEPARATION FROM DARKNESS OR A LUMINOUS RESULT OF JUDGMENT. WHEN A PERSON TURNS AWAY FROM DARKNESS, WHICH PRESUPPOSES THAT THEY HAVE RECOGNIZED IT BEFOREHAND, THEY HAVE GONE THROUGH A PROCESS OF JUDGMENT AND THUS BECOME LIGHT, AT SOME LEVEL. LIGHT IS A MANIFESTATION OR REVELATION OF THE SPIRIT AND THUS A REVELATION OF GOD, PERSONIFIED IN JESUS. HOWEVER, LIGHT NOT ONLY HAS THE SEPARATION OR JUDGMENT BEHIND IT, BUT IT ALSO HAS THE CHARACTERISTIC OF REVEALING AND JUDGING EVERYTHING IT TOUCHES. "FOR EVERYONE WHO DOES EVIL HATES THE LIGHT AND DOES NOT COME TO THE LIGHT, LEST HIS WORKS SHOULD BE EXPOSED. BUT WHOEVER DOES WHAT IS TRUE COMES TO THE LIGHT, SO THAT IT MAY BE CLEARLY SEEN THAT HIS WORKS HAVE BEEN CARRIED OUT IN GOD" (JOHN 3:20-21).

GOD IS SPIRIT. THIS SPIRIT RESTED UPON THE WATERS OF CREATION. AND GOD SAID: LET THERE BE LIGHT! HE DID NOT SAY: LET THERE BE LOVE! ALTHOUGH GOD IS ALSO LOVE, NOT JUST SPIRIT AND LIGHT. LOVE COMES LAST. LIGHT IS A REVELATION OF GOD ON THE UNFOLDING PATH FROM SPIRIT TO LOVE OR FROM SPIRIT TO THE SPIRIT-BODY. THUS, THE SOUL, WHICH STANDS BETWEEN SPIRIT AND BODY, CORRESPONDS TO LIGHT. IN FACT, SOULS ARE MOVED BY LIGHT OR DARKNESS JUST AS BODIES ARE MOVED BY PUSH OR STRIKE, BY HUNGER OR THIRST. LIGHT IS A RESULT OF CONCEPTION OR A BIRTH OF THE SPIRIT, WHICH HAS THE TASK OF JUDGING OR GROWING UNTIL LOVE OR THE BODY IS BORN. LIGHT HAS A STRIKING KINSHIP WITH WATER. WE HAVE PREVIOUSLY EXPRESSED THE VIEW THAT LIGHT COULD BE THE 'UPPER WATERS' THAT WERE SEPARATED FROM THE LOWER WATERS DURING CREATION. WE THEREFORE ALSO SPEAK OF LIGHT STREAMS, LIGHT SOURCES, LIGHT WAVES, AND LIGHT FLOODS. JUST AS WATER HAS ITS CURRENTS, SO DOES LIGHT. WE REFER TO THESE IN LIGHT AS ITS BENDING OR CURVATURE. THIS BENDING OF THE LIGHT RAY, BOTH VISIBLE AND INVISIBLE, IS DECISIVE FOR THE IMAGE OF THE WORLD THAT WE SEE AND RECOGNIZE AROUND US. EVEN A SMALL CHANGE IN THE DIFFRACTION OF LIGHT HAS A STRONG EFFECT ON US AND OUR ENVIRONMENT. THEREFORE, THE PATH OF LIGHT IS OF CRUCIAL IMPORTANCE. WE READ IN THE BOOK OF JOB, WHICH TOUCHES ON AND PARTIALLY UNCOVERS MANY NATURAL MYSTERIES, THAT THE PATHS OF LIGHT WANDER. BUT WHAT DOES STRAIGHT AND CURVED MEAN? WHERE IS THE ABSOLUTE COMPARABILITY, THE MEASURE? WAS EVERYTHING THAT WAS STRAIGHT BEFORE THE FALL PERHAPS CURVED, BENT? DID NOT GOD PLACE HIS BOW IN THE CLOUDS AFTER THE FLOOD, HIS LIGHT BOW? IN ANY CASE, JOB 38:19 TELLS US: 'WHAT IS THE WAY TO THE DWELLING OF LIGHT, AND WHERE IS THE PLACE OF DARKNESS?' AND IN JOB 38:24 WE FIND: 'WHAT IS THE WAY IN WHICH LIGHT IS DISTRIBUTED?' THIS PATH CAN BE MADE VISIBLE THROUGH IRON FILINGS OVER A MAGNET. THEY ARE STRONGLY CURVED RAYS. BASED ON THIS CURVATURE, SCIENTIFIC DEFENDERS OF THE EARTHLY WORLD ARGUE THAT THE COPERNICAN CONCEPTION OF THE UNIVERSE IS WRONG BECAUSE IT ASSUMES STRAIGHT-LINE SIGHT BASED ON AN INFINITELY STRAIGHT PROPAGATION OF THE LIGHT RAY. UNDOUBTEDLY, LIGHT IS ONE OF THE MOST POWERFUL AND MYSTERIOUS THINGS. IT IS COMMONPLACE, AND YET, LIKE WITH ALL COMMONPLACE THINGS, THE MYSTERIES ARISE AS SOON AS ONE THINKS ABOUT IT. NOT EVERYONE...

IT HAS BIBLICAL KNOWLEDGE OF LIGHT TO BE ABLE TO RECOGNIZE IN THIS LIGHT. IN RECENT YEARS, SCIENCE HAS PARTICULARLY ENGAGED WITH THE MYSTERY OF LIGHT. IT DOES NOT REALIZE THAT IT IS DEALING WITH GOD AND HIS GARMENT. FOR 'GOD IS LIGHT.' THIS STATEMENT CAN ALSO BE REVERSED: THE MORE LIGHT THERE IS, THE MORE KNOWLEDGE AND EXPERIENCE OF GOD THERE IS. AND 'LIGHT IS YOUR GARMENT' (PS. 104:2). THE SPEED OF LIGHT IS CONSIDERED THE GREATEST SPEED, AS TIME AND SPACE SOMEHOW CONVERGE WITHIN IT. IN THE LATEST DEVELOPMENTS IN PHYSICS, THERE HAS BEEN A DRAMATIC STRUGGLE TO PENETRATE THE ESSENCE OF LIGHT. FOR IT WAS FIRST DISCOVERED IN LIGHT THAT THERE MUST BE A PHENOMENON THAT ALWAYS PRESUPPOSES AN OBSERVING SUBJECT. PROFESSOR D. HEIM, A BELIEVING THEOLOGIAN, VIVIDLY AND COMPELLINGLY DESCRIBES THIS STRUGGLE FOR THE RELATIONSHIP OF LIGHT IN ONE OF HIS BOOKS (THE TRANSFORMATIONS IN THE SCIENTIFIC WORLDVIEW OF THE PRESENT). WE TAKE THE FOLLOWING LINES FROM THIS ACCOUNT:



'THE STRUGGLE OF THE HUMAN SPIRIT WITH THE MYSTERY OF LIGHT IS AN EXCITING DRAMA IN WHICH OUR ENTIRE PERCEPTION OF REALITY HAS BEEN FUNDAMENTALLY ALTERED AND PHILOSOPHY HAS ALSO BEEN PLACED IN A NEW SITUATION. THE COURSE OF LIGHT RESEARCH FROM HUYGENS AND NEWTON TO THE PRESENT DAY RESEMBLES THE EXPLORATION OF A CAVE, WHERE THE RESEARCHERS ALWAYS BELIEVED THEY WERE AT THE END OF THE CAVE AND COULD SURVEY THE ENTIRE HALL WITH ITS WONDROUS STALACTITE FORMATIONS. BUT EACH TIME THEY THOUGHT THEY WERE AT THE END, THEY NOTICED, ALMOST BY CHANCE, A SMALL CRACK SOMEWHERE IN THE SIDE WALL OF THE CAVE, WHERE ONE COULD JUST CRAWL BETWEEN TWO BOULDERS. AND AS THEY FELT THEIR WAY THROUGH, A NEW, EVEN LARGER SPACE OPENED UP BEFORE THEIR EYES, WITH SUCH SPLENDOR AND VASTNESS THAT THE SPACE THEY HAD PREVIOUSLY TRAVERSED APPEARED MERELY AS AN ANTE-ROOM TO THIS EVEN MORE MAGNIFICENT UNDERGROUND TEMPLE. WE MUST FIRST ENVISION THE DRAMATIC COURSE OF LIGHT RESEARCH IN VERY BRIEF STROKES, AS FAR AS WE CAN FOLLOW IT FROM A DISTANCE AS LAYPEOPLE. WE CAN CONNECT TO THE ACCOUNT GIVEN BY LOUIS DE BROGLIE, WHO HIMSELF PLAYED A DECISIVE ROLE IN THIS DRAMA, IN HIS BOOK 'THE ELEMENTARY PARTICLES,' ALTHOUGH DE BROGLIE HAS HIS OWN PARTICULAR THOUGHTS ABOUT LIGHT, SOME OF WHICH ARE NOW OUTDATED AND SOME OF WHICH ARE STILL NOT RECOGNIZED.

THE STRUGGLE FROM THE VERY BEGINNING REVOLVED AROUND THE QUESTION: IS LIGHT MADE UP OF WAVES? IS LIGHT RADIATION THE PROPAGATION OF PERIODIC DISTURBANCES OF AN INVISIBLE MEDIUM, THE SO-CALLED ETHER, THROUGH SPACE, JUST AS SOUND IS THE PROPAGATION OF AIR DISTURBANCES? OR IS LIGHT MADE UP OF PARTICLES OR GRAINS THAT ARE EJECTED FROM THE LIGHT SOURCE LIKE PROJECTILES OR HAILSTONES? WHILE NEWTON STILL ADHERED TO THE PARTICLE THEORY, THE WAVE THEORY ULTIMATELY TRIUMPHED UNDER THE INFLUENCE OF HUYGENS, YOUNG, FRESNEL IN THE EARLY NINETEENTH CENTURY, AND LATER MAXWELL. THE PHENOMENON OF LIGHT REFRACTION (THE LIGHT BEAM IS DEFLECTED WHEN IT TRANSITIONS OBLIQUELY FROM ONE MEDIUM TO ANOTHER, SUCH AS FROM AIR TO WATER), BUT ESPECIALLY THE INTERFERENCE PHENOMENA, WHERE WAVES THAT MEET CAN MUTUALLY AMPLIFY OR CANCEL EACH OTHER (LIGHT COMBINED WITH LIGHT OFTEN PRODUCES DARKNESS), SEEMED TO CLEARLY LEAD TO THE WAVE MODEL. THE PARTICLE THEORY APPEARED TO BELONG TO A MORE PRIMITIVE STAGE. THE WAVE THEORY HAD WON THE FIRST ROUND IN THE GREAT BATTLE. BUT THEN CAME THE FIRST DRAMATIC MOMENT IN OPTICAL SCIENCE, WHICH UNEXPECTEDLY THREW RESEARCH BACK ONTO THE OLD TRACK DESPITE ALL THE COMPELLING EVIDENCE FOR THE NEW INTERPRETATION, MUCH TO THE ASTONISHMENT OF ALL. IT WAS A SEEMINGLY TRIVIAL PHENOMENON THAT HAD HARDLY BEEN NOTICED BEFORE, COMPARABLE TO A SMALL CRACK IN THE CAVE WALL THAT THE CAVE EXPLORERS HAD NOT SEEN, BUT WHICH CALLED ALL PREVIOUS RESULTS INTO QUESTION. THIS WAS THE SO-CALLED PHOTOELECTRIC EFFECT. WHAT DOES THIS MEAN? EVERY QUANTUM OF MATTER CONTAINS SO-CALLED ELECTRONS, ELECTRICALLY CHARGED PARTICLES THAT CANNOT ESCAPE FROM IT AT NORMAL TEMPERATURE. HOWEVER, THERE IS A WAY TO EJECT AND EXPEL THE ELECTRONS FROM THE PIECE OF MATTER BY SUPPLYING A CERTAIN AMOUNT OF ENERGY THROUGH ILLUMINATION. THE EXPERIMENT HAS NOW SHOWN: EVEN WHEN THE PIECE OF MATTER IS PLACED VERY FAR FROM THE LIGHT SOURCE, ELECTRONS ARE STILL EJECTED AS LONG AS THE FREQUENCY OF THE LIGHT WAVES (THAT IS, THE NUMBER OF WAVE CRESTS PASSING A SPECIFIC POINT WITHIN A SECOND) IS HIGH ENOUGH. OF COURSE, THE NUMBER OF ELECTRONS EJECTED PER SECOND DECREASES THE FURTHER THE DISTANCE BETWEEN THE ILLUMINATED PIECE OF MATTER AND THE LIGHT SOURCE. BUT NO MATTER HOW FAR APART THEY MAY BE, SOME EJECTIONS STILL OCCUR.

LIGHT CAN STILL TRIGGER THE PHOTOELECTRIC EFFECT EVEN AT VERY LOW INTENSITIES, AS LONG AS THE FREQUENCY DOES NOT DROP BELOW A CERTAIN LEVEL. FROM THIS FACT, WE CAN DEDUCE WHETHER LIGHT CONSISTS OF WAVES OR HAS A PARTICLE-LIKE STRUCTURE. IMAGINE A SCREEN PLACED AT A CERTAIN DISTANCE FROM A LIGHT SOURCE, WHICH IS ILLUMINATED BY THE LIGHT. WHETHER LIGHT IS MADE OF WAVES OR PARTICLES, IN BOTH CASES, THE LIGHT ENERGY ABSORBED BY THE SCREEN AT A SPECIFIC DISTANCE FROM THE LIGHT SOURCE WILL BE THE SAME. HOWEVER, THE EMITTED LIGHT ENERGY WILL BE DISTRIBUTED VERY DIFFERENTLY ON THE SCREEN IN BOTH CASES. IF LIGHT IS WAVE-LIKE, IT FORMS A SPHERICAL WAVE UPON EMISSION, RADIATING EVENLY IN ALL DIRECTIONS, SO ALL PARTICLES RECEIVE LIGHT ENERGY THROUGHOUT THE ENTIRE EXPOSURE. IN THIS CASE, ALL POINTS ON THE SCREEN WILL HAVE ABSORBED THE SAME, ALBEIT SMALL, AMOUNT OF LIGHT. HOWEVER, IF LIGHT CONSISTS OF PARTICLES, THE LIGHT RADIATION RESEMBLES THE CONTINUOUS FIRE OF A MACHINE GUN, WHERE SMALL PROJECTILES ARE SHOT OUT, THEN ONLY CERTAIN POINTS ON THE SCREEN THAT ARE HIT WILL RECEIVE A RELATIVELY STRONG AMOUNT OF LIGHT DURING EXPOSURE, WHILE OTHER POINTS THAT ARE NOT HIT WILL RECEIVE NO LIGHT AT ALL. NOW LET'S ASSUME: WITHIN THE AREA OF THE LIGHT RAYS, THERE IS A SMALL MECHANISM THAT ONLY ACTIVATES WHEN A CERTAIN AMOUNT OF ENERGY IS SUPPLIED, WHICH MUST MEET A SPECIFIC MINIMUM REQUIREMENT. THINK OF A WOUND-UP CLOCK THAT NEEDS A CERTAIN PUSH FOR THE MECHANISM TO START MOVING. THIS MECHANISM IS A METAPHOR FOR AN ELECTRON THAT REQUIRES A SPECIFIC PUSH TO BE EJECTED FROM THE MATERIAL AND THUS CAUSES THE PHOTOELECTRIC EFFECT. IF LIGHT IS A WAVE THAT SPREADS EVENLY THROUGH SPACE, THE FORCE EFFECT GRADUALLY WEAKENS THE FURTHER THE BEAM IS FROM ITS SOURCE. THEREFORE, IF THE MECHANISM REQUIRES A PUSH OF A CERTAIN STRENGTH TO START, THIS PROCESS CANNOT BE TRIGGERED AT ALL IF THE MATERIAL IS SO FAR FROM THE LIGHT SOURCE THAT THE WAVE HAS WEAKENED TOO MUCH BY THE TIME IT REACHES IT TO STILL INITIATE THE PROCESS. THE SITUATION IS COMPLETELY DIFFERENT IF LIGHT IS NOT A WAVE BUT CONSISTS OF PHYSICAL LIGHT PARTICLES. THEN, FOR THE MECHANISM, WHICH IS METAPHORICALLY SPEAKING VERY FAR FROM THE MACHINE...

WHEN THE MACHINE GUN IS FAR AWAY, THE DANGER OF BEING HIT BY ONE OF THE PROJECTILES IS NO LONGER AS GREAT. THE HAIL OF BULLETS IS NOT AS DENSE AT A DISTANCE FROM THE MACHINE GUN AS IT WAS JUST A FEW METERS FROM ITS MUZZLE. NEVERTHELESS, EVEN AT A CONSIDERABLE DISTANCE FROM THE MACHINE GUN, ONE IS NEVER COMPLETELY OUT OF DANGER. AFTER ALL, IF THE SHOOTING CONTINUES LONG ENOUGH, METAPHORICALLY SPEAKING, IF THE ILLUMINATION LASTS LONG ENOUGH, THERE IS ALWAYS THE POSSIBILITY THAT A BULLET WILL STRIKE AND THE MECHANISM WILL BE ACTIVATED BY A STRAY BULLET. THUS, WE SEE THAT IF IT IS SHOWN THAT THERE IS STILL A POSSIBILITY OF TRIGGERING THE EFFECT, WHICH REQUIRES A CERTAIN AMOUNT OF ENERGY, EVEN AT A GREAT DISTANCE FROM THE LIGHT SOURCE, IT IS PROVEN THAT LIGHT IS NOT A SPHERICAL WAVE, BUT RATHER A BARRAGE OF PROJECTILES. THEREFORE, DESPITE ALL CONTRARY ARGUMENTS, IT STILL HAS A PARTICLE-LIKE CHARACTER RATHER THAN A WAVE-LIKE ONE. THIS WAS THE SECOND ACT OF THE THRILLING DRAMA IN WHICH HUMANITY STRUGGLED WITH LIGHT TO UNCOVER ITS SECRETS. THE PARTICLE THEORY HAD WON THE SECOND ROUND. THIS VICTORY WAS EXPRESSED IN THE FACT THAT MAX PLANCK FIRST CALCULATED THE ELEMENTARY QUANTUM H, AND THEN EINSTEIN EXPANDED THIS DISCOVERY: EVERY LIGHT WITH FREQUENCY V CONSISTS OF ENERGY PARTICLES H TIMES V. THESE ENERGY PARTICLES, WHICH WOULD HENCEFORTH BE USED IN LIGHT THEORY, WERE INITIALLY CALLED LIGHT QUANTA, AND MORE GENERALLY, PHOTONS. IF THE STUDY OF LIGHT HAD COME TO REST AT THIS RESULT, IT WOULD NOT HAVE LED TO A REVOLUTION IN THE ENTIRE WORLDVIEW. ONE WOULD HAVE RETURNED TO THE OLD NOTION OF LIGHT PARTICLES AS NEWTON HAD IT. THE CLASSICAL VIEW, ACCORDING TO WHICH LIGHT, LIKE THE ENTIRE MATERIAL WORLD, CONSISTS OF SMALL PARTICLES THAT TRAVERSE SPACE, WOULD INDEED HAVE TRIUMPHED ACROSS THE BOARD IN THE WORLDVIEW. HOWEVER, THIS SIMPLE RETURN TO THE STAGE BEFORE THE EMERGENCE OF WAVE THEORY WAS NO LONGER POSSIBLE. THAT PATH WAS BLOCKED. THE UNDENIABLE FACT THAT COULD NOT BE DISMISSED WAS THE PHENOMENON OF INTERFERENCE, WHICH, AS WE SAW ABOVE, COULD ONLY BE EXPLAINED BY THE WAVE NATURE OF LIGHT. ALTHOUGH AN ATTEMPT WAS MADE TO EXPLAIN THE INTERFERENCE PHENOMENA BY SUGGESTING THAT A MASS OF PARTICLES SIMULTANEOUSLY INTERACTS WITH ONE ANOTHER, THIS PARTICLE INTERPRETATION OF INTERFERENCE FAILED. BECAUSE THE INTERFERENCE PATTERNS...

THEY STILL SEEMED TO BE ON THE PHOTOGRAPHIC PLATE WHEN EXPOSED LONG ENOUGH, EVEN WHEN THERE COULD ONLY BE A SINGLE PHOTON PRESENT IN THE INTERFERENCE APPARATUS AT A TIME, RATHER THAN A MASS OF PHOTONS. THIS EXCLUDED ANY INTERACTION WITHIN A MASS OF PARTICLES FROM THE OUTSET. THE PHOTONS COULD NO LONGER ARRIVE AT THE APPARATUS SIMULTANEOUSLY, BUT ONLY ONE AFTER THE OTHER. THUS, THE THRILLING DRAMA IN WHICH THE HUMAN MIND WRESTLED WITH THE MYSTERY OF LIGHT REACHED ITS CLIMAX. A TRAGIC CONFLICT HAD ARISEN. NATURE SEEMED TO CONTRADICT ITSELF. TWO UNDENIABLE FACTS PRESENTED BY NATURE APPEARED TO BE INCOMPATIBLE. ON ONE SIDE WERE THE INTERFERENCES, WHERE WAVES MUTUALLY AMPLIFIED AND CANCELED EACH OTHER OUT. THESE WERE ONLY UNDERSTANDABLE IF LIGHT WAS A WAVE, AN EXTENDED HOMOGENEOUS ENTITY IN SPACE; ON THE OTHER SIDE WERE CERTAIN EFFECTS, PARTICULARLY THE PHOTOELECTRIC EFFECT, WHICH COULD NOT BE DENIED. THESE COULD ONLY BE CAUSED BY A PARTICLE, A POINT-LIKE ENTITY BOUND TO A SMALL SPACE. IS THERE A SOLUTION TO THIS DRAMATIC TENSION, THIS TRAGIC CONFLICT? A SOLUTION IS ONLY POSSIBLE IF WE ARE WILLING TO ABANDON THE FUNDAMENTAL ASSUMPTION WITH WHICH HUMANITY HAS APPROACHED REALITY SINCE THE DAWN OF NATURAL SCIENCE, AN ASSUMPTION THAT HAS BEEN TAKEN FOR GRANTED THROUGHOUT THE CENTURIES: THAT THE WORLD, WHOSE SECRETS WE WISH TO UNRAVEL THROUGH OUR EXPERIMENTS, IS AN OBJECTIVE MATERIAL WORLD. IF WE ARE DEALING WITH A MATERIAL WORLD WHERE THINGS DESCRIBE THEIR PATHS THROUGH SPACE INDEPENDENTLY OF US, THEN AN OBJECT MOVING BEFORE OUR EYES CAN ONLY BE EITHER A MOVING PARTICLE OCCUPYING A SPECIFIC LOCATION IN SPACE AND MOVING WITH A CERTAIN SPEED, OR IT IS A WAVE THAT IS EXTENDED THROUGHOUT SPACE. THE SITUATION CHANGES ONLY IF WE DO NOT HAVE TO DEAL WITH AN 'ABSOLUTE OBJECT' THAT EXISTS BEYOND US, BUT RATHER IF AN OBSERVING SUBJECT IS INCLUDED IN THE ENTIRE PROCESS. IF THAT IS THE CASE, THEN WE MUST ABANDON THE NOTION THAT THE PARTICLE IS LOCATED SOMEWHERE IN SPACE AT EVERY MOMENT AND FOLLOWS A SPECIFIC PATH WITH A CERTAIN SPEED. THE PARTICLE IS ONLY 'THERE' WHEN IT IS BEING OBSERVED.

AN OBSERVING OR EXPERIMENTING SUBJECT REVEALS ITSELF AT A SPECIFIC LOCATION THROUGH A CERTAIN EFFECT. SUDDENLY, THE CONCEPTS OF LIGHT WAVE AND LIGHT PARTICLE GAIN A NEW MEANING AS THEY BECOME COMPATIBLE WITH EACH OTHER. THE LIGHT WAVE IS NO LONGER A WAVE THAT WE CAN CONCEIVE OF AS AN OBJECTIVE PROCESS, LIKE A SOUND WAVE THAT ARISES FROM THE COMPRESSION AND RAREFACTION OF AIR, OR A SEA WAVE THAT RESULTS FROM THE PROPAGATION OF DISTURBANCES IN WATER; INSTEAD, THERE IS NOW ONLY ONE WAVE, FOR WHICH WE MUST INHERENTLY INCLUDE AN OBSERVING SUBJECT IN ITS DESCRIPTION. THIS IS NOT A COMPLETELY OBJECTIVE PROCESS THAT OCCURS INDEPENDENTLY OF ANY OBSERVING SUBJECT, BUT RATHER THE WAVE THAT EXPRESSES THE FLUCTUATIONS OF PROBABILITY WITH WHICH A PARTICLE CAN REVEAL ITSELF TO AN OBSERVING SUBJECT AT A POINT IN SPACE THROUGH A CERTAIN EFFECT. TO ILLUSTRATE THIS SO-CALLED 'PROBABILITY WAVE,' IMAGINE A WARM SUMMER EVENING WITH THE WINDOWS WIDE OPEN IN A LIT DANCE HALL: MOTHS REPEATEDLY FLY IN THROUGH THE WINDOWS AND DANCE AROUND THE CHANDELIER HANGING IN THE CENTER. THE MOTHS FLUTTER ALL AROUND THE HALL. ONE CAN NEVER BE SURE WHERE A MOTH IS AT ANY GIVEN MOMENT, BUT THE PROBABILITY IS HIGHEST THAT A PARTICULAR MOTH IS AROUND THE CHANDELIER. NOW, LET'S IMAGINE THAT THE CHANDELIER IS SET IN MOTION, GENTLY SWAYING BACK AND FORTH IN PERIODIC OSCILLATIONS; THIS WOULD ALSO MOVE THE PROBABILITY OF A PARTICULAR MOTH APPEARING AT ANY GIVEN SPOT. AND NOW, IF WE IMAGINE THE CHANDELIER WITH ITS LIGHT FLAMES, WHICH MECHANICALLY EXPLAIN THE WHOLE PROCESS BY ATTRACTING THE MOTHS, COMPLETELY GONE, AND FOCUS ONLY ON THE POSSIBILITY OF THE MOTH APPEARING AT THIS SPOT OR THAT, WE HAVE A CERTAIN IMAGE OF A PROBABILITY WAVE. IT BECOMES CLEAR FROM THE OUTSET THAT WE MUST INCLUDE SOME SUBJECT THAT THE MOTH CAN REVEAL ITSELF TO THROUGH ITS APPEARANCE, AND FOR WHICH THIS EVENT CAN BE LIKELY OR UNLIKELY. NOW, WE CAN SAY WITH DE BROGLIE: 'A LIGHT WAVE IS ASSOCIATED WITH THE PHOTON.' THIS LIGHT WAVE DETERMINES THE PROBABILITY.

THE LIKELIHOOD WITH WHICH A PHOTON MAKES ITS PRESENCE KNOWN TO ME, THE OBSERVER STANDING HERE, AT A CERTAIN POINT IN SPACE THROUGH AN OBSERVABLE EFFECT, SUCH AS THE PHOTOELECTRIC EFFECT, IS SIGNIFICANT. IF THE WAVE HAS A HIGH INTENSITY, THERE IS A HIGH PROBABILITY THAT THE PHOTON WILL REVEAL ITS PRESENCE THROUGH AN OBSERVABLE EFFECT. CONVERSELY, WHERE THE ASSOCIATED WAVE HAS A LOW AMPLITUDE, THE CHANCES ARE MINIMAL. THIS IS PARTICULARLY EVIDENT WHEN WE PHOTOGRAPH IN VERY DIM LIGHT. EVEN WHEN THE LIGHT IS SO WEAK THAT THE PHOTONS ARRIVE ONE BY ONE IN THE INTERFERENCE APPARATUS, WE CAN STILL ACHIEVE THE RECORDING OF BRIGHT STRIPES CREATED BY INTERFERENCE, WHICH THE WAVE THEORY PREDICTS OR CALCULATES AS LIKELY, EVEN THOUGH EACH INDIVIDUAL PHOTON HAS STILL CAUSED A LOCAL EFFECT ON THE PLATE. THUS, ONE CAN SAY: 'THE PHOTON IS POTENTIALLY PRESENT IN THE WAVE.' WE CAN ALSO USE THE TERM WE EMPLOYED IN THE LAST CHAPTER AND SAY: 'THE PHOTON HAS NOT YET BEEN OBJECTIFIED, MEANING IT HAS NOT YET APPEARED IN A SPECIFIC LOCATION AS A TANGIBLE ENTITY.' THIS MAKES IT UNDERSTANDABLE THAT DE BROGLIE CAN STATE: 'AS SOON AS THE LOCAL EFFECT OF THE PHOTON MANIFESTS, THE POTENTIAL PRESENCE OF THE PHOTON AND THE WAVE DISAPPEARS, AND THE WAVE CEASES TO EXIST. THE WAVE ASPECT OF THE PHOTON VANISHES WHEN IT REVEALS ITS CORPUSCULAR ASPECT THROUGH ITS LOCALIZATION.' THEREFORE, THE TWO ASPECTS ARE NECESSARILY INTERCONNECTED, YET THEY MUTUALLY CONDITION EACH OTHER. ALL THESE TERMS USED BY TODAY'S PHYSICISTS EVIDENTLY ONLY MAKE SENSE WHEN WE CONSIDER THE OBSERVING SUBJECT IN THE DESCRIPTION OF NATURAL PHENOMENA AND INCLUDE IT IN THE PROCESS ITSELF. FOR AN ABSOLUTE OBJECT THAT EXISTS BEYOND ANY CONSCIOUSNESS CANNOT 'CEASE TO EXIST.' AN OBJECTIVE EXISTENCE COULD NOT VANISH INTO NOTHING FROM MOMENT TO MOMENT EXCEPT FROM GOD (BOSCOVICH). THUS, THE THRILLING DRAMA IN WHICH HUMANITY GRAPPLES WITH THE MYSTERY OF LIGHT REACHES ITS FINAL ACT. IN THIS CONCLUDING ACT, A SYNTHESIS (UNION) HAS EMERGED BETWEEN THE TWO CONTRADICTORY IMAGES IN WHICH THE ESSENCE OF LIGHT HAS ALTERNATELY PRESENTED ITSELF IN THE EXPERIMENTS WE CONDUCT WITH THEM. THE EITHER-OR BETWEEN PARTICLE AND WAVE, PARTICLE AND FIELD, DISCRETE OCCURRENCE OR CONTINUUM, HAS BEEN VIEWED AND RESOLVED IN A HIGHER UNITY. THE TWO IMAGES HAD MUTUALLY EXCLUDED EACH OTHER.

WE HAVE BEEN CONFRONTED WITH AN INSURMOUNTABLE CONTRADICTION AS LONG AS WE APPROACHED REALITY WITH THE ASSUMPTIONS OF CLASSICAL EPISTEMOLOGY, BELIEVING THAT WE WERE DEALING WITH A CONSCIOUSNESS-INDEPENDENT REALITY. HOWEVER, ONCE THIS ASSUMPTION WAS LIFTED, THE CONTRADICTION TRANSFORMED INTO A RELATIONSHIP OF 'COMPLEMENTARITY' BETWEEN TWO DIFFERENT ASPECTS THROUGH WHICH REALITY IS REVEALED, DEPENDING ON HOW THE OBSERVING SUBJECT–WITHOUT WHOM REALITY CANNOT BE FULLY DESCRIBED–APPROACHES IT WITH THEIR OBSERVATIONS OR MEASURING INSTRUMENTS. IN TODAY'S PHYSICS, ESPECIALLY IN POPULAR REPRESENTATIONS WHERE THE MATHEMATICAL APPARATUS IS SET ASIDE, THE FREQUENT REFERENCES TO A 'DUALITY' BETWEEN TWO 'SIDES' OR TWO 'ASPECTS' CAN EASILY LEAD US TO BELIEVE THAT THE MYSTERY OF COMPLEMENTARITY BETWEEN SEEMINGLY CONTRADICTORY IMAGES IS EXPLAINED BY ILLUSTRATING IT WITH THE EVERYDAY FACT THAT WE ARE ALL COMPLETELY FAMILIAR WITH FROM THREE-DIMENSIONAL SPACE: THAT A BODY, FOR EXAMPLE, A MARBLE STATUE, CAN BE VIEWED OR PHOTOGRAPHED FROM DIFFERENT ANGLES, FROM THE FRONT, IN PROFILE, OR FROM BEHIND. THESE DIFFERENT ASPECTS THAT EVERY BODY HAS ARE ALSO COMPATIBLE WITHIN THE OLD REALISTIC WORLDVIEW WITHOUT ANY CONTRADICTION. THE ABILITY TO VIEW A HOUSE OR A HUMAN BODY SIMULTANEOUSLY FROM DIFFERENT SIDES HAS NEVER SHAKEN THE OLD CONCEPT OF OBJECTIVITY, AND ALL PHYSICAL ENTITIES CAN EASILY BE VIEWED FROM VARIOUS ANGLES WITHIN THREE-DIMENSIONAL SPACE. THE IMAGES THAT RESULT CAN ALWAYS BE VIEWED TOGETHER. BUT HERE LIES THE INCOMPREHENSIBLE ASPECT THAT UPENDS THE ENTIRE WORLD OF CLASSICAL OBJECTIVITY: THAT THE SAME REALITY APPEARS IN TWO IMAGES THAT EXCLUDE EACH OTHER WHEN VIEWED SIMULTANEOUSLY WITHIN THE PERCEPTIBLE SPATIAL REALM AND CAN NEVER BE SEEN TOGETHER. ONCE THIS IS POSSIBLE AT EVEN A SINGLE POINT IN THE EXPERIENTIAL WORLD, THE ENTIRE EDIFICE OF OBJECTIVITY COLLAPSES, IN WHICH THE HUMAN MIND HAS BEEN COMFORTABLY SETTLED FOR CENTURIES. THE DUALISM OF PARTICLES AND WAVE PATTERNS, IF ONE SEEKS TO GRASP IT CONCEPTUALLY, LEADS TO A COMPLETE UPHEAVAL OF THE CLASSICAL CONCEPT OF REALITY. IT RESULTS IN A RECONSTRUCTION OF THE VERY FOUNDATIONS. THIS IS ALREADY EVIDENT WITHIN PHYSICAL RESEARCH IN THAT THE NEW UNDERSTANDING...

RESEARCH ON LIGHT HAS SHOWN THAT IT CANNOT BE LIMITED TO THIS NARROWER FIELD, BUT THAT THIS DISCOVERY IMMEDIATELY EXTENDS BEYOND THE BOUNDARIES OF OPTICS. THE THOUGHT ARISES: WHAT APPLIES TO LIGHT QUANTA COULD ALSO APPLY TO THE OTHER ELEMENTARY PARTICLES THAT MAKE UP MATTER. IT HAD ALREADY BEEN DEMONSTRATED THAT IN THE MECHANICS OF ELEMENTARY PARTICLES WITHIN THE ATOM, ONE MUST INTRODUCE PLANCK'S QUANTUM OF ACTION TO UNDERSTAND THE MOVEMENT OF ELECTRONS. THE MOVEMENT OF ELECTRONS MUST ALSO BE ASSOCIATED WITH A PROGRESSIVE WAVE. THE ELEMENTARY PARTICLES OF MATTER, AS INDICATED BY THE BOHR MODEL OF THE ATOM, ONLY REVEAL THEMSELVES FROM TIME TO TIME THROUGH LOCAL EFFECTS. IN THE MEANTIME, IT IS IMPOSSIBLE TO ASSIGN THEM A LOCATION IN SPACE AT EVERY MOMENT. THE INTENSITY OF THE WAVE ASSOCIATED WITH A PARTICLE REPRESENTS, FOR BOTH ELECTRONS AND PHOTONS, THE PROBABILITY THAT THE PARTICLE WILL MANIFEST ITSELF THROUGH OBSERVABLE EFFECTS AT THAT POINT. WE WILL NOT FURTHER PURSUE THE PHILOSOPHICAL CONSEQUENCES THAT ARISE FROM THIS. HERE, WE ARE PRIMARILY CONCERNED WITH THE WORLDVIEW SIGNIFICANCE OF THE COMPLEMENTARITY OF PARTICLES AND WAVES. TO GRASP THIS, IT SUFFICES TO FOLLOW THE RESULTS OF TODAY'S PHYSICS UP TO THE POINT WHERE QUANTUM MECHANICAL THINKING TRANSCENDS THE FIELD OF OPTICS AND EXTENDS FROM PHOTONS TO THE ELEMENTARY PARTICLES OF MATTER, LEADING TO THE BOLD IDEA THAT, WHICH WOULD HAVE BEEN INCOMPREHENSIBLE TO CLASSICAL PHYSICS, THE ELECTRON COULD JUST AS WELL BE UNDERSTOOD AS A WAVE AS IT COULD BE AS A PARTICLE, WHICH WILL SOON BE CONFIRMED EXPERIMENTALLY.



IN SIMPLE TERMS, THIS MEANS: IN THE STUDY OF LIGHT, SCHOLARS HAVE DISCOVERED THAT IT CONTAINS ANOTHER DIMENSION THAT IS UNKNOWN TO US IN EARTHLY MATTERS, MEANING IT ORIGINATES FROM ANOTHER WORLD. GOD IS LIGHT. THUS, DIVINE POWER ACTS IN LIGHT, AND THIS CAN REVEAL OR CONCEAL ITSELF AT ANY TIME TO CURIOUS HUMAN EYES. SCHOLARS FIRST DISCOVERED THROUGH LIGHT THAT THEIR PREVIOUS WISDOM WAS NOTHING. THIS IS VERY SIGNIFICANT BECAUSE LIGHT REVEALS. IT REVEALS THE TRUTH INTO WHICH THE SPIRIT WANTS TO LEAD, SO THAT LOVE FOR THE TRUTH MAY AWAKEN.

UNROLLED SCROLL

THREE PASSAGES FROM THE BIBLE TESTIFY THAT THE HEAVENS WILL ONE DAY BE ROLLED UP, TWO OF WHICH SAY: LIKE A SCROLL: HEB. 1:12; ISA. 34:4 AND REV. 6:14. THIS WILL OCCUR DURING THE TIME OF THE IMMENSE COSMIC UPHEAVALS OF THE SIXTH SEAL. PEOPLE WILL SUDDENLY SEE THE THRONE OF GOD ABOVE THEM AND WILL BE TERRIFIED BY GOD'S WRATH. THIS ROLLING UP OF THE HEAVENS COULD BE ACHIEVED BY A SLIGHT CHANGE IN THE REFRACTION OF LIGHT. THE OPTICAL HORIZON OF HUMANITY WILL SUDDENLY BE VASTLY EXPANDED, ALLOWING THEM TO SEE INTO THE CURRENTLY VEILED INVISIBILITY, THAT IS, INTO THE CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE, WHERE THE THRONE OF GOD IS. IT HAS BEEN NOTED BEFORE HOW STRANGE IT IS THAT THE GODLESS PEOPLE OF THE END TIMES WILL IMMEDIATELY RECOGNIZE: THAT IS THE THRONE OF GOD, AND NOW THE WRATH OF THE LAMB BEGINS, ALONG WITH THE GREAT DAY OF HIS WRATH. SEEING FAITH IS THE PRELUDE TO JUDGMENT HERE. FOR BELIEVERS AND SAINTS, HOWEVER, THE SCROLL OF GOD'S WORD IS ALREADY UNROLLED, SO THEY CAN SEE WITH THE EYES OF FAITH THAT CHRIST JESUS IS SEATED AT THE RIGHT HAND OF THE FATHER. STEPHEN ALSO SAW THIS SHORTLY BEFORE HIS DEATH WITH HIS PHYSICAL EYES. BUT THE BELIEVERS DO NOT BECOME FRIGHTENED AND DO NOT HIDE IN CAVES; RATHER, THEY REJOICE INCREASINGLY, ALBEIT ALWAYS ON THE FOUNDATION OF TREMBLING AND FEAR (PS. 2:11; PHIL. 2:12). FOR MANY CHRISTIANS, HOWEVER, THE SCROLL OF THE BIBLE IS ONLY PARTIALLY UNROLLED, AT MOST HALFWAY, AND THUS OPENED. THEY DO NOT BELIEVE EVERYTHING LITERALLY THAT GOD'S WORD SAYS. ABOVE ALL, THEY DO NOT BELIEVE WHAT GOD'S WORD SAYS ABOUT THE THINGS BEHIND THE HEAVENLY VEIL. THEY FOLLOW THE INTERPRETATIONS OF THE WISE OF THIS WORLD AND THEREFORE CANNOT BREAK THROUGH AND EXPAND THE NARROW OPTICAL HORIZON OF FALLEN CREATURES. BUT TO THOSE TO WHOM THE SCROLL HAS BEEN FULLY OPENED, BIBLICAL ASTRONOMY IS DIVINE WISDOM (1 COR. 2:6). WE HAVE PREVIOUSLY SEEN THAT THERE ARE WATERS ABOVE OR OVER THE EXPANSE OF HEAVEN, WHETHER THESE WATERS ARE THE FINEST GASES OR LIGHT WAVES OR BOTH AT ONCE; IN THE EARTHLY REALM, THEY ARE ALSO EARTHLY WATERS BECAUSE THE EARTH WITH ITS WATERS ENCOMPASSES THE HEAVENS. FURTHERMORE, WE HAVE SEEN THAT THE PREVIOUSLY UNATTEMPTED EXPERIMENT IN AMERICA TO LAY A TANGENT TO THE GLOBE ENDED UP MAKING THE TANGENT A SECANT, AS THE ENDS WENT INTO THE WATER. THIS IS NOT A BIBLICAL PROOF, BUT AN EARTHLY-HUMAN ONE. HOWEVER, SINCE IT IS 198.

THE MIDDLE LAYER OF THE EARTH ALLOWS US TO DRAW ON NATURE TO SUPPORT BIBLICAL TRUTHS, AS PAUL DOES IN 1 CORINTHIANS 11, WHERE HE ASKS: DOESN'T NATURE ITSELF TEACH YOU THAT IF A MAN HAS LONG HAIR, IT IS A DISGRACE FOR HIM? WE HAVE ALSO PREVIOUSLY FOUND THE BIBLICAL ANSWER TO THE EVER-PRESENT QUESTION: WHAT WOULD BE OUTSIDE? THE UNIVERSE EXISTS IN CHRIST AND IS SUSTAINED BY HIM. HE CARRIES IT. WHAT IS INSIDE IS ALSO OUTSIDE. THOSE WHO WANT TO KNOW MORE ABOUT WHAT IS OUTSIDE SHOULD GET TO KNOW CHRIST AND GROW IN HIM; THEN THEY WILL INCREASINGLY UNDERSTAND WHAT IS OUTSIDE, THEIR CURIOSITY WILL FADE, AND A CALM FAITH-BASED KNOWLEDGE WILL TAKE ITS PLACE. HOWEVER, THIS REQUIRES A TRANSFORMATION OF THE PERSON, WHICH PAUL DESCRIBES AS: IT IS NO LONGER I WHO LIVE, BUT CHRIST LIVES IN ME! (GAL. 2:

) THE CHRIST IN ME PRECEDES THE 'I IN CHRIST.'

THE RELIGION OF SCIENCE

BESIDES MONEY, THE GOD MAMMON, THE FALLEN WORLD KNOWS NOTHING GREATER THAN SCIENCE. EVERYTHING THAT THE HUMAN MIND HAS DILIGENTLY GATHERED OVER MILLENNIA IS WEALTH THAT CAN BE REALIZED IN MONEY AND SELF-ASSERTION OF THE EGO. THEREFORE, THOSE WHO ARE RICH IN MONEY AND THOSE WHO ARE RICH IN INTELLECT GO HAND IN HAND. THEY DEPEND ON EACH OTHER AND SUPPORT ONE ANOTHER. MONEY BRINGS HONOR, AND KNOWLEDGE BRINGS HONOR OR PRESTIGE. BOTH PROMOTE THE SO-CALLED PROGRESS OF HUMANITY. MONEY IS USED TO BUILD AND MAINTAIN THE TEMPLES OF SCIENCE AND SCHOLARSHIP. IN THESE TEMPLES OR UNIVERSITIES, THE YOUTH ARE RAISED IN THE SPIRIT OF FEAR AND REVERENCE FOR THE HUMAN MIND AND ITS SHARPNESS TO BECOME THE PRIESTLY OFFSPRING OF THE RELIGION OF SCIENCE. THOSE WHO RISE TO HIGH PRIESTS OR PROFESSORS MAY WEAR ROBES AND CAPS, HOLD TITLES, AND RECEIVE HONORS, FOR THEY SERVE A VERY GREAT GOD. AND ALL THE PEOPLE STAND AROUND IN AWE AS SOON AS THE MAGIC FORMULA IS PRONOUNCED: SCIENCE HAS FOUND IT! THE SCHOLARS SAY! THERE IS NO CONTRADICTION ANYMORE, FOR THE PRIESTS OF EVERY RELIGION MUST KNOW, THE IGNORANT PEOPLE DEPEND ON THEM. MIND AND KNOWLEDGE BELONG TO THE 'FLESH'; GREAT INTELLECT AND MUCH KNOWLEDGE ARE SIMPLY MUCH FLESH; AND THE FLESH ALWAYS LUSTS AGAINST THE SPIRIT.

IT IS INHERENT TO EVERY EXPERIENCE OF CHRIST THAT SALVATION STANDS IN STARK CONTRAST TO ALL PREVIOUS AUTHORITIES AND MUST FIGHT ITS WAY THROUGH. IN THE BOOKLET 'THE WORLDVIEW OF THE BIBLE,' THE EDITOR WROTE YEARS AGO ABOUT THE TOPIC OF SCIENCE: 'IT IS SO EASY TO BE PERSUADED, EVEN IN OTHERWISE VERY BELIEVING CIRCLES, THAT THE BIBLE CONTAINS MANY 'IMAGES' THAT ARE A POPULAR MEANS OF EXPRESSION FOR EASTERN WRITERS. THIS 'PICTORIAL WRITING' MUST NOW BE INTERPRETED, MUCH LIKE ONE EXPLAINS A PICTURE BOOK TO CHILDREN. AND OF COURSE, ONE ENSURES THAT THIS INTERPRETATION DOES NOT CONTRADICT THE PREVAILING SCIENTIFIC KNOWLEDGE, SO THAT THEOLOGY IS NOT RIDICULED BY COLLEAGUES FROM OTHER FACULTIES, BUT RATHER RECOGNIZED. CONVERSELY, IT IS CORRECT: OUR EXISTENCE IN TIME IS AN 'IMAGE,' A SHADOW; THE WORDS OF THE BIBLE ARE INVARIABLY ESSENCE. THEREFORE, IT IS ALWAYS A QUESTION OF ONE'S STANCE TOWARDS SCRIPTURE. WHETHER I HAVE A COMPLETELY BROKEN, A HALF-BROKEN, A SLIGHTLY BROKEN, OR A COMPLETELY UNBROKEN STANCE TOWARDS SCRIPTURE, THAT IS, TOWARDS THE WORD OF GOD, MY STANCE TOWARDS THE WORLD WILL BE THE CORRESPONDING COUNTERPART. AND MY STANCE TOWARDS SCRIPTURE WILL ALWAYS BE EVIDENT IN THE DEGREE OF SHAME AND MOCKERY I AM WILLING TO BEAR FOR ITS SAKE. TO THE EXTENT THAT THE WORLD IS CRUCIFIED TO ME, SCRIPTURE BECOMES TRUTH FOR ME, AND VICE VERSA! WHOEVER HAS RECOGNIZED THIS BREAKS RADICALLY WITH THE ENTIRE VENERATION OF SCIENCE, WHICH IS STILL COMMON EVEN IN BELIEVING CIRCLES. THE LEARNED PAUL WAS COMPLETELY CLEAR ON THIS: THE WISDOM OF THIS WORLD (ALL FACULTIES WITHOUT EXCEPTION!) IS FOOLISHNESS WITH GOD! (1 CORINTHIANS 3:19) OR ROMANS 1:22: THOSE WHO THOUGHT THEMSELVES WISE HAVE BECOME FOOLS. THE WISE OF THIS WORLD DO NOT SEEK TRUTH THROUGH BELIEVING ACCEPTANCE OF SUPERNATURAL, DIVINE REVELATION, WHERE THE CONSCIENCE CANNOT BE DISREGARDED, BUT RATHER, WITHOUT REGARD FOR THE CONSCIENCE, THROUGH THE EXCLUSIVE EXERCISE OF THEIR FIVE SENSES AND INTELLECT. WHAT THEY FIND IN THIS WAY, THEY THEN COMPILE INTO SYSTEMS AND DOCTRINES, WHICH THEY PROCLAIM AS SCIENTIFICALLY SUBSTANTIATED, BECAUSE PROVEN BY REASON, KNOWLEDGE OF NATURE AND TRUTH. THOSE WHO VERIFY THESE RESULTS WITH REASON, ACKNOWLEDGE THEM, AND CONTINUE TO WORK ON THEIR DEVELOPMENT USING THIS METHOD WILL BE SCIENTIFICALLY RECOGNIZED AND HONORED ACCORDINGLY. FOR THIS PURPOSE, HUMANITY (UNDER THE INFLUENCE OF THE SATAN THAT DOMINATES THE AIR) HAS CREATED A CAREFULLY CONSTRUCTED SYSTEM OF HONOR DISTRIBUTION IN UNIVERSITIES AND SCHOOLS OF ALL KINDS, WHICH AWARDS VARIOUS TITLES AND...

THE PURSUIT OF HONOR BINDS PEOPLE EVER MORE STRONGLY TO THEIR MISCONCEPTIONS. THEY ARE SO EAGER TO TAKE HONOR FROM ONE ANOTHER, WHICH LEADS THEM TO LOSE THEIR CAPACITY FOR FAITH, AS STATED IN JOHN 5:44: 'HOW CAN YOU BELIEVE, WHEN YOU RECEIVE HONOR FROM ONE ANOTHER AND DO NOT SEEK THE HONOR THAT COMES FROM GOD ALONE?' DOESN'T THIS SAYING OF JESUS FIT PERFECTLY WITH OUR SCIENCE AND SCHOLARSHIP? WHAT I UNDERSTAND WITH MY INTELLECT, I DON'T NEED TO BELIEVE. WHAT I BELIEVE ABOUT ANOTHER HONORS THEM. HOWEVER, WHAT I COMPREHEND WITH MY INTELLECT HONORS MY EGO. YET, THE WORD OF GOD EXPLICITLY STATES (PROVERBS 3:5) THAT MAN SHOULD NOT RELY ON HIS OWN UNDERSTANDING. (BECAUSE HUMAN UNDERSTANDING HAS BEEN DARKENED SINCE THE FALL AND DEPENDS ON REVELATION TO SEE ANYTHING!) BUT THAT IS EXACTLY WHAT SCIENCE DOES. THEREFORE, EVERYTHING IT FINDS WITH THE INTELLECT IS DECEPTION UNLESS IT ALIGNS WITH THE BIBLE. THUS, IT IS ENTIRELY INCORRECT TO SAY THAT THE BIBLE DOES NOT INTEND TO TEACH NATURAL SCIENTIFIC KNOWLEDGE. YES, IT DOES, EVEN IF ONLY IN PASSING. WHAT IT SAYS IS ABSOLUTE TRUTH, AND WHAT MAN DISCOVERS MUST BE TESTED AGAINST THE BIBLE. WHAT DOES NOT ALIGN WITH THE BIBLE AS THE LITERAL WORD OF TRUTH IS THE LITERAL WORD OF LIES.

THE DANGEROUS TESTIMONY

TODAY, SCIENCE REFERS TO THE COPERNICAN VIEW OF THE UNIVERSE AND THE STRUCTURE OF OUR SOLAR SYSTEM AS A WORKING HYPOTHESIS, MEANING AN ASSUMPTION THAT DOES NOT HAVE TO BE TRUE IN ORDER TO CONTINUE CALCULATIONS. HOWEVER, THE COPERNICAN 'ASSUMPTION' HAS DEEPLY PENETRATED THE FAITH OF THE PEOPLE AS SCIENTIFICALLY ESTABLISHED AND PROVEN KNOWLEDGE, SO THAT ANYONE WHO DOES NOT BELIEVE THE EARTH IS A SPHERE THAT REVOLVES AROUND THE SUN IS READILY CONSIDERED A FOOL. THEREFORE, THE TESTIMONY THAT STATES THE BIBLICAL ACCOUNTS OF NATURAL PHENOMENA AND ABOUT THE EARTH, SKY, SUN, MOON, AND STARS ARE ABSOLUTE TRUTH IS SO DANGEROUS. TRY IT ONCE, AND YOU WILL QUICKLY REALIZE HOW THE DEVIL AND HIS FORCES WILL ATTACK THIS TESTIMONY BY ALL MEANS. THERE IS NO QUICKER WAY TO BECOME A 'FOOL FOR CHRIST' THAN TO OPENLY EXPRESS DISBELIEF IN THE GENERALLY ADMIRED AND READILY ACCEPTED RESULTS AND INTERIM RESULTS OF SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH.

WHO WANTS TO BE A FOOL? EVERYONE WOULD RATHER BE A RESPECTED MEMBER OF SOCIETY AND A RESPECTED FOLLOWER OF THE WORLD'S OPINION. THE WELL-KNOWN PASTOR AND SPIRITUAL SONGWRITER GUSTAV KNAK BITTERLY EXPERIENCED HOW THE SATANIC POWERS ARE ALARMED BY THE CONFESSION OF THE ASTRONOMICAL STATEMENTS OF THE BIBLE IN THE LAST CENTURY. PASTOR KNAK IN BERLIN WAS AN EXCEEDINGLY BLESSED WITNESS OF JESUS CHRIST IN A DARKENED, COMPLACENT, LIBERAL, AND PROGRESSIVIST WORLD. HE IS THE POET OF THE WELL-KNOWN SONGS: 'LET ME GO, LET ME GO, THAT I MAY SEE JESUS'; 'WHEN GOD'S WINDS BLOW FROM THE THRONE OF GLORY'; 'GOD THE FATHER CROWN YOU WITH THE RICHEST BLESSING' AND MANY OTHERS. GUSTAV KNAK SHOWED HIS GREATEST WITNESS COURAGE WHEN, IN 1868, WHEN THE WORSHIP OF THE ASCENDING NATURAL SCIENCES AND THE GLORIOUS HUMAN SPIRIT HAD ALMOST CAPTIVATED THE ENTIRE CHRISTENDOM AND NO WORLD WAR OR ATOMIC BOMB HAD SHAKEN THIS BAAL CULT, HE DARED TO OPENLY CONFESS AT THE DISTRICT SYNOD, IN FRONT OF MANY PASTORS, THAT HE BELIEVED IN THE WHOLE BIBLE. AN ENORMOUS STORM OF PROTEST AND MOCKERY AROSE FROM THIS. IT IS EXTRAORDINARILY IMPORTANT TO BRING FORTH THE TESTIMONY OF THIS MAN OF GOD AGAIN TODAY. IT IS DETAILED IN THE BIOGRAPHY OF GUSTAV KNAK PUBLISHED IN 1895 BY DR. WANGEMANN. A LIBERAL PASTOR HAD THROWN THE QUESTION AT KNAK DURING THE SYNOD, SUGGESTING THAT HE COULD HARDLY BELIEVE, TO MENTION JUST ONE THING, THAT THE EARTH STANDS STILL AND THE SUN MOVES AROUND IT. KNAK DID NOT HESITATE TO RESPOND IMMEDIATELY: 'YES, I BELIEVE THAT; I KNOW NO OTHER WORLDVIEW THAN THAT OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES.' THE AFOREMENTIONED BIOGRAPHY CONTAINS A DETAILED ACCOUNT OF THIS EXPERIENCE UNDER THE HEADING 'THE COPERNICAN HOAX.' THIS REFERS TO THE GREAT EXCITEMENT CAUSED BY KNAK'S SIMPLE CONFESSIONAL WORDS: 'YES, I BELIEVE IT!' THE BOOK THEN CONTINUES: NOT EVEN TWENTY-FOUR HOURS HAD PASSED SINCE KNAK'S STATEMENT WHEN HIS NAME SPREAD LIKE WILDFIRE THROUGH ALL PUBLIC PAPERS. THE SIMPLE CONFESSION OF A SIMPLE PASTOR TO THE BIBLICAL WORLDVIEW WAS DECLARED THE NON PLUS ULTRA OF NARROW-MINDEDNESS, PROVOCATION, PAPAL ARROGANCE, AND THE GREATEST DANGER TO PUBLIC EDUCATION.

THE TERM 'REVERSED OR MISTAKEN LUTHER' REFERRED TO THE 'TAMBOUR THAT ALARMED THE ENTIRE SCIENTIFIC WORLD.' HE COULD TRULY HAVE BEEN PROUD THAT HE STIRRED UP SO MUCH DUST WITH JUST FOUR WORDS. A DISTRICT ASSEMBLY IN HAMBURG WENT SO FAR AS TO EXCLAIM DURING THE DISCUSSION OF THOSE FOUR WORDS: 'BETTER A TURK THAN A PRIEST.' THE FACT THAT BERLIN, THIS CITY OF THE HIGHEST INTELLIGENCE, HAD TO WITNESS SUCH A THING FROM ONE OF ITS OWN CITIZENS–WHO WAS ALSO A NATIVE BERLINER EDUCATED BY THE HIGHEST AUTHORITIES IN SCIENCE–SEEMED TO OTHER HIGHLY CULTURED WORLD CITIES TO BE SUCH AN EVENT THAT THEY EVEN USED THE MOCKING NICKNAME KNAKOPOLIS FOR BERLIN. IN THE FEUILLETONS OF RESPECTED NEWSPAPERS, INSTEAD OF 'OH, NONSENSE!' ONE COULD READ 'OH, KNAK!' THE HUMOR MAGAZINES FOUND WELCOME MATERIAL FOR WEEKS AND MONTHS. KNAK APPEARED IN THEM AS A SUNSHADE, FRATER SOLIS, AS A 'NEW IDOL,' AND THEY COMPETED IN ATTEMPTS TO MAKE HIM RIDICULOUS. THE PUBLIC MOCKERY WAS JOINED BY PRIVATE CORRESPONDENCE, BOTH LETTERS AND TELEGRAMS. THE LETTERS, OFTEN DELIVERED BY EXPRESS MESSENGERS, WERE ADDRESSED: 'TO THE PRACTICAL SUNSHADE AND CHIEF SUNSHADE MASTER, PASTOR AND SOUL BROTHER KNAK.' THEY CONTAINED GREETINGS FROM GALILEO AND COPERNICUS, REQUESTS FOR A FAVORABLE DELAY OF THE SUN BECAUSE ONE WOULD LIKE TO BE TOGETHER A FEW HOURS LONGER FOR A WEDDING, REQUESTS FOR WEATHER CHANGES, FOR A PASSEPARTOUT TICKET TO OBSERVE THE TRANSIT OF VENUS ACROSS THE SUN, OR THANKS FOR THE SUCCESSFUL KICK INTO THE SOLAR MECHANISM, AS THE WEATHER HAD SUDDENLY CHANGED. SEVERAL LETTERS WERE SO FILTHY THAT THEY CANNOT BE REPEATED. SOME WERE NOT EVEN SIGNED, INCLUDING A NEW YEAR'S GREETING SIGNED MEPHISTOPHELES. THE PUBLIC MOVEMENT WAS NOT HINDERED BY THE FACT THAT SOME OF KNAK'S LIKE-MINDED ASSOCIATES PUBLICLY DISTANCED THEMSELVES FROM HIS ASTRONOMICAL VIEWS. EVERYWHERE, STATEMENTS, SPEECHES, INSULTS, AND JOKES AGAINST THE ORTHODOX SPRANG UP AT KNAK'S EXPENSE. EVEN THE REMARK FROM THE PROTESTANT CHURCH NEWSPAPER THAT KNAK'S ASTRONOMICAL VIEW WAS MERELY AN IRRELEVANT SIDE ISSUE IN THE STRUGGLE DID NOT STOP THE MOMENTUM; THE MOVEMENT CONTINUED TO ROLL ON. IT ALSO CAPTURED THE ACADEMIC YOUTH. KNAK RECEIVED A LETTER STATING: 'SOME STUDENTS HAVE DEVISED A GRAND CAT MUSIC FOR YOU. IT WILL PROBABLY TAKE PLACE ON TUESDAY EVENING. BE ON YOUR GUARD. YOU MAY BE...'

THE WINDOWS WERE SMASHED. HOPEFULLY, YOU WILL RECEIVE POLICE ASSISTANCE. WHETHER THIS WAS JUST A BAD JOKE FROM A PRANKSTER REMAINS TO BE SEEN. THE FACT IS THAT THE EXCITEMENT AMONG THE STUDENTS WAS SO GREAT THAT A PROFESSOR FELT COMPELLED TO PUBLICLY COUNTER IT WITH THE WORDS: 'ONE CAN BE A BELIEVING THEOLOGIAN WITHOUT BEING NARROW-MINDED.' YET THE MOVEMENT CONTINUED TO GAIN MOMENTUM AND REACHED MORE SERIOUS CIRCLES. THE CITY COUNCIL CHAIRMAN KOCHHANN CONVENED A MEETING OF NOTABLE FIGURES FROM THE COMMUNITY AND ACADEMIA TO DISCUSS WHAT STEPS SHOULD BE TAKEN AGAINST THE ALARMING THREAT OF WIDESPREAD IGNORANCE THAT HAD SO EVIDENTLY ARISEN FROM KNAK'S STATEMENTS AT THE FRIEDRICH-WERNER SYNOD. THE CREAM OF BERLIN'S INTELLECTUALS GATHERED. THE SPEECHES AT KOCHHANN'S MEETING VARIED WIDELY. WHILE ONE ADVISED SIMPLY LAUGHING AT KNAK, ANOTHER INSISTED THERE WAS NOTHING FUNNY ABOUT IT, AS THERE WERE HUNDREDS OF THOUSANDS BEHIND KNAK FERVENTLY PROMOTING ORTHODOX PROPAGANDA, SEEMINGLY AIMING TO SURPASS THE DAYS OF THE PAPACY. ULTIMATELY, 119 PROMINENT FIGURES, INCLUDING SECRET COUNCILORS, PROFESSORS, AND CITY COUNCILORS, UNITED TO ADOPT A RESOLUTION, THE MOST SIGNIFICANT CLAUSE OF WHICH STATED: 'THE HOLY SCRIPTURE, THE BOOK OF RELIGIOUS LIFE, IS NOT AUTHORITATIVE OVER THE LAWS OF NATURAL SCIENCES. THE EARTH REVOLVES AROUND THE SUN!' - WELL, ANYONE WHO STILL DIDN'T BELIEVE THAT THE EARTH REVOLVES AROUND THE SUN, NOW THAT 119 REPRESENTATIVES OF BERLIN'S INTELLIGENTSIA HAD ESTABLISHED IT THROUGH A COMMON RESOLUTION, WAS INDEED A DOUBLE IGNORAMUS! HOWEVER, BERLIN WAS TOO SMALL TO CONTAIN THE FERMENTING MUST. A MOVEMENT SPREAD ACROSS ALL CITIES IN GERMANY, FROM WHICH EVEN INDUSTRY BENEFITED. IN THIS WAY, THE LIGHT SPREAD FROM THE CAPITAL OF INTELLIGENCE THROUGHOUT GERMANY, INDEED ACROSS ALL THE COUNTRIES OF EUROPE, AND EVEN BEYOND THE BOUNDARIES OF THE OCEANS, REACHING DISTANT PARTS OF THE WORLD WHERE THE NAME KNAK WAS CARRIED. - EVENTUALLY, THE LIGHT EVEN REACHED NEU-TREBBIN! THE LOCAL COMMUNITY BOARD APPEALED TO THE ROYAL CONSISTORY, ASKING IT TO PROTECT EDUCATION FROM DARKNESS! BUT IT WAS NOT JUST WORDS. ACTIONS WERE ALSO FORTHCOMING. IN BERLIN, THE REVELERS CALLED EVERY CLERGYMAN BY THE NAME KNAK AND THE WORDS: 'IT DOES MOVE!' ALSO: 'VER-.

A CROWD WAS CURSING! A SHOEMAKER'S APPRENTICE DANCED AROUND THE REAL KNAK WITH A PLAYFUL SWING OF HIS FEET, SAYING: 'BUT IT MOVES!' ... AND WHAT WAS ALL THIS COMMOTION ABOUT, FROM HIGH AND LOW, OLD AND YOUNG, SHOEMAKER'S APPRENTICE AND PROFESSOR? - BECAUSE A PASTOR, WHOM THEY CONSIDERED AN ABSURD DARK THINKER AND IGNORAMUS, HAD RESPONDED TO A PRIVATE QUESTION ABOUT HIS PERSONAL OPINION REGARDING THE STATIONARY EARTH WITH THE SIMPLE WORDS: 'YES, I BELIEVE IT! I KNOW NO OTHER WORLDVIEW THAN THAT OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES!' FOR THIS SIMPLE PRIVATE STATEMENT, WHICH WAS NOT IMPOSED ON ANYONE AND DID NOT REQUIRE ANYONE TO SHARE IT, BUT WAS MERELY AN ANSWER TO A STRAIGHTFORWARD QUESTION, ALL OF BERLIN AND HALF THE WORLD HAD FALLEN INTO DIZZYING EXCITEMENT! NOW, ANYONE WHO DOES NOT SEE THAT OTHER THAN MERELY HUMAN FORCES ARE AT PLAY HERE AND THAT OTHER THAN SCIENTIFIC INTERESTS ARE AT STAKE MUST BE NOT JUST SIMPLE BUT DOUBLY AND TRIPLY PROUD AND SELF-ASSURED. THE LIBERAL PASTOR HAD BOLDLY CHALLENGED THE GIANT WHO COULD OVERTURN HIS POSITION, NOT REALIZING THAT THE SCIENCE HE REPRESENTED WAS ITSELF THE GOLIATH MOCKING THE WITNESS OF ISRAEL, AGAINST WHOM THE 'BOY WITH THE SLING' MADE THE FATAL THROW WITH THE SIMPLE CONFESSION: 'YES, I BELIEVE IT! I KNOW NO OTHER WORLDVIEW THAN THAT OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES.' THIS WAS NOT MERELY THE EXPRESSION OF A PRIVATE OPINION ON AN ASTRONOMICAL PROBLEM, BUT IN THIS CONTEXT, IT WAS A CONFESSION, AN OPEN, FREE, AND UNRESERVED CONFESSION TO THE HOLY SCRIPTURES AS THE REVELATION OF THE LIVING GOD, AND THUS A COMMITMENT TO UPHOLD THE OLD BIBLICAL FAITH, A CONFESSION THAT STATED: 'ALL RESULTS OF YOUR ESTEEMED SCIENCE ARE SHAKY AND COMPLETELY POWERLESS TO OVERTURN EVEN A SINGLE WORD OF THE REVEALED SCRIPTURE. HERE I STAND AS A SERVANT OF GOD, NOT GIVING AN INCH FROM THE GROUND OF SCRIPTURE!' THIS CONFESSION WAS, IN THE EYES OF THOSE WHO HAD MADE SCIENCE THEIR IDOL, AN OUTRAGEOUS INSOLENCE, A BLASPHEMY THAT DESERVEDLY HAD TO BE SUBJECTED TO CONTEMPT, MOCKERY, AND EVEN PERSECUTION, FOR: 'GREAT IS DIANA OF THE EPHESIANS,' THE INFALLIBLE SCIENCE THAT HAS LONG SINCE OVERCOME BIBLICAL FAITH. THEREFORE, PROFESSOR VIRCHOW COULD NOT ONLY UTTER THE PROUD WORDS: 'THE OLD HEAVENS ARE NO MORE, THE SCIENCES HAVE ERADICATED THEM FOREVER, AND THEY WILL NOT RESTORE THEM, NO MATTER WHAT THEY DO!' BUT THE SAME VIRCHOW, FOR WHOM THE PULPIT WAS A...

THE LONG-OVERCOME STANDPOINT COULD ALSO DECLARE A MAN OF KNAK'S IMPUDENCE, IGNORANCE, AND SACRILEGE UNWORTHY TO 'EVER ASCEND THE PULPIT AGAIN.' TO DENY THE LIVING GOD, TO MOCK THE INCARNATION OF HIS SON, IS INDEED A DEMAND OF FREE SCIENCE; BUT TO BLASPHEME AGAINST THE 'DIANA OF THE EPHESIANS' IS HIGH TREASON AND BLASPHEMY. 'AND HOW DID THE BELIEVING PARTY IN THE CHURCH SEIZE THIS OPPORTUNITY TO AFFIRM THEIR COMMITMENT TO THE BIBLE?' IN ANSWERING THIS QUESTION, I WOULD PREFER TO COVER MY HEAD AND REMAIN SILENT... WE HAVE ALREADY REPORTED THAT THE FIRST WORDS FROM THE MOUTH OF HIS OWN PARTY MEMBER AND COLLEAGUE WERE: 'KNAK, YOU ARE FOOLISH!' ANOTHER SAID: 'KNAK HAS EMBARRASSED US ALL'; YET ANOTHER REMARKED: 'KNAK SPOKE VERY IMPRUDENTLY,' AND ONE OPINED: 'KNAK HAS HARMED US INFINITELY.' A WELL-KNOWN THEOLOGIAN WROTE PHARISAICALLY: 'WHOEVER DOES NOT ERR IN ANY WORD IS A PERFECT MAN.' THE 'EVANGELICAL CHURCH NEWSPAPER' HASTENED TO PROVIDE EVIDENCE THAT THE WELL-KNOWN PASSAGE IN JOSHUA 10 IS NOT A HISTORICAL ACCOUNT BUT MERELY A QUOTE FROM A HEROIC POEM, THUS TO BE UNDERSTOOD AS POETIC SPEECH. THE ROYAL CONSISTORY, IN A DECREE THAT DISTRIBUTED THE REPRIMAND FOR THE INCIDENTS AT THE SYNOD FAIRLY EVENLY BETWEEN KNAK AND THE LIBERALS, ENDORSED THIS VIEW ON JOSHUA 10, AS WELL AS THE DECLARATION THAT 'THE HOLY SCRIPTURE MUST NOT BE REGARDED AND TREATED AS A SOURCE AND NORM OF SCIENTIFIC KNOWLEDGE AND BELIEFS, WHILE IT IS, ACCORDING TO THE GENERALLY ACCEPTED PRINCIPLES OF THE EVANGELICAL CHURCH, SOLELY THE SOURCE AND NORM OF CHRISTIAN SALVIFIC TRUTH. THE EVANGELICAL CHURCH WILL ALWAYS KNOW HOW TO DULY RECOGNIZE THE 'MATURE AND UNDENIABLE RESULTS' OF SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH...' IN DETMOLD, WHERE KNAK WAS INVITED THAT YEAR TO PREACH AT A MISSION FESTIVAL (PEOPLE FLOCKED FROM AFAR TO HEAR THIS BLESSED PREACHER), THE CONSISTORY FELT COMPELLED TO DENY THE PULPIT TO SUCH A DISREPUTABLE FIGURE. KNAK, UNAWARE OF THIS PROHIBITION, NEVERTHELESS DELIVERED HIS SERMON, FOR PASTOR VORBERG IN LEMGO COULD NOT BRING HIMSELF TO INFLICT THIS PAIN ON THE INVITED GUEST AND THEREFORE PREFERRED TO PAY A FINE OF 10 THALERS... BUT THAT IS THE SAD THING ABOUT THE CHURCH CONSERVATIVES, THAT WHEN THEY SEE OPPONENTS STRIKING, THEY MAY STRIKE BACK DOUBLY, JUST TO SHED THE APPEARANCE OF BEING CAPABLE OF THE SAME FOOLISHNESS. THERE WAS THAT ENSIGN, CLEARER AND MORE INDEPENDENT...

THE RESPONSE AT THE TIME WENT THROUGH ALL THE NEWSPAPERS: 'UNTIL MY EXAM, THE EARTH REVOLVES AROUND THE SUN; AFTERWARDS, IT CAN DO AS IT PLEASES.' UNFORTUNATELY, KNAK WAS ALMOST COMPLETELY UNPROTECTED AGAINST THE ATTACKS OF HIS OPPONENTS. ONLY NOW AND THEN DID A TIMID VOICE IN CHRISTIAN AND OTHER PUBLIC PAPERS CALL FOR JUSTICE FOR KNAK... A VERY LARGE NUMBER OF LETTERS PROVIDED SOME BALM AGAINST THE SLANDEROUS LETTERS FROM TIME TO TIME. ABOVE ALL, THE 'KREUZZEITUNG' PUBLISHED A LETTER AFFIRMING THE UNVARNISHED TESTIMONY OF PASTOR KNAK AND EMPHASIZED THAT A RICH BLESSING WOULD FOLLOW HIM. KNAK HAD CLOSE TIES TO THE MISSION TO THE HEATHENS, ESPECIALLY IN CHINA. ONE DAY, HE RECEIVED A LETTER FROM A BLIND FOUNDLING IN HONG KONG, A CHINESE GIRL NAMED MÄDDEN: 'DEAR FATHER KNAK! I HAVE HEARD FROM OUR DEAR PASTOR THAT YOU MUST BEAR SHAME FROM THE UNBELIEVING PEOPLE FOR THE NAME OF THE LORD JESUS, AS THE SCRIPTURE SAYS: 'ALL DAY LONG WE ARE KILLED AND REGARDED AS SHEEP FOR THE SLAUGHTER,' AND AS THE HOLY PSALM SPEAKS: 'IF I HAVE YOU, I ASK NOTHING OF HEAVEN AND EARTH; EVEN IF MY BODY AND SOUL WASTE AWAY, YOU, GOD, ARE THE COMFORT OF MY HEART AND MY PORTION.' HOW ARE YOU? I HOPE THE LORD BLESSES YOU AND HELPS YOU! I SEND YOU WARM GREETINGS. YOUR MÄDDEN.' HERE, KNAK RECEIVED A SMALL TOKEN OF THANKS FOR HIS LOVE TOWARDS THE POOR HEATHENS, A REFRESHING DRINK IN HOT TIMES. HE TITLED THE LETTER HE SHARED WITH FRIENDS: 'THE CHILDISH SIMPLICITY SINGS A SONG IN THE HIGHER CHOIR.' AND HOW DID KNAK HIMSELF BEAR THIS DIFFICULT TIME, WHERE HE WAS LARGELY ABANDONED BY HIS FRIENDS AND OVERWHELMED WITH ACCUSATIONS, GIVEN AS A SCAPEGOAT TO HIS ENEMIES, MOCKED, RIDICULED, AND SCORNED BY THEM?... I ADMIRED HOW HE BORE HIS HEAVY CROSS AS A CHRISTIAN, WHO DID NOT RETALIATE WHEN HE WAS INSULTED, WHO DID NOT THREATEN WHEN HE SUFFERED, WHO PRAYED FOR HIS ENEMIES AND DID NOT EVEN HOLD A GRUDGE AGAINST HIS FRIENDS. THE HARSHEST RESPONSE HE GAVE TO HIS ENEMIES WAS A TELEGRAM HE SENT TO A MOCKER, WHICH CONTAINED ONLY THE WORDS: GAL. 6:7-8. TO HIS BEST FRIEND, HE WROTE DURING THAT TIME OF PERSECUTION: 'HOW GLAD I AM THAT WE FIGHT TOGETHER AND CONSIDER THE SHAME OF CHRIST A GREATER WEALTH THAN THE TREASURES OF EGYPT. THE JOY OF THE LORD IS MY STRENGTH. OUR...

IT MUST TRULY VEX SATAN REMARKABLY THAT HE KEEPS BARKING AND GRINDING HIS TEETH. THE IMMENSE INFLUENCE OF THE GODDESS SCIENCE IS QUITE EVIDENT WHEN ONE GATHERS WITH BROTHERS WHO SEEM TO SHY AWAY FROM APPROACHING THIS DIANA TOO CLOSELY. OH, IF ONLY DAVID'S SLINGSTONE WOULD SOON BRING THIS BOASTFUL GIANT DOWN! THIS IS WHY SATAN RAGED, BECAUSE KNAK HAD TESTIFIED TO THE TRUTH: THE EARTH STANDS STILL, MOTIONLESS, THE SUN MOVES, IT RUNS. WHOEVER CAN GRASP IT, LET THEM GRASP IT! EVEN AFTER A YEAR, SLANDEROUS CARDS AND LETTERS STILL ARRIVE FOR THE 'SUN SHIFTER,' A SIGN THAT ONE CANNOT SHAKE OFF THE STING. 'MY LORD HIDES ME SECRETLY IN HIS TENT,' KNAK ONCE WROTE ABOUT THIS. ULTIMATELY, GUSTAV KNAK COMPOSED THE NOW WIDELY SUNG SONG FROM THESE EXPERIENCES, THE FIRST VERSE OF WHICH GOES: NO ONE WILL BE PUT TO SHAME WHO WAITS FOR GOD; SHOULD I BE THE FIRST TO BE PUT TO SHAME? NO, THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE, YOU FAITHFUL REFUGE! THE HEAVENS WILL FALL BEFORE YOUR WORD DECEIVES ME.

THE SONGS OF GUSTAV KNAK ARE TODAY SUNG GRATEFULLY THROUGHOUT CHRISTENDOM, WHILE THE BONES AND NAMES OF KNAK'S MOCKERS AND ENEMIES HAVE LONG SINCE CRUMBLED TO DUST. HOWEVER, A SILESIAN COUNTESS SENT THE FOLLOWING POEM TO THE PUBLISHER OF KNAK'S BIOGRAPHY:

THE SUN KNAK

THE SUN KNAK, I OFTEN HEAR HIM CALLED HERE, THE DARK ONE, HEAD-HANGER, PIETIST, THEY THOUGHT THAT MOCKERY, DISGRACE, AND SHAME MUST SEPARATE THE SUN KNAK FROM HIS SUN. BUT HE ENDURED THEIR JEERS SO QUIETLY AND GENTLY AND THINKS: IF THEY ONLY KNEW OF MY SUN, THEY WOULD ALL BECOME CHRISTIANS LIKE ME AND PREACH-TO THEM THE RECONCILIATION OF HIS LORD. HE HAS GONE HOME TO HIS SUN, AND IT STANDS STILL, WILL NEVER SET HE WILL SHINE ETERNALLY IN ITS BRILLIANCE! AND ALL THE MOCKERY OF THE WORLD, THEIR THREATS, THEIR SLANDERS NOW HANG ON HIS BEAUTIFUL HEAVENLY CROWN AS JEWELS, PRECIOUS TO BEHOLD.